ぼくは異世界で行方不明の召喚魔法を探しています

1

横塚司
岩沢ムネ

Boku wa Isekai de Fuyo Mahou CH1-64

Epub Generated by :**lnwnepubs.wordpress.com**

Translated by: Avert translation

This **EPUB** version contains the Complete **Illustrations** of Vol 1-3

Table of Contents

Volume 1 Complete llustrations

Chapter 1: Trap

Chapter 2: The White Room

Chapter 3: Support Magic and Summon Magic

Chapter 4: The Orc and The Girl

Chapter 5: Just what to level up

Chapter 6: The Girl's Choice

Chapter 7: Arisu's Awakening

Chapter 8: The Faraway Scenery

Chapter 9: Level Up

Chapter 10: Prepare for Battle

Chapter 11: Breaking into the Cultivating Centre

Chapter 12: The Clean-up Battle of the Cultivating Centre

Chapter 13: Survivors

Chapter 14: The reason why Arisu and I failed

Chapter 15: Testing all sorts of magic in the White Room

Chapter 16: Arrival of the Night

Chapter 17: Dawn

Chapter 18: Digging Expert

Chapter 19: Prying around the Girls' Dormitory

Chapter 20: Elite Party

Chapter 21: Middle School Section Girls’ Dormitory Raiding Battle

Chapter 22: Tamaki's Past

Chapter 23: Arisu’s Gentleness, Tamaki’s Heart

Chapter 24: Final Battle at the Middle School Girls’ Dormitory

Chapter 25: Earth and Wind Magic in the White Room

Bonus Booklet: Fire Magic and Water Magic

Volume 2 Complete Illustrations

Chapter 26: Search in the Girls' Dormitory

Chapter 27: Defense Battle at the Cultivating Centre

Chapter 28: Confrontation with Shiki

Chapter 29: The Two Playmakers

Chapter 30: The Second Defensive Battle at the Cultivating Center 1

Chapter 31: The Second Defensive Battle at the Cultivating Center 2

Chapter 32: The Second Defensive Battle at the Cultivating Center 3

Chapter 33: The Second Defensive Battle at the Cultivating Center 4

Chapter 34: The Second Defensive Battle at the Cultivating Center 5

Chapter 35: Aftermath

Chapter 36: Main School Building of the Middle School Section

Chapter 37: Aerial Investigation

Chapter 38: High School Section

Chapter 39: Shiki-san's Repentance

Chapter 40: Middle School Suppression Operation 1

Chapter 41: Middle School Suppression Operation 2

Chapter 42: Middle School Suppression Operation 3

Chapter 43: Middle School Suppression Operation 4

Chapter 44: Item Vendor

Chapter 45: Middle School Suppression Operation 5

Chapter 46: Middle School Suppression Operation 6

Chapter 47: Middle School Suppression Operation 7

Chapter 48: Decisive Battle at the Middle School 1

Chapter 49: Decisive Battle at the Middle School 2

Chapter 50: Decisive Battle at the Middle School 3

Chapter 51: Decisive Battle at the Middle School 4

Chapter 52: Decisive Battle at the Middle School 5

Chapter 53: Tamaki, the Faithful dog

Chapter 54: The Past, Now and Tamaki

Volume 3 Complete Illustrations

Chapter 55: Mystery Words

Chapter 56: Degozaru

Chapter 57: What Shiba and co has done

Chapter 58: Battle at High School Boys' Dormitory

Chapter 59: For Everyone, I chose Summoning Magic

Chapter 60: The End of the Second Day

Chapter 61: The Beginning of the Third Day

Chapter 62: Attacking Separately

Chapter 63: The Leftover Members

Chapter 64: Giant Wasp

Volume 3 is incomplete

Illustrations

Volume 1 Complete Illustrations

「あの日に部屋から出なければ
きみはまた処女に戻るわけだ
つまりこの部屋でする限り
ぼくは毎回、きみのはじめてを……」

「わたしはもう、無力じゃない」

轻之国度
www.lightnovel.cn
转载严禁修改文档内容
图片严禁修改及加水印
（特别是wenku8网站）

轻之国度
www.lightnovel.cn
转载严禁修改文档内容
图片严禁修改及加水印
（特别是wenku8网站）

轻之国度
www.Lightnovel.cn
转载严禁修改文档内容
图片严禁修改及加水印
（特别是wenku8网站）

轻之国度
www.Lightnovel.cn
转载严禁修改文档内容
图片严禁修改及加水印
（特别是wenku8网站）

轻之国度
www.Lightnovel.cn
转载严禁修改文档内容
图片严禁修改及加水印
(特别是wenku8网站)

轻之国度
www.lightnovel.cn
转载严禁修改文档内容
图片严禁修改及加水印
（特别是wenku8网站）

轻之国度
www.lightnovel.cn
转载严禁修改文档内容
图片严禁修改及加水印
(特别是wenku8网站)

轻之国度
www.lightnovel.cn
转载严禁修改文档内容
图片严禁修改及加水印
(特别是wenku8网站)

轻之国度
www.lightnovel.cn
转载严禁修改文档内容
图片严禁修改及加水印
（特别是wenku8网站）

轻之国度
www.Lightnovel.cn
转载严禁修改文档内容
图片严禁修改及加水印
(特别是wenku8网站)

BOKU HA ISEKAI DE FUYOMAHO TO SHOKANMAHO O TENBIN NI KAKERU Vol.1
©Tsukasa Yokotsuka 2014 / Futabasha Publishers Ltd. Tokyo.
Illustration Manyako

Chapter 1: Trap

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 1

Chapter 1: Trap

At the end of September, Saturday afternoon, after school.

In a forest about 5 min away from the road linking the High School Section and the Middle School Section, I was holding a shovel, covered with mud, trying to make a trap.

The depth of this hole is far deeper than a person's height.

This is already the third trap that I have dug, hence it is quite easy.
If you also count the already dug and filled traps, this is already the 5th one.
After digging so many, more or less you will become skilled at it.

When I feel that it is almost there, I stabbed the spears I prepared in advance into the trap. That is the bamboo after I cut, and sharpened into a simple spear. I placed the tip upwards, and stabbed it into the hole. One after another. Rigidly, one after another.

I pulled at a rope that is tied to a nearby tree, and climbed out of the hole, then carefully covered the trap with leaves, as a disguise.

I have to be faster, there is not much time.

That fellow is coming.

I wiped the sweat from my forehead. Now it is 2.30pm.

For that fellow, I even left clues. I left a message, to guide that fellow to this

place.

I am guessing, that fellow probably won't notice that that is a「message」. He probably will think that that is a mistake that I have accidentally made, and he is thinking that I am hiding something important here.

And because of that important thing, that is the reason why I came to this place everyday—— he will probably think like that.

He must have thought, that recently I disappeared as soon as school ended, is because I came here.

From a certain viewpoint, that sort of thinking is not wrong. Because I have been digging traps here.

The first trap, because I feel unsatisfied about it, hence I buried it.

The second trap, though it is passable, but I hoped that it can be more comprehensive, hence I also buried it. Because the thing that I am about to do is not allowed to fail.

I am about to kill someone.

I will let that fellow drop into this trap, and kill him.

Just by dropping on the bamboo spear might not be able to kill, hence I had hidden a few plastic containers under a nearby tree, and they are filled with gasoline.

I intend to wait for the guy to drop into the trap, and then pour in the gasoline from above, before throwing in a torch.

If that fellow is really lucky, or perhaps it is not enough for him to die.

Hence I prepared a bamboo spear that is over 5 meter long. I cut the bamboo diagonally, then pared the cutting to make it very sharp, I will use this bamboo spear and stab him from above. Without stopping, until he is no longer moving.

Like this everything will end, and the revenge ends here.

Then what do I do? I don't really care about that much.

If this continues, I will definitely be killed by that guy one day.

I will be bullied by him until I die, and I will also be obliterated in the society.

That fellow is very powerful, and of course his wrist power is very strong, but there is not only that.

That fellow's parents are the influential people who funded the school.

It sounds like the plot in manga, but that is really the case in reality.

What this student have done, not even the school teachers dare to voice out against him. Such a person really exist in our school.

And I am targeted by this kind of lousy person.

This school adopts the system of having the entire school in dormitories, and the school itself is situated in the mountains.

This is a closed village society, and the head of the village has his eyes on me.

That fellow is bullying me to increase the value in his life.

One of these days I will be bullied to death.

Since it will be so, I can only kill him before getting killed, isn't it?

I held my breath and waited patiently.

I don't know if it was because I am suspicious, but the usual noisy cries of the birds, insects, there is none of it today. The forest was in a state of silence.

Soon, that fellow is coming soon.

I heard footsteps.

That is the sound of someone stepping on dead leaves, that is the sound of the footsteps of that fellow coming over.

I am very nervous, and lightly held down my trembling hand. My sweat rolled down my cheeks.

Though it is already at the end of September, but the mountain should not be this hot. I don't know if it is because I did some exercise just now, but I am sweating all over, and even now I am still sweating.

No, it should be because I am nervous.

But that also cannot be helped. Of course I am nervous, after all I am about to kill someone, and my hands and legs are all shaking. Once I think about it, I could not resist —— revealing a crafty smile.

I can kill that fellow. Just by thinking about that, I am happy enough to cry out.

Because that fellow——

Suddenly, my body shook. I quickly placed my hands on the fallen leaves.

When I realized it, I began to worry if just now that sound has been heard by that fellow?

No, this is——

The tree I am leaning on is vibrating. Only seeing the tree branches, and leaves shaking.

It is an earthquake. And it is very big.

There was a shock wave that echoed from my belly area. That was the greatest shaking, but after that it stopped. (TL note: Don't ask me why there is a shock wave from his abdomen.. I am guessing it cuz of the tree is vibrating and he is leaning on it.)

The shaking stopped. It seems that no trees fell, nor will there be any mudslides. I breathed a sigh of relief.

The trap is fine too, that is great. But there is a problem.

「It's an earthquake!」

I heard that fellow's voice, and the sound of smacking lips. (TL note: smacking lips = sound of someone clicking his tongue, you know the one you go tsu!)

It isn't good—— I couldn't help but think.

If that fellow changed his mind, then the things that I have prepared won't they ——

The sound of the footsteps indeed gradually went away.

The one who should smack the lips is me. I bit my lips, and clenched my fists.

No, it is not over yet.

That fellow maybe just worried that a landslide may happen or something.

Maybe he will be back in a while.

I silently prayed and waited patiently.

I don't know how many minutes have passed.

I felt that it has been a long time, but it is probably about only 10 mins or so.

The sounds of footsteps began to approach again.

That's great, I clenched my fist tightly, wanting to put out a victory pose.

That fellow came back. This time he should walk past here.

The footsteps got closer. What's going on? The sound of the footsteps seems to be heavier than before.

I think, that is probably me thinking too much. I shook my head, and focused.

I get this feeling that even the breathing of that fellow has become very loud. The [Fuuhi.Fuuhi] when exhaling is just like a pig.

What exactly is going on, is that fellow tired?

What a useless guy. Seemingly so arrogant usually, but in the end he is only this much.

I smiled sinisterly. Just like this is good.

If he is already tired, then his attention is bound to become weaker.

His footsteps should also become more messy.

Just watch.

And fall.

A shrill scream sounded.

I rushed out from behind the tree trunk, and carried the plastic containers while dashing towards the trap. Without even looking at the situation inside the trap, I poured the liquid in the containers in.

The gasoline flowed into the trap with a doshi doshi sound. It continue to flow, making someone feel that it is kind of exaggerated.

Next is the spark. I used the lighter to light a piece of confetti, and throw it into the trap.

The scream echoed in to the ears.

It is that last struggle of the guy, it make one feel so smoothing.

I picked up the bamboo spear and stabbed it into the trap, giving that fellow the fatal blow.

The feel of the spear stabbing into the meat was transmitted through the palms. So a human's stomach is that soft, it is far beyond my imagination.

I closed my eyes, and desperately stabbed the bamboo spear continuously down.

Finally, the resistance stopped.

I timidly opened my eyes, and looked into the trap.

That fellow's corpse——

Is not in the trap.

What replaced it, is a fat creature that is pig-like looking, and uses 2 legs to walk, covered with blood and dead inside.

That is a fat creature with reddish-brown skin.

And the blood that flowed out is blue. Only seeing him covered completely in blue colored blood.

「Ha?」

I could not help making a confused sound like a fool.

I let go of the bamboo spear in my hands.

At that moment the fat pig-human released another sound like a wheezing sound.

The pig-human body is gradually becoming fuzzy. No, its body is dissipating just like smoke.

I blinked.

Just as I was stunned at all these, the pig-human's body disappeared completely.

A opening trumpet music rang in my ears.

「You leveled up!」

I heard a neutral voice saying so, and my vision became all white.

Chapter 2: The White Room

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 2

Chapter 2: The White Room

Once I regain consciousness, I discovered that I am inside a white colored room.

The entire ceiling is glowing just like a fluorescent bulb. Or perhaps because of this, this place is as bright as day.

The size of the room is about the same as a classroom.

But, there is only a table and a chair.

There is a laptop on the table.

The table, chair, and laptop, that's all things that are in the room.

The laptop is open, and the screen showed something like Excel.

I timidly walked towards the table.

Looking at the computer screen.

Only seeing my name written on top of it, and below writing Level 1, and Skill Points 2. And further below is a table with simple words like sword, spear, magic.

I shake my head in suspicion. Is this some sort of prank?

What exactly is going on?

No, actually I did know what is this.

This is the ability table.

My ability table.

Just like a computer game, the screen shows my ability values.

But, what is written on it is not Strength, Intelligence, HP or MP.

From the table that is like game stats, I can see that, there are only levels and skills these 2 components.

This sort of game does exist in reality, and some of these games will even hide of the character's ability.

Then, this screen means that……

I used my confused mind to think. On it was Level 1, Skill Points 2, does it means that I can get 2 kind of skills? Or it is that, the points needed for different skills are different……

Alas, this sort of thing is not important. Or perhaps it is not completely unimportant, in short just keep it aside for now.

The most important thing is, what kind of situation am I currently in.

「Is there someone around!」

I shouted loudly.

「Is there anyone around! Please explain a bit, I hope that someone can come and explain what is this, and what is the situation now.」

I did not have any expectation, only saying for the sake of hoping that something

will happen. If this world is kind enough that if you ask the other party to explain, the other party will explain in detail for us, then even I will be able to live better.

At least I will not be forced into planning to kill that fellow.

However the master of this space, seems to be much kinder than the people in my world.

Only seeing a window popping out from the screen, with the following words on it.

「Please go ahead and ask the questions.」

Even the entering window also popped out, that's pretty sweet of him.

I shall omit the questioning and answering between me and the computer, because it is not only lengthy, it also contains a lot of useless parts.

I am continuously asking detailed questions that make people think that「Even this you have to ask?」, questions like from「Where is this place」,「Who are you」, until「What brand is this computer」,「What time is it now」are asked.

Most of the questions, only gotten the response of 「unable to answer」.

That is also good, because no answer is also a very important information.

In conclusion, the currently known information are as follows:

This is not a dream.

The truth is, whether if the person who said「I did not lie」really lied, only he

himself will know. In other words, this could also be a dream, and it could also not be a dream.

Personally, I hope that this is just a dream.

In this room there is only me.

Also to say, this is a private room. Our dormitory is a 4 person room, hence I am quite happy.

I can always stay in this room, until I used the PC, and close the window for the acquiring of skills.

The moment I close that window, I will immediately return to where I originally was, which is in the forest. This technology is too powerful.

When I am in this room, the time outside in the world is still.

No matter how many years I stay in this place, the time outside will not even elapsed past 0.1 second. The performance of this room is better than ※Seishin to Toki no Heya. (TL note: Seishin to Toki no Heya = a room in Dragonball where time pass very slowly) This sort of technology is really amazing until it is shocking.

——Technology? No, Haha, hmmm——

The condition to enter this room, that is a level up.

If I want to enter this room again, then I have to level up again. And to level up, then I need to defeat enemies, and accumulate experience points.

To be honest, I do not know what to say. In short, all of this is too cool.

Every time you level up you can get skill points.

And as long as you use those skill points then you can get skills. In principle, once you get the skill, then it is unable to be reverted back to skill points. This is kind of inconvenient.

The so call skill, is something similar to adding value to my current body.

It seems to be like that. So as to say, once I get the Sword Skill skill, I will become an expert with sword.

No, becoming an expert is a lie. Each Skill has its Skill Rank, and currently I am only rank 1, it can hardly be called an expert.

To increase the Skill Rank, of course there is the need to use skill points.

And to increase the skill rankl to 1, you need to use 1 skill point.

To increase the skill from rank 1 to rank 2, you need 2 points.

Likewise, when you need to raise from rank 2 to rank 3, you need 3 points.

It seems that the highest rank is rank 9. Supposing if one concentrate on the Sword Skill, then when that person reached level 23, then he can reach the Skill Rank 9.

After a person level up, other than skills, the person's physical and mental strength will also increase.

That is HP and MP. It is getting to be more and more like a game.

The Skill Rank is only giving extra value to the original body.

So as to say, if I am originally a sword master, then I might be able to defeat a person with Sword Skill Rank 9. But, I have only held the bamboo sword in gym classes.

Weapon Attack Skills have 6 types, which includes unarmed combat, sword skills, spear skills, pole skills, shooting and throwing.

As long as you have Sword Skill skill, then when you have a sword in your hand, your movements will become more agile. In addition, axe seems to be included inside Sword Skill skills. That also includes every weapon that can be used to cut.

Similarly, Spear Skill skill is for when you are armed with weapons like bamboo spears or weapons that can be stab, then it will display its effect. Then I asked, then what if I used a shovel to battle? The answer given was, if you use it as a sword, then you can activate the Sword Skill; if you use the flat part to bash, then you can activate the Pole Skill; if you sharpen the edges of the shovel, and use it to stab the enemy, then you can activate the Spear Skill. The shovel is indeed almighty.

Bows, slingshots, pistols, machine guns are all under Shooting Skills. As for throwing grenades, cola bottles, baseball, belonged to Throwing Skills. Then I asked, which type does kicking a soccer ball belongs? In the end i get the answer「no such Skill」.

I continued to ask, if throwing a long spear that can be used as a javelin, then which does it belong to? The other party replied「If such a situation is met, both Spear Skill and Throwing Skill are OK」. It has such a subtle difference from the shovel. Saying so it seem that throwing a dagger or a short axe is also the same.

The creature I killed, was a monster known as an orc locally.

Locally refers to where?

And also what are monsters~ damn.

The so-called magic, is a skill using something called Mana to conjure fire or wind.

What is that, and there is mana. Is this a fantasy world?

Hmm, actually it is a fantasy world. That's right. It is too crazy.

Magic Skills are separated into 7 types, which are Earth, Water, Fire and Wind, these 4 attributes, and adding Support Magic and Summon Magic, and also Healing Magic.

It seems that according to differences in Skills, there are different magic prepared. Each Skill Rank are accompanied with 4 types of magic, and once you rank up you will be able to use it automatically.

Other than that, there are also other Skills available —— Physical, Movement, Detection, Music.

Physical Skill is like a muscle enhancer, to let people lift heavy objects easily. Or perhaps even swing the sword that is higher than one's height.

Movement Skills can let one's movement become more agile, and jump higher. Though the strides won't change to very fast, but the instantaneous push off seems to be increased.

Detection Skill is a Skill that enables one to conduct convert actions, distinguish faraway voices, and see things faraway etc *etc.* In other words, it includes all the abilities needed by a special forces member.

Music Skill seems to enhance the music sense and voice. If using singing can let Giants follow my orders, then perhaps I will consider it, but it seems to not have that effect. Actually I also don't really understand.

Every question related to「Who prepared all these stuff」, all of them are unanswered.

This is simply crazy to the maximum.

As for questions like「Why I can get such things like Level and Skills」,the answer gotten was that I will need it in the future.

Is it~ So it is like this. Don't tell me you want me to be a Hero? I do not want to.

This seem to be not a dream, but reality.

The feeling is the worst.

If I died, there is no way to resurrect.

It is really very bad.

As to why I need to get Skills, what「future」refers to, and disturbing words like Mana and Monsters. I temporarily set them aside.

After all, there is insufficient information. Although there are many things that can be investigated, but even if I do so now it will not help much.

The most important thing now, is that I can get Skills.

Other than that, if I miss this opportunity, then I will need to wait until next level up before I can get Skills again.

And to level up, I have to defeat the monsters called Half-Beast man.

In a state where I do not have skills, I cannot defeat them.

Hence I decide to sort out the information on Skills first.

Now, the computer screen is displaying all the skills:

Physics： Unarmed Combat, Sword Skill, Spear Skill, Pole Skill, Shooting, Throwing.

Magic：Earth Magic, Water Magic, Fire Magic, Wind Magic, Support Magic, Summon Magic, Healing Magic.

Others：Physical, Movement, Detection, Music.

I need to choose 1 or 2 out for these 17 kinds of skills, and raise it to Rank 1. Also there is no need to use all the Skill Points at one go.

After some thoughts, I asked a few more questions.

And then I struggled in the mind to think again.

I did not know how many hours passed after I came to this room. But I am not hungry, nor thirsty. Or perhaps this room is like this. Who knows.

After setting my determination, I stood in front of the laptop.

From the Skill Table I chose 2 Skills, and raised them to Rank 1.

Kazuhisa: Level 1 Support Magic ０→１／Summon Magic ０→１　Skill Points ２→０

After I moved the cursor to「Confirm」, and press the confirmation button.

In the next moment, I returned back to the forest.

Chapter 3: Support Magic and Summon Magic

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 3

Chapter 3: Support Magic and Summon Magic

I am standing in front of the trap in the forest.

What happened just now, is just like a dream.

But in front of me there is indeed a trap, and the hole has the scent of burnt meat.

Ah, I guess that I wouldn't want to eat meat for a while.

Thought the orc's figure has already disappeared, but the end of the bamboo spear is still stained with blue colored blood. That indeed is real.

Orc. It is a monster with a face like a pig. That sort of thing really existed, and I still…… killed it.

That also doesn't matter. Yup, I just going to take it that it's fine. I am much calmer than I had expected.

After all I had intended to kill humans.

Even if the one that I killed was a ugly monster from a fantasy RPG, it is still not much of a big problem.

The problems lies not with this, but on whether if there is only 1 of this orc.

The answer is most likely no. When asking in the white room, it has actually been hinted at.

At the question「Why do I need Skills」which I asked, the computer had answered:

「Because the future you will have a need for it.」

The situation that I will be in midst of in the future, will cause me to need the thing called Skills—— that is what that someone in that room said.

In that case…… I clutched my fist tightly.

That's right, first is to get those skills —— the special power that was bestowed upon me, the power that will definitely be able to protect me.

I tried to use the skills.

Starting the support magic first.

According to the answer by the other party, at every skill rank, you can use 4 types of magic.

When using magic, you must consume MP.

Roughly after using magic for about 10 times, the MP will be fully depleted. And the method to recover MP, is to stay at the same spot and not move. It said that roughly for 10minutes, then you can recover enough MP for 1 usage of magic.

Let's try—— I murmured to myself while looking at my right hand.

「《Mighty Arm》」

When using magic, you have to concentrate your attention.

When asking, the other party kindly suggested to me, that I can set a keyword,

and read it out. So that's it, after I followed the suggestion, then I have a feeling that my whole body has lost some strength, and then my right hand began to give off a delicate light.

I used my glowing right hand to pick up the shovel.

It is lighter than earlier, the shovel has becoming significantly lighter.

No, that is not right, it should be that my arm power became stronger. This is the effect of magic.

For testing purposes, I clenched my fist and punched the trunk nearby.

Ouch. The tree did not move, while there is a bit of a bruise on my hand.

And then blood oozed out from the wound, red blood. The color of the blood is different from the orc. The pain brought me to tears.

「Well, forget it.」

I said softly with regret, while shaking my head at the same time. Anyway, I have confirmed that things like magic does indeed exist.

Actually when I saw the orc and the room, I have already began to believe a little that this is a supernatural phenomenon. No, it should not be just「a little」.
It is that I completely believe. This world…… And I……

I shrugged my shoulders.

Forget it, let's try summon magic next.

「《Summon Raven》.」(TL note: This MC needs to know his birds.. He called for a raven but a crow(karasu) comes out...)

The space in front of me began to distort into a black mass, and 1 crow appeared from the distorted space, and stopped at the branch beside me, giving a Ka——cry.

「《 Search for Enemy》.」

I said so, at the same time while pointing to the direction to search.

The crow gave another Ka —— cry, and flew up, disappearing from my sight quickly.

After a few minutes, it came back.

The cry of the crow, sounds like saying to me:

「There is a monster on the road, prowling around.」

「Are you the one who spoke just now?」

The crow cry out again, but this time it seems like a normal call from a crow.

I have to confirm if I am hallucinating.

I carefully walked to where the road is, while trying to avoid stepping on the fallen leaves.

The short 5 minute journey, seems very long.

I came to the area nearby the road, this is a tar road that runs through the forest.

The width of the road can only allow about 2 light trucks to pass, and the roadside is covered with fallen leaves.

There is a creature walking on 2 legs on the road.

It has a pig face and a human body, and it is completely naked. The skill tone is reddish brown, with a protruding tummy, and it smells.

It's an orc.

The orc is holding a rusty sword in it's hands. That's right, a sword. Will the orc from before perhaps also hold a sword?

I do not know. After all when I saw it, the orc is almost about to disappear. I will go and check in the trap later—— I thought so in this way.

Okay, back to the orc in front of me. Though I did not look carefully before, but this fellow's figure is much bigger than me. It's body is full of strong muscles, and its arms and legs are very thick, seemingly like a certain athlete who does hammer throw.

But an athlete who does hammer throw, is a human who wants to obtain a gold medal in Olympics, while the orc in front of me, seems to have a similar build as the one I saw before.

In other words, the human Olympic athlete is equivalent to a standard orc.

That is pretty scary. If I had a hand to hand combat with that fellow, it wouldn't be surprising for me to get killed.

But, if I don't kill that fellow then I cannot level up, and hence will never be able to return to that white room.

Now thinking back, the person at the other end of the computer is actually very friendly, no matter what questions I asked, he replied very patiently. Of course, the other party also have a lot of things that he cannot tell me. Even so, from the process of constantly asking, I still got a lot of information.

After using magic, the questions I wanted to ask have become way too many.

Hence I have to go back to that room again.

For the sake of returning to that room, I have to level up.

And to level up, I have to defeat that orc. So the important thing now, is to kill that orc in front of me.

「I want to kill you.」

I murmured softly, clenching my fist tightly, and then focused my attention on my legs.

「《Physical Up》.」

My feet began to give off a delicate light.

This is the magic to strengthen the body, specially used to strengthen the foot.

Just at the instant when the orc turned to face me, I made up my mind, and dash onto the road.

We are about 20 meters apart. The monster with the pig nose looked at me, and give out a Fumo—— cry.

It raised its rusty sword high up, and rushed towards me.

The other party intends to kill me. Even if I was grazed, it will definitely be very painful. Hence I must not allow it to happen.

I immediately turned and dashed into the forest that I jumped out from.

The orc indeed cried Fumo——, while chasing after me.

I did not look back, only concentrating on running, at the same time smirking in satisfaction.

Fumo—— sound became very distant.

Huh?

Oh right, I used magic to strengthen my legs.

That's why I can escape from the orc. It was because of this, that is why I got the Support Magic Skill. Because the top priority is to think of ways to survive, hence I completely ignored the Skills relating to weapons, and chose support magic.

Having said that, did I put too much of a distance between us? I looked back, and saw a reddish brown skin thing rushing through the woods, roughly about 15 meters away.

「I am here, you stupid pig!」

I shouted, and slowed down at the same time.

The orc seems to have discovered me again, and I saw it suddenly rushing towards me.

I quickly ran away.

The chasing game quickly ended. I light jumped, and crossed the trap covered with grass.

As for the orc, it unhesitatingly fell into trap.

That is a very deep hole.

I had set a total of 3 traps, and one of them is already unable to be used due to the battle before, but there are still 2 more. Because I had thought of all the routes that fellow could have taken.

But now, that fellow is already irrelevant, and simply does not deserved any attention.

But, these traps have other uses. For the killing of the orcs, and to let me go into that room again, hence these traps are essential.

No, conversely, it is because of these traps, that is why I chose those 2 skills.

I used summon magic to call out the crow, and send it for reconnaissance from the air.

And then use support magic to strengthened my legs, and taking control of the game of catch.

Lastly is to let the orc fall into the trap.

Until now, it has indeed gone pretty smoothly.

I looked at the orc in the hole, and confirm that this pig-human has indeed been injured by the bamboo spears.

The orc is constantly bleeding blue blood, staring at me angrily. It is frantically swinging that rusty sword in the hole.

But that sword cannot cut me.

Just like just now, first I poured the gasoline into hole, then throw in the kindle.

This orc's body is engulfed by the flames, struggling vigorously.

Next is the final blow. I took the bamboo spear.

The effect of the magic《Mighty Arm》is still effective, and hence I used my strengthened arm to stab the spear into the hole. The feeling of the sharp edge of the spear piercing through the meat, caused me to frown.

Even so, I still continued to stab.

Finally, the groans of the orc stopped.

I looked into the trap, and saw the orc's body gradually becoming transparent just like before.

I killed the orc, the 2nd orc.

The orc's body completely disappeared.

Just that.

Nothing else happened, and I was not delivered to the white room.

「Well, this is also expected.」

I muttered to myself breathlessly.

That's right, if this is a video game, then from the experience needed to raise from level 0 to level 1, is definitely different from the experience need from level 1 to level 2.

At least 2 times more —— I thought so in my heart.

Or even worse, maybe it needs 3 times, or even 4 times.

Anyway, there is still 1 trap left; if there is the need, then I can use back the traps that were used.
After the orc disappeared, there is a red gemstone that is about the size of a small fingernail left in the trap.

What is that? Is it the treasure that drops after defeating the enemy just like in a game? Why do I feel that it is becoming more and more like a RPG in the computer.

I climbed down into the trap, and put up that red gem.

Ruby? Well, I don't exactly know how to differentiate between gemstones.

I decided to keep the gem in my pocket first. Next is to return to the trap that killed the first orc and check it, or perhaps I missed it, there is indeed a similar gem inside there. I also picked up that gem.

Then, I sent the crow out to search again.

The crow I summoned is still around. Next time when I go into the white room, I have to ask how long the summoned crow can last.

Finally, the crow returned.

「There is 1 monster chasing a human.」

That is what the crow said.

Chapter 4: The Orc and The Girl

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 4

Chapter 4: The Orc and The Girl

After a few minutes.

I hid behind a shady tree, around 10 steps away from the orc and the human figure to observe them.

When I arrived here, the magic《Mighty Arm》has already lost its effect.

But《Physical Up》is still usable.

The duration of the magic, is roughly about 20 - 30 minutes.

Later when I am visiting the white room, I should ask about this.

The person who is pinned under the orc, is a girl.

The girl is wearing the uniform of the Middle School section, with a long black hair that reaches the waist.

The orc is breathing heavily in its preparation of its violence of the girl.

Now what?

Why did this guy try to open the girl's legs?

Why did this guy throw its weapon aside?

Why did this guy face its butt towards me without any preparation, while

thinking of raping that girl?

It is completely unsuspecting of its surroundings.

This is a good chance—— I thought to myself. The girl is crying loudly, and as long as I crept closer quietly, then the orc should not be able to discover me. Then I will just use her as bait.

One of these days, I will have to kill these monsters without the use of traps. Now with this situation in front of me, isn't it the best chance for me to take the first step?

I calmed down and took a deep breath, and then casted magic on the bamboo spear.

「《Keen Weapon》.」

The bamboo spear began to glow slightly, and the tip became harder, its piercing power should have also risen.

「《Mighty Arm》,《Physical Up》.」

My arms and legs began to glow. Though the effect of《Physical Up》has not disappeared, but to be on the safe side, I still cast it again.

In this way, both my arms and legs are in the strengthened state. If any emergency happens, I just have to leave this girl and escape by myself.

After using so many magic, it caused me to feel abit dizzy. I hope the next level up will increase the MP.

Nevertheless, all my magic must be cast before the battle.

I judged that I can still handle it, and hence I called the crow that I summoned

with summon magic.

「《Mighty Arm》, 《Physical Up》, 《Keen Weapon》.」

I used magic to strengthen the crow's ability. Support magic can be used on the others. It should be said that support magic is to be used on other, supporting them.

I used《Keen Weapon》on the crow's beak. With this, it should be able to act as the role of diversion against the orc.

I hope it can achieve its role. Please, please protect me. I am really afraid by myself.

The things that can be done are done.

Okay, preparation ready.

I held the bamboo spear, and slowly, silently walked closer to behind the orc who is pinning the girl beneath it.

The orc took off it loincloth, revealing its ugly butt.

I once heard from a great man that, humans are the most unguarded when they are excreting.

Thinking about it carefully, ejaculating is also a form of discharging. The posture now, is indeed completely unguarded.

Where should I stab? After thinking, I decide to aim at the neck.

If I missed, the stab may hurt the girl, but even if so, I will think about it when the time comes. After all, this girl is nobody to me.

I ordered the crow that once the battle start, to steal away the sword that the orc threw aside, and ran away.

Thus, even if the surprise attack fail, the opponent can only fight with me bare handed.

I walked step by step closer to the orc's back.

Almost there. I swallowed my saliva……

My eyes met with the eyes of the girl who is pinned under.

Not good.

I began to have cold sweat. If she did any kind of suspicious actions now, then the orc may discover my existence.

I felt very angry, I am about to save you now. But of course those are just words, because up to just now, I had only thoughts of using the girl as bait.

I will be betrayed by her.

I am thinking of this by reflex.

It is the same as that time. That is why I was targeted by that fellow.

There is someone who is bullied in my class, and because I wanted to help him, and hence I made that guy unhappy.

In the end the target for bullying changed from that student to me, and even that student who was being bullied initially, also joined in the act of bullying me.

I can never forget, that student who was originally being bullied, giving a cruel smile on his face when he was looking at me lying on the floor.

I will also never forget, when he used the wet cloth for cleaning toilets to wipe my face, those eyes were full of joy.

My actions have been betrayed by him who did it in the worst form.

I wanted to seek justice, and the ending was this. I wanted to help him, and the ending was this. I believed everyone in the world has a kind heart, but the ending was this.

So I will never trust anyone again.

I created a plan to kill that fellow alone, and I also prepared everything alone.

Luckily I did not have any friends, and no one to pay attention to me, hence I could take this action easily.

From the past until now, all I need is myself; it will be so in the future too.

That's right, I only need myself. Even if the girl in front of me betrays me, that doesn't matter too.

I will kill this orc, and gain the experience. That's all.

There is still a few steps to the orc, and now in a swoop……

In the moment just as I was determined to take the step——

「No! Stop, go away!」

The girl began to cry loudly.

Her behavior, is as though she was trying to attract the orc's attention.

The girl used her hands to hammer at the orc's muscular chest, while the orc looked down at the girl impatiently, and lightly slapped her.

The girl's lip tore, spitting out a bit of blood.

Even so, she continued to resist. The orc seemed more unhappy. And that was enough.

I gave a yell, and attacked the orc.

I used all my strength and stabbed the spear into the orc's thick neck.

Blue colored blood splashed everywhere. The orc gave a shriek, and turned around.

It has great strength, but how can I just let go. I grabbed the bamboo spear with my hands tightly, and stabbed harder.

The orc left the girl and fell down at the side. The bamboo spear stabbed inside his throat, also bounced out of my hands.

The orc violently pulled the bamboo spear out, and threw it aside, and look around, searching for its rusty sword.

But it cannot find it.

That is of course. Because that sword……

Is taken by the crow in its mouth, and delivered to my side. (TL note: this crow doesn't know how to use its claws?)

Perhaps it is because of being strengthened by magic, even holding the sword bigger than itself, the crow can still fly normally.

Good. I held the orc's sword, and prepared for battle.

I ordered the crow to attack the orc's eyes.

After the crow who is loyal to me gave a cry, it flew towards the orc.

The orc tried to use its hands to chase the crow away.

But, the crow I summoned persisted in attacking the orc's face.

I gave a shout, and rushed towards the orc.

I held the sword and slashed at its body, large amount of blue blood sprayed out, and the orc staggered backwards.

I took another step forward, and swung the sword.

But the orc used its hands to block my attack. A huge impact caused my arms to go numb.

The sword in my hand flew away, landing in the woods.

Just as I was thinking「Shit!」, the orc came towards me.

I quickly distanced myself. Because of the effect of magic, my body is very light, and I was able to put some distance between us in a moment.

But, with this, I also lost my element of surprise.

The more important problem is that, my hands and legs are shaking.

Afraid? Of course I am afraid! I am super scared! I wished to turn tail and run away immediately!

My teeth gave the sound of kachi kachi, and my breath became very rushed. I seemed to pant more exaggeratedly than the orc's nasal breath.

Clearly I did not have any injury, but I don't know why I am actually more tired.

But the orc is also staggering.

It seems that the stab in its neck is very effective.

This should be a fatal wound for humans, but this fellow seems to be surprisingly robust. Ah, after all its whole body is made of muscles……

Having said that, the sword indeed did not work.

I suddenly discovered that the bamboo spear is still beside the orc. That bamboo spear has obviously injured the orc until like that, but in the orc's recognition, it seems to not treat it as a weapon.

This fellow is a simple unicellular organism.

But its simple mind, is a favorable element to me.

Let me make good use of it. I ordered the crow to fly beside the orc's face.

This is a check. As I expected, the orc is thrown into confusion by the attack from the crow.

I took the chance to rush to the bamboo spear, and quickly picked it up.

No, this is a lie. More accurately, I ran to the spear unsteadily, and because my hands are shaking incessantly, hence after picking up the bamboo spear I dropped it twice, until the 3rd time then I managed to grab the anti-slip cloth I had on it.

At this moment, the orc's eyes are pecked out by the crow, and it gave a wail……

I held the bamboo spear, while giving a yell, and dashed towards it.

The orc used both hands to cover its face, and hence my bamboo spear stabbed straight into its defenseless body.

Blue colored blood spilled out.

Then its a scream.

I continued to use the bamboo spear to pierce the orc that is resisting weakly.

The orc fell, and twisted its body. I kept stabbing it, until its body became transparent, and slowly disappeared. A opening trumpet music rang in my ears.

「You leveled up!」

I heard that neutral voice again, and then my vision became all white.

When I came to my senses, I am already again in the white room.

Chapter 5: Just what to level up

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 5

Chapter 5: Just what to level up

I am in the white colored room, with a blur face.

I have fought desperately. That was an intense battle that was different from the previous 2 battles.

Until now then I realized that, that is a life and death struggle.

I only understood it now.

My hands and legs begin to tremble again. I squatted on the floor, adjusting my breathing.

Okay. I stood up. As long as I am in this room, I have unlimited time to use. In that case, I have to make good use of this advantage until the limit.

That's right, I have a lot of things to think about.

There is also a lot of things that I need to know.

First, I can confirm 1 thing.

That is I do not have any ways of using a sword to fight.

It is too scary. During the battle because I am too into it and was unable to think clearly, but even now, I still cannot help but shiver in fear. I am such a timid person.

The orc's power is very strong. The other party is obviously unarmed, and I am holding a weapon, but I completely did not feel that the situation is to my advantage. The orc's physique is just too strong.

But that is definitely because my strength is too weak, and unable to penetrate through the orc's thick fats, and give it the fatal wounds.

In the previous 2 battles which uses the traps, I have already discovered the reason why I can win, it is because I am using ambushes, stealing their weapons, using summon magic to disturb them, and even using support magic to increase my basic abilities.

If I am missing any one of them, then the me of now would probably be a corpse on the ground.

I am not suited for physical fights, and the extent can be fatal.

I have always vaguely felt it, even while practicing Kendo or Judo in the gym classes, after a short while I will be overwhelmed by the opponent's pressure. Even if I was resolved to face the other party, my actions will also become very simple and direct, and immediately it will be dodged by the other party.

But, when watching a match like the others, I will still say irresponsible comments like「Do it that way」,「Do it this way」……

I am completely not suitable for that kind of activity.

But, knowing what I am not suitable for, is also an good thing. Hence, I will not need to waste any points on weapon skills. Skill points are very precious, even 1 point cannot be wasted.

I need to think about what to do next.

I need to think of a way to defeat orcs which does not rely on close-combat. The

most ideal method, is to use summon magic to call out something other than crows……

The crows from Skill Level 1 may have the effect of restraining, but they are unable to act as shields, to ward off the enemy's attacks.

I sat before the laptop, and entered the question: What can I summon with Summon Magic at Skill Level 2?

「Puppet Golem.」

Oh! In my heart, I was suddenly filled with anticipation.

Targeting this, I asked a few more questions, and finally obtained the following information:-

Puppet Golem is a wooden man familiar, and it is armed with a pole. Its height is roughly around 150cm. The combined strength of 2 Puppet Golems, is equivalent roughly to 1 orc.

This is after I asked a series of questions, one of the things that I managed to understand.

So, the things that are summoned with Summon Magic are called「familiars」.
I should have confirmed this earlier.

Saying about matter that should have been confirmed earlier, actually there are still alot of them-

Regarding the duration of magic, if it is the Support Magic Skill Level 1, it can roughly stay active for 25 minutes plus/minus 5 minutes.

So it is just a rough estimate, it seem that for safety, I should recast the magic every 20 minutes.

No, wait a minute. If a person's level or skill level increases, then what will happen?

I entered the question again.

And hence understood the following:-

The increase in a person's level has nothing to do with the duration of magic.

Only when the specific Magic Skill Level increase, then the duration will also increase.

If《Mighty Arm》,《Physical Up》and《Keen Weapon》level is raised to Skill Level 2, then the magic duration will change to 50 minutes plus/minus 10 minutes.

I see, as long as I increase the Support Magic Skill Rank, the duration will increase to 40 minutes to 1 hour. This will be very important with regards to reducing MP consumption.

Next, I said some questions regarding familiars-

Familiar Summon Magic and other Magic is different, the required consumption of MP by Skill Rank, so as to say,when Skill Rank is 2, the MP consumed is 4; when Skill Rank is 3, the MP consumed is 9; when Skill Rank is 4, the MP consumed is 16.

In principle, the familiars will always obey the master's orders, until the summoner returns it, or disappear because it is defeated. In this period, the maximum value of MP will maintain at the state after the deduction of MP. There is no limit to the amount of familiar summoned at each summon, but the decrease of the maximum of MP will accumulate.

This matter is very important. So I can call out 2 crows at a time!

But I am not going to do so.

No matter how many crows there are, they are after all just a flock of the same feathers.

Because they are crows, hence they are of the same feathers. That's good. This saying is very good.

……kohon. (TL note: the above crows thingy is something like a lame joke by the MC. tried to make it in english. but not very well done I guess. Kohon = sound of like being empty since he is alone)

But, to be able to call out 2 Puppet Golem is pretty attractive.
Although the MP consumed for Rank 2 of Summon Magic is 4 times that of the crows, but if I cast《Keen Weapon》,《Physical Up》and《Mighty Arm》before sending them to fight with the orcs, then if it's only facing 1 orc, then there should be a chance for success.

No, this way of fighting seems to be too harsh……

To raise my Level from 1 to 2, I killed 2 orcs. Next, to level up the amount of monsters that I have to kill, will definitely increase.

But, the Skill Point gotten for every level up will remain as 2, and to rank up the skills, I have to consume the same amount of points as the next rank.

My combat ability will reach a bottleneck sooner or later.

Then what about the enemy?

Is there only orcs? No definitely now, at least there will be a monster like leader of the orcs or something. Perhaps there maybe monsters which are much worse. No, I believe there is.

Like dragon.

When facing a dragon, should I use Puppet Golem as a shield and fight?
Although I don't know what kind of existence is a dragon, but I will just assume it is a Tyrannosaurus.

I tried to imagine.

A wooden doll against a Tyrannosaurus.

In my imagination, the Puppet Golem is crushed in a instant.

Not possible. Definitely impossible. I feel that even with Support Magic, it will still fail badly. I completely cannot imagine any chance of winning.

But one thing is for sure.

Even if I have Skill Rank 3 or 4 of Summon Magic, when having a close combat, I will definitely lose to those with a similar ranked Sword Skill or Spear Skill opponent.

In other words, the most ideal vanguard, is a person who have such a sword or spear skill.

That's right, its humans.

「Shouldn't I find a companion?」

I mumbled to myself.

Believe in others, and get companions?

I shook my head, thinking what kind of foolish thing I am saying.

Then, I am suddenly reminded of what happened just now. From the results, I have saved that girl from the middle school section.

When she discovered that I am planning on defeating the orc, and even though she was slapped, she continued to help me divert the orc's attention. Thanks to her, I managed do the surprise attack at the best timing.

If not for that, then what will be the outcome of that battle?

Perhaps I will lose. If I am unlucky, I may not even have the chance to escape, and be killed just like that.

Thinking of that, I can't help but think that isn't it too early for me to challenge the orc……

Ah, forget it. The most important thing now is that girl. Although it is only once, but she trusted me. She believe I will save her, and fought hard in her own way.

Could she become my partner?

「Then you will be betrayed again?」

I murmured on.

Perhaps so. But, maybe it will not be.

First, I have to think about the power I get from this room, and the structure.

The condition to come to this room is to level up.

The first time I came to this room, I killed an orc.

That was under many coincidences of good luck, and hence I got the victory.

As in, from my perspective, I had intended to kill the despicable fellow who has been constantly bullying me, but I didn't expect the one I killed to be a pig-human who has blue blood. I was very shocked at that time, it was impossible to put into words.

……No, this is not important. I shall put it aside first..

The problem now is, to kill 1 orc, it is a extremely hard task. Other than me, how many others are lucky enough to do so?

Until now, I have met with 3 orc in a short period of time.

So as to say, there should be a considerable amount of orcs in this mountain.

Among those orcs, how many will break into the school?

The students and teachers in the school, how are they now?

「Well, most people would not be able to win.」

Perhaps those students in the Kendo Club who practiced Kendo, can work together to kill 1 or 2 orcs. But it maybe a bit difficult for students who practice Judo. If the students from the Baseball Club used bats to fight. Perhaps it will be of use……? The students in the Soccer Club…… Probably only in the world of manga, then they can depend on kicking soccer balls to defeat the enemies. As for Archery Club, our school do not have them.

The students in the school Middle and High School section, have a total of about 2000 people.

In addition there are the staff and operators of the school, there are about 200 adults.

「If they are lucky, then about 10 to 20 people will be able to survive?」

From the most optimistic viewpoint, the number of people who can raise his level to 1 just based on his own power, will probably be around that much.

But, if I assist that girl in this place?

I still got a completely perfect trap. I can lend her the bamboo spear, and use support magic to increase her ability, and call her to stab the orc in the trap to death. As long as she obediently follow my instructions, then she should be able to visit the white room successfully.

She can acquire skills in the white room. Yes, since there is a bamboo spear, then I should get her to acquire Spear Skill.

As for the other skill, Healing Magic seems good. In a game, recovering physical strength is important; and in reality it is even more important. Her lips are broken, and her knees also have abrasions. If those wounds can be healed, then that will be good.

But there are other problems. There are many problems.

The first problem, is that I am letting a girl who is younger than me to hold a weapon and fight, while I am in the rear. More importantly, I don't know if she will listen to my words obediently, and if she will trust me.

The moment when she acquire skills, will she kill me—— there is also this risk.

Even if not, once she get the weapon, will she be arrogant, and command me in return?

Or maybe she wouldn't listen to my instructions, and act alone.

No, there is the possibility that she will acquire other skills from the beginning,

and let my plan completely fail……

A large number of negative thoughts surfaced in my mind.

I carefully pondered the risks and rewards of these possibilities may bring.

The first point to consider, is that this girl has a very calm personality.

So how I know this? And how calm is she?

When this girl is almost raped, she is still willing to trust me, and assist me.

This sort of person under such circumstances —— although I don't know why, but in such a situation whereby there are monsters like orcs roaming about, will there be a possibility for her to take hostile actions against me?

No, if she is such a superficial and short-sighted person, just now when her eyes met with mine, she should have already betrayed me.

……Superficial huh?

In that sort of situation, I believe most people would scream for help. If it was me, I would not deliberately shout. Though this is not something good to talk about, but I am really a cowardly person. So as to say, her brain is more flexible than most people.

Is there a possibility that she is smarter than me, and hence command me in return? Well for this, if her orders are correct, then that is fine. In fact I don't really reject being ordered, but I just hate situations whereby I have to obey irrational orders.

Actually in such an emergency, the age of the other person is not a problem. As long as she can make a more correct judgment than me, then I will also be happy to obey her orders.

Can she trust me?

Just now, she has already acted as a bait for me. Does that prove that she believes in me?

No, that should be just a wishful thinking on my side.

That moment, it can be said that we are just mutually using each other, so as to break status quo.

It might not be the same in the future, or perhaps she does not need my help at all.

Or perhaps she just wanted to make full use of me.

To make use of the other party—— Although it is annoying, but there are such people. The me in the past has also been subjected to such a treatment, and hence I am very sure, that once they found themselves in danger ,every one in the world would easily leave other people in the lurch.

Wait a minute. So, what if we can maintain in a situation whereby we can mutual use and benefit from each other?

If such a situation persist, then what will happen?

Hmm, I should think in this direction.

I have to let the girl know, what kind of benefits she would have if she cooperate with me.

The other possibilities include: She does not want to be a vanguard, or she cannot kill creatures that look similar to human, even if its an orc.

Regarding this point, even if I rack my brain out it will be useless.

If it really becomes like this, then I can only revert to my original plan, and fight alone.

Yes, plan. I have a long term plan.

But I have to grasp the situation first, then lay the foundation for future actions.

It is just that right now there is no need for such preparations. The most pressing thing, is to make the greatest effort, so that I can survive.

「……In short, let's talk to her first.」

I felt that, how could I, to a girl who was almost raped by monsters, proposed such an exchange……

But its just the opposite, actually now is the best timing. Regardless to her or to me, this is the only chance. So I have lend my hand out to her first.

Luckily, lending a helping hand to her will not bring any negative impact to me.

Now I just have to do my best.

If I am too timid, even if I could have won, I will lose.

In fact, actually I could only suffer the bullying every day.

If I didn't even dig a trap……

Yes, that perhaps maybe a dying struggle, but even so, if I did not do anything……

Then there would not be such a situation now.

In that case, the top priority is to take action. For the sake of my goal……

I begin to type at the keyboard, asking questions.

After a series of asking, I learn of a new and important information.

That is the system of「Party」.

「……It is getting more and more like a RPG.」

So far, the party system is the element that is closest to RPG.

The leader of the party just have to make physical contact with the person that he wants to party with, and think of「Form Party」in his heart, then the party will be formed.

When leaving the party, it seem that as long as you have the idea then you can leave. The leader can kick any member out of the party.

A party can at most have 6 people inside.

This is like the world's first RPG on the computer.

Only people who are level 1 and above, can form a party.

So as to say, everyone must kill at least 1 orc to form a party.

……That is very difficult.

People in the same party, will be able to get the evenly distributed experience.

And it is strictly distributed evenly. There is no extra experience like MMORPG.

Some magic can only be used on party members.

Some magic's effect is across the entire party, and there also seems to be some skills, that can only be used on party members. I am not too sure. Maybe I have to wait until everything is over then I will confirm it one by one.

People who are too faraway from the party, are unable to get the experience.

This sort of situation seems to be treated as not joining the party. As for the distance, there isn't an exact answer given, but it seems that it does not matter as long as you are within 100 meters.

I see, this system is very important.

Just now I had intended to use that girl as a shield, and then use the Puppet Golem to defeat the monster, and gain the experience……

If this is so, then all I need is for her to defeat the monster alone.

Of course, I will use magic to support her. As long as she has my support magic, she should be able to fight with an orc in a very safe condition. I can also use Summon Magic to restrain the enemy. Then, even without traps, we should be able to fight easily with the orcs.

Of course, all of this is under the premise that she agrees with my proposal……

「Should I trust in others once again?」

I look at the white ceiling, and remembered her eyes.

I imagined the instant when our eyes met in my mind. Just like an obsidian, her clear eyes seems to suck people into them.

If you disregard logical judgment, and just based on purely feelings……

The weird thing is, I completely do not think that she may betray me.

「Let me believe in her first.」

I mumbled to myself.

Clenching my fist, I nodded.

Okay, I have decided. I turned to the keyboard, and use the 2 newly acquired Skill Points, and raised my Skills.

To raise a Skill from Rank 1 to Rank 2, I have to use 2 Skill Points.

In other words, I have to use all the points I have gotten.

Kazuhisa: Level 2 Support Magic 1→2／Summon Magic 1 Skill Point 2→0

After I moved the cursor to「Confirm」, and press the confirmation button.

In an instant, I returned to the forest, back to near that girl.

Chapter 6: The Girl's Choice

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 6

Translator: Avert

Editor: Avert

Chapter 6: The Girl's Choice

Thinking back, the me of that time, perhaps just wanted something certain.

Perhaps, I only wanted to believe in something.

Believe in something, or someone.

No matter what it is, who it is, all of that are irrelevant. And she was there, just happen to appear there.

I spent a long time thinking in the white room, but the time spent in that room, is only an instant in reality.

The instant I returned to the forest, I could not help but kneed from being assaulted by a sense of severe fatigue.

I panted, and groaned. For the sake of adjusting my breathing, I place my hands on the ground that was covered by fallen leaves.

The thick smell of the forest entered my nose —— it is a smell similar to that of fallen rotting leaves that are wettened by the rain and mixed with insect and bird poo.. Smelling this sort of unique odor, my emotions gradually calmed down.

Sounds of footsteps can be heard on the carpet-like fallen leaves, approaching me.

I raised my head and notice that the girl whom I saved from the orc, is standing beside me.

Her uniform is in tatters and what she is wearing now is the summer uniform, hence her shirt should be short sleeves. But her right sleeve has been completely torn off, revealing her fair-skinned shoulder. There is also a big hole in her chest area, revealing her breasts in her bra. She tried to used her hands to cover but it does not seem to work.

Though she is quite petite in size, but she is quite big——
I thought so in my heart (TL note: hahaha I think you get what the author is writing about. Refer to coloured illustrations if you don't)

Her skirt has also been torn into half, revealing her white panties. There are also multiple bruises on her body, and she is bleeding from the scratches on her hands and legs.

But the girl just silently looked at me with her obsidian-like eyes.

Her pupils are extremely clear, making it look very big. It must be because she did not avert her eyes away from my body.

Although she has suffered such serious injuries and her looks are quite ragged, but I don't know why, I just felt that this girl is very beautiful.

Her fringe on her forehead is very messy, and her black hair that reached her waist have many fallen leaves and branches in it. Even so, I could not help but marvel at that lusty beautiful hair.

「You……」

The sound that I gave out, was nothing but self-mumbling. It was only something that I accidentally spoke. Because I have already been completely overwhelmed by her aura and do not know what to say.

But the girl seems to have understood the meaning of that word.

「I am Shimozono Arisu from the Middle School Section Year 3 Class 3.」

「Shimozono Arisu ……」

The girl told me that her name is「Shimozono Arisu」.

The other party have already self-introduced, then I guess I should also self-introduce as a form of courtsey.

「I am Kaya Kazuhisa from High School Section Year 1 Class 2.」

「Kaya……senpai.」

Arisu lightly bow to me. The leaf struck in her head also shook, like the ahoge frequently shown in the manga.

Although we are in such a situation, but I can’t help that feel that the scene is kind of comical.

I couldn’t help but laugh.

「Thank you for saving me…… What is wrong?」

Arisu raised her head and puffed her cheeks.

「What are you laughing about?」

I quickly explained that there is a leaf on her head.

And apologised for my lack of consideration.

Arisu gave out a「mu——」sound, making her mouth into a へ shape. She used one of her hands to cover her chest and used the other hand to reach on top of her head, while stupidly mumbling「Aa—— strange ——」.

She seems to be unable to find the leaf.

I walked closer to her slowly and quickly picked out the leaf that was struck in her hair. All of these felt very natural to me, even I myself do not know the reason why.

「Ah.」

The girl looked at me dumbly. After I showed that leaf to Arisu, I threw it away.

「Erm…… That ～」

I looked at Arisu, but my line of sight kept heading towards her chest. And Arisu's face eventually blushed due to shyness.

「Please don't keep staring at me like that.」

「Sorry.」

I shifted my sights away.

「Yes, that～」

「When speaking with others, please look at the other person's eyes.」

Just what exactly do you want me to do. No choice, I had to stare into Arisu's eyes. I didn't expect that I was almost sucked away by that obsidian glow. In my panic, I could only ask some meaningless questions.

「Are you okay?」

「Ah, yes I am. It is all thanks to you.」

「That is great. That～ luckily I made it in time.」

No, what I had wanted to talk about is not this. And Arisu, you should not be on such a topic too right?

I entered in the situation whereby it is not right for me to advance or retreat, and I could only curse at Arisu in my heart. Arisu, you should be full of doubts about all these right? Like magic, and the crow that has been standing on my shoulder since the beginning.

And I am a guy, you should more or less have some guard against me. After all such a thing happened earlier. Ah, but facing a girl who was almost raped, what should I say? No. The more important thing is to let her be dressed properly. I took off my uniform shirt and ask her to wear it. But after I said it halfway, then I discovered……

After just now that battle, my own shirt has also become very tattered.

Arisu looked at me, then looked at my pathetic shirt and could not help but give a bitter smile.

「Thank you for your kind thoughts, but I am fine.」

「Hmm, okay, sorry.」

Damn. I cannot control the pace of the conversation. Not only so, I am actually

self-destructing. I have this sudden urge to grab my head and then ran away from her immediately.

「Ah…… Why is Kaya-senpai's hands and legs glowing?」

Luckily, she took the initiative to ask me the question, that was really helpful.

Ah, my goddess. Arisu seems to be shining holy light, making it feel that I need to pray to her.

「Well, this……」

「Ah, sorry. Can I…… sit down?」

「Oh okay…… I am tired too.」

I sat down with Arisu side by side. Initially I thought Arisu will keep a bit of distance away from me, but I didn't expect that she will lean on me and sit down. I can even feel her body warmth.

I turned and looked at her, but of our difference in height, I have to look down.

Our eyes met, and a shy smile surfaced on Arisu's face.

I explained the situation sequentially. Although there is a big change to the initial plan, but I had spent a lot of time in the white room, thinking of which is the best way to explain things to her.

There is alot of time in the white room. Also there is only time in that room.

Hence I feel that my explanation should be very clear and understandable.

I only skipped one point, which is —— why I need to dig traps.

She seems to be interesting in this matter but she did not specially asked about it, but just listening to me and make the appropriate replies.

Arisu is really a good listener. No matter how simple my explanation is, the content is actually quite absurd. Honestly, if it was me who heard of this suddenly, I don't think I will believe it.

But Arisu have just been attacked by a creature that does not exist normally like an orc, perhaps because of this, she is much more accepting of the words that I said.

「I escaped here. That creature…… is called an orc? It suddenly attacked the middle school section and everyone escaped everywhere……」

So that is the reason, I nodded. Arisu raised her head and looked at me without moving.

「Can I become strong? Can I also become just as strong as Kaya-senpai?」

She took the initiative to ask.

「As long as you can kill an orc, you should be able to. If you have the will, I will naturally help you……」

「I want to kill.」

Arisu did not hesitate to say it. After I finished my words, perhaps only 0.5 seconds have passed.

「Please Kaya-senpai, please grant me power. Please give me the power to fight. I hate being powerless, and I hate being trampled upon helplessly.」

「I understand, no problem.」

Everything is according to plan. Although things have developed slightly different from how I imagined, but it is still on the same path.

Well…… it should be.

Chapter 7: Arisu's Awakening

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 7

Chapter 7: Arisu's Awakening

20 minutes later.

I am running away from the 4th orc that I met today, to lure the orc to the trap that Arisu is waiting at. My familiar, the crow —— is crowing in the sky. Perhaps it is cheering for me? (TL note: Somehow I WANT ONE TOOO!!!!)

This orc is different from the previous one and it has a spear in its hand. Although it is a roughly-made rusty spear, but it is still much stronger than the bamboo spear. I am thinking that, after I drop the orc into the trap, I should think of ways to get this spear.

Because we can attack at it one-sidedly, hence there is definitely a chance for victory. Once I think about facing a monster that can fight back, I shivered in fear.

Even I am like this, she must be even more afraid.

But we can think about this later. Right now I am keeping an appropriate distance away from the orc, a distance which he cannot catch up and where he is not too far.

The reason is because the power of《Physical Up》has increased roughly around 2 times.

I now know that ,once I increased Support Magic to Rank 2, I will not only get new magic, but the effect of the existing magic will also increase.

Because I have increased my level to 2, my MP have also increased. After I asked in the white room, I now know that I can use Rank 1 magic for around 2 times more.

When I am at level 1, I can only use 10 times of Rank 1 magic.

When I am at level 2, I can use it 20 times.

As this is too troublesome, so I decided to use「1 MP」to express that「I can use Rank 1 magic for 1 time」.

In other words, my MP is now 20.

As for HP, I only knew that it rose.

I am not going to get attacked by the orc just to find out the greatest value of my HP.

I got near to the trap and signalled to the back of the trunk. Just as we discussed, Arisu is hiding behind a tree.

Her clothes that were originally torn by the orc, is not completely restored. This is because I use Rank 2 Support Magic《Repair》. That was a magic that was originally used for repairing weapon and protective gears. After I used it on torn clothes, the clothes turned in a state that is like it had been washed. But this magic seems to be unable to remove the sweat and mud on the clothes, so it still looks a bit dirty.

Okay. I jumped across the trap and landed on the other side. This is the third time, hence I am already very familiar with it.

I turned my head, and the orc that was chasing me, give a heavy step and stepped on the place that I was just at.

And he stepped onto the trap that was covered with fallen leaves.

The orc's figure disappeared, and a second later, a cry came from within the trap.

I took a peek at the trap, and saw that bamboo spears in the hole piercing through the orc's body.

This time the bamboo spears penetrate very clearly, and due to this, the orc released the spear in its hands. Though it is good that there is no need to think about methods to get the spear, but……

What if this becomes the determining blow?

We have to act faster. I took the plastic bucket, and poured the contents into the trap.

The orc's body is covered with oil.

「Shimonozo-san!」

「Yes!」

Arisu ran out from behind the tree, and lighted the ball of newspaper with a lighter, before throwing it into the hole. The orc's body began to burn.

「The bamboo spear!」

「I.. I am going to strike!」

Arisu held the bamboo spear with an anxious face. I ran to her, and gently touched her trembling hands.

「《Mighty Arm》.」

Arisu's arms began to glow. Maybe it is because I leveled up, the glow seems to be even brighter.

「Thank……you.」

「Un, good luck.」

Arisu flinched and I lightly patted her shoulders.

「Bring out your guts!」

「Yes!」

The tip of the spear was dyed black because of the magic that I cast on it.

《Blood Attraction》—— This is the new magic that I gained when I raised the Rank of Support Magic to rank 2.

Arisu shouted with her cute voice, and stabbed the spear into the hole.

The orc's groans echoed from the hole.

At the same time, Arisu's body is surrounded by bluish-white light. The wounds on Arisu's body gradually healed, as long as one use a weapon that is enchanted with《Blood Attraction》to injure the enemy, the wielder's wounds will gradually disappear.

In RPG terms, as long as you decrease the enemy's HP, the wielder's HP will recover.

With this, it amounts to increasing the attacking power as a whole, no wonder this magic is a Rank 2 magic.

With every stab from Arisu, the orc groaned. Arisu stanned towards the hole furiously.

Finally, the orc's groans stopped. I looked into the hole, and saw the fatally wounded orc gradually disappearing.

Arisu's body suddenly shook.

Although it is only for an instant, I can clearly feel that the change in the aura surrounding Arisu.
Yes, she has already leveled up to Level 1. She is now the same as me, having the qualifications to enter that white room. It maybe like a instant to me, but she has already spent a long time in that room.

I suggested to her to use the laptop to ask all sorts of information, if she followed my words, she must have spent at least 1 or 2 hours.

Because of that, she seems so calm.

Arisu breathed out. With the spear in her hand, she turned towards me.

Maybe it is just me, but the stance which she used to hold the spear seems to be more natural.

No, it did indeed became so.

「I have gotten Spear Skill and Healing Magic.」

Arisu said so.

「《Heal》」

Arisu cast healing magic towards my hand.

My hand that was hurting due to the abrasions and wounds, was wrapped in bluish white light.

The pain gradually disappear, and in an instant, even the scars are gone.

Only a red trace was seen at the wound, like a proof that it was injured before.

「I see, that is really convenient.」

「Yes.」

Arisu laughed and began to heal her wounds. It was obvious that her wounds are more serious, but she insisted on using the healing magic on me first.

「There is really a white room.」

「So you actually suspected me.」

「Not that wasn't it……」

I gave a bitter smile.

「After all this is hard to for people to believe in.」

「That's right.」

The truth is, if our positions are reversed…… Mmm, I will probably be the same.

「But I did choose the Skill. This is all due to Gaya-senpai.」

「Just call me Kazuhisa or Kazu. Because we are companions.」

「Yes, Kazuhisa-san……Kazu-san. That～」

A shy smile appeared on Arisu's face as she looked up towards me.

「Please call me Arisu since everyone does that. Also I am your Kouhai, so just call my name directly.」(TL note: Kouhai = junior)

「I understand, Arisu.」

「Yes!」

Arisu happily smiled. Seeing her expression, I am also infected with her happiness, and smiled.

「Do you know how to use the spear now?」

「Yes.」

The weapon in her hand, is the rusty spear of the orc that just died.

The metal spearhead maybe rusty, but it is still much better than the bamboo spear that I made casually.

So this spear should also be《Repair》as well. I borrowed the spear from Arisu and use my hand to touch the spearhead.

「《Repair》」

The metallic spearhead glowed with blue light and the rust gradually disappeared. After about 10 seconds, the metal tip of the spear became almost like new, radiating its shininess.

「Wah～」

Arisu could not help but exclaimed in surprise.

「Amazing, Kazu-senpai.」

「Yes, amazing.」

Although that is done by me, but I also said it uncaringly. Because the thing that happened in front of me is really extraordinary. It should be, in my heart, there is already no more feelings of the reality.

「But as long as I have this, I will…… be able to fight.」

Arisu clutched her lips and nodded with a stern expression.

「I am no longer powerless.」

Chapter 8: The Faraway Scenery

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 8

Chapter 8: The Faraway Scenery

The method to create a party is very simple. As long as their palms are connected, and chanted in their heart, a red circle will appear on their right hand's little finger.

The red circle seems like a ring, but it does not have a solid form so you cannot touch it with your hand. It feels like AR technology——that was what I thought. A certain remarkable sci-fi author seemed to said:「Over development of magic will be just like science」..... Wow～is that so?

「….Matching rings.」

Arisu looked up towards me, with a shy smile on her face.

That smile seems like an innocent flower, making swallow my saliva.

I do not know if she saw my nervousness. I observed Arisu who is full of smiles, and it seems that she is just purely happy.

Ah, forget it. Anyway, I found my companion. This is considered as taking a big step.

Now the urgent thing is……

「Let's check out the current situation.」

I mumbled, asking Arisu to follow me, and then walked in the direction away from the main road. Arisu followed me panically.

「Where are you going to?」

「There is a cliff in front, from there we will be able to see the bus stop.」

Arisu gave a surprised expression.

Yes, it is ah. It is normal having such a reaction.

But now it is not an usual situation. Arisu and I must both acknowledge this, and confirm it with our eyes.

At this moment, what exactly happened in this mountain?

No, we have to know what exactly happened.

Our school —— Kitayama Private School, is situated in a mountain known as Kitayama by the natives.

More accurately saying, it should be that the entire mountain is the property of the school.

From the nearest bus stop through the fields until the foot of the mountain via car, will take you at least 30 mins.

From the foot of the mountain to the school building, the journey via car will also take 30mins, and the road condition is very bad, which is ill-suited for walking.

The building for the Middle School is at the South-west side of the mountain, while the building for High School is at the South-east side.

There are 2 roads connecting the 2 school buildings. Just now the road where we hunted the orc, is the further one, and we called it「South Road」.

If we take the north side road that connects the 2 school building, it will only take 10mins. But according to Arisu, after the earthquake, that road is covered by the landslide, and no longer functional. From the start she also use that road to escape, but after discovering that there is no way out, she is forced to escape to here.

Anyway, our current position, is at the longer route that connects the 2 school building, and also slightly south at the middle of the South Road.

We are currently heading south from here, so that when we reached the cliff and look down, we should be able to see the bus stop ad the nearby streets of the city.

We, who have reached the cliff, could really see the scenery from faraway.

But yet we could only stare at the vast grassland in front of us.

That's right, it's a grassland. At the horizon are majestic mountains, but directly in front of us is a big patch of grassland.

Not to mention the city, even a building or a field cannot be seen. Of course there is no human in sight.

The birds flew above us. But looking at them clearly, we discovered that they are different from the species that we know of.

The birds that we knew, are not that big. Don't even mention about the existing birds, even the dinosaurs are not that big.

That huge bird landed on the grassland.

There is an elephant on the grassland. But the huge bird is bigger than that elephant, it used its sharp claws and lightly grabbed on the elephant, before

spreading its wings to fly……

Then, it disappeared over the other side of the horizon like this.

「That, I want to ask a very stupid question now.」

Mmm, me too. I wish to say some very, very idiotic words, and I wish to say it desperately.
「Where is the bus stop?」

「I don't know, it should not be far from here.」

Well that is true —— Arisu said, scratching the back of her head in embarrassment.

Hmm～ that's not it right? The thing that you wanted to say is not this right?

I lowered my head and looked at the girl beside me, while Arisu looked at me with a troubled look.

「Sorry, I do not know what kind of expression to make now.」

You can laugh—— I wanted to say that, but I do not wish to let her know that I am a nerd, so I mumbled over after halfway through the sentence.

It has already come to this, and I am still minding such insignificant stuff, I can't help but feel that I am like an idiot……

I have already expected such a situation.

I have vaguely guessed our current situation. In that white room, I have asked many questions with this situation as an example, although the other party never gave me a clear answer, but once you chain all of the answers known to us, it becomes clear.

Hence the reason I came to this place, is actually just to confirm it.

I guess, this probably happened during the earthquake.

At that time, we…...

No, it should be that the whole mountain is involved in a huge change.

I gently held Arisu's hand. Her hand is very warm. Arisu held my hands tightly back, as though she found a driftwood in the sea.

「Arisu, let's level up together, and then go back to ask the questions.」

「Yes, Kazu-senpai…… Let's level up together.」

We cannot stay here aimlessly.

So we decided on our next target.

Level up. After leveling up, head to the white room, and ask the other party what is the situation.

We held hands together, returning back via the same route.

The crow scouted in the air, and found the orcs.

Those orcs seem to come from the top of the mountain. When they are heading down, the path they went through intersected with the road, and hence they splited left and right. The ones heading east will reach the high school building, while the ones heading west will reach the middle school building.

「What does the mountain top have exactly?」

Such a question appeared in my heart, but the me of now does not wish to rush into a bunch of orcs. We lure the orcs one by one to the forest on the north of the road, and waited until they reached deep in the forest where no sounds of fighting can be heard, then Arisu and I will work together to kill them.

Arisu's spear skills is very good. More accurately speaking, it should be that the power of Spear Skill is very remarkable.

The Arisu from just now could not even stand firmly, and when she stabs, there is a lack of strength and she cannot even hit accurately. In short, it was bad. But now, she who have gotten Spear Skill Rank 1, is already like a soldier who is well-trained, standing firmly and stabbing with the spear, toying around with the orcs.

Just by ability alone, Arisu is about the same as the orcs.

But, Arisu has my support magic.

《Keen Weapon》,《Physical Up》 and 《Mighty Arm》.

These 3 support magic has been very helpful to me since Rank 1, and after it became Rank 2, the effect became even greater, supporting Arisu.

Thanks to these support magic, even if it is 1 vs 1, this girl who is smaller and weaker, is able to suppress the orcs who are muscular.

The orc swing its sword wildly, attacking from the front.

Arisu widened the distance from the orc with her nimble footsteps from 《Physical Up》, then focused her strength into her limbs enhanced with 《Mighty Arm》and using the metal spear sharpened with 《Keen Weapon》 to attack.

Arisu's attack caused the orc to have a serious injury on his leg, and it fell down, groaning.

This moment, without a shred of hesitation, Arisu stabbed the spear in the orc's body, and the humanoid creature with a pig face began to ooze blue blood.

The orc immediately tried to run away, but Arisu chased it without hesitation.

Thanks to《Physical Up》, Arisu's strides are faster than the orc.

Arisu caught up with the orc in an instant. With a scream, she stabbed again, and the orc shrieked.

The battle took roughly about 1 minute. Then the orc that has its throat stabbed by Arisu began to glow, and gradually disappear.

We intercepted the orcs from the front, and obtained victory.

「That's great!」

Arisu is ecstatic. Although she is still panting from the battle that just ended, but she still jumped around happily with her spear, and then hugged me.

Her voluptuous peaks are pressed on my chest.

That softness and elasticity feel caused my words to become incoherent, and I lowered my head to look at Arisu…… She who recovered, began to blush and turn her sight away from me.

「Th..that, I am sorry.」

Arisu quickly let go of me, and turned to the side, but she will take peeks at me occasionally.

Just what is with this girl, that intelligence and nimbleness from just now, and

the innocent and defenseless look now, isn't the difference too big…...

Suddenly the alarm in my heart rang. Could she be trying to win me over? Or making use of me?

No, actually this is not bad.

Currently we both need each other. If she does not have my support magic, when Arisu is facing the orcs, she could be in a tough battle. Even under the assistance of《Mighty Arm》, her strength is still weaker than the orcs. When facing close combat, and a battle of strength situation, she will be suppressed onto the ground immediately. To escape from the opponent's attack range,《Physical Up》that increases speed is essential.

Also removing the spear's rust, and strengthening its attacking power, is also my magic. If an emergency situation occurs, I intend to use the crow to restrain the orc, to protect her. After all, my level is now 2, there are a lot of methods to use.

Hence, at least for now, our benefits to each other is the same.

The problem is in the future? She once said that she needs power, I should have asked her for the reason she wanted power for. I should have asked it earlier, that is really a miscalculation.

I lowered my head, disheartened. Arisu observed me carefully.

「Arisu, we know that we have the power to fight. Now is to determine our next direction.」

Saying this, my eyes met with Arisu's. I stared straight into her obsidian eyes.

「What do you wish to do next?」

Arisu hesitated for a moment, and then nodded her head vigorously.

「I have a request.」

After she finished her words, she looked towards the West.

The other side of the forest, should be the school building for the Middle School. So to say, she was chased by the orc from there until here.

She said she headed to the north road to escape first, before changing route, and then reaching here; but before that, where was she? Where did she meet the orcs?

「I wish to save my friend. Kazu-senpai, will you go to the Middle School Building with me?」

Friend. She wanted to save her friend.

「You are saying…… to save your friends from the orcs?」

Arisu nodded.

And then she lowered her head, seemingly unable to speak.

Finally she decided, clutching her hands in front of her chest, and looked at me.

She spoke……

「I left my friend who was being chased by an orc, and escaped alone.」

And admitted her sin.

Chapter 9: Level Up

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 9

Chapter 9: Level Up

Shimonozo Arisu said that she had a very good friend.

Her name is Ryuuki Tamaki. They have been in the same class for the 3 years in the Middle School, and no matter where they went, they are inseparable.

「Tamaki is a very lively girl, and she frequently runs. I am not good with sports, but I like to watch Tamaki run in the past. I am always looking from the side, until a certain time when she came and took my hand, telling me『Let's play together』. Thanks to her, I managed to make a lot of friends.」

Arisu gave an embarrassed smile. She said that she is a not a person who can make friends readily, and thanks to this friend, she can enjoy a happy school life.

I replied at appropriate times, while listening to her explain.

「Today the 2 of us should be in the Cultivating Centre. Tamaki said that she wanted to learn how to cook, so I agreed to teach her.」

The Cultivating Centre is a building with multiple facilities near the middle school building, it was modified from the old school building. The aim of this building, is to let the students who are isolated in the mountain, learn all sort of skills and talents. In this building, there are rooms with exceptionally luxurious wooden floors and rooms with tatami.

It is said that that building even had a cooking classroom.

「But after the earthquake, the fire suddenly extinguished, and the water also

stopped…… Then the orcs appeared.」

She said that there are about 10 orcs. After Tamaki and Arisu left the Cultivating Centre, they tried to escape to the high school building. First they headed to the road in the north, but instead they discovered that the road is buried in soil and rocks, becoming inaccessible.

In the end the 2 of them are discovered by the orcs here. It seems that it was because Arisu accidentally let out a sound.

In order to save Arisu, Tamaki willingly became bait. She said that she is faster, and had a higher chance of escaping successfully, and after saying she took off immediately.

While the orc is chasing after Tamaki, Arisu escaped into the forest.

But in the end she is still discovered by another orc, and then discovered by my familiar.

「I believe Tamaki is still alive. We agreed, if we are safe, we will meet in the forest…...」

「Did you agreed to meet at a location?」

Arisu did not say anything, and pointed to a stone tablet near the place that we just hunted an orc.

There is actually such a thing, I did not know about this before……

It is said that they discovered it when Arisu and Tamaki came to the forest to「adventure」. She said that the 2 of them decided to meet here because the 「adventure」at that time is a precious memory to them.

「I only managed to escape because of Tamaki. Hence, I must save Tamaki.」

I pondered about the possibility of that girl who is called Tamaki being safe and alive, but yet being unable to come to this place.

I have never been to the Cultivating Centre, only hearing about it from my classmates. The Cultivating Centre is in the forest, a distance away from the other buildings. When there are lesser people heading there, the surroundings woods gradually took over, and without knowing it is swallowed by the forest.

Hence, the vision in that region is very bad. I remember the notice by the school, requesting students to take extra care after dark. If that girl called Tamaki managed to escape from the orc, she would think of ways to escape into that forest.

Is it possible that she can't do that? For instance, an injury causing her to only hide.

Well that is not impossible.

The question now, is not about the chances of the girl called Tamaki being safe, but the fact that as long as as the girl Tamaki have a slight chance of being safe, Arisu will attempt to go rescue her.

「We must avoid the situation of dying while saving others.」

Hence I said this.

「If we were defeated while going to save others, then that is definitely a no.」

「Yes.」

「Wait until your Spear Skills and my Summon Magic are both Rank 2, then we will got check it out.」

「Yes!」

Arisu nodded obediently.

This is the best compromise for the both of us—— I thought so in my heart. Luckily she has a goal, hence because of this, her modus operandi becomes very clear.

Next is to fit the things that each of us wanted.

Conversely, if she hid it from me, and took actions alone to fulfil her goal, I will be more troubled by it. Now, we are considered as united. I cannot separate from her at this point. At least until I reach level 3, and raise my Summon Magic to Rank 2.

Once I reach level 3, I can summon Puppet Golems. And once I called 2 of the Puppet Golems, and use Support Magic to strengthen them, I should be able to battle with the orcs to a certain extent.

Just that I do not know how Puppet Golem works.

But, in the Q&A earlier, the other party once answered me: using Summon Magic to call out Familiars, the ability value is about 2 Ranks lower than a human with weapon attack Skills.

And now my Support Magic has already risen to Rank 2, the effect of《Keen Weapon》,《Physical Up》and《Mighty Arm》have already gotten stronger.

From Arisu's current actions, through the rank up of the Summon Magic and Rank 2 Familiars which became stronger, with the addition of these Support Magic, it should be able to defeat an orc easily.

Before that, I still need this shield called Arisu. I cannot let her go.

Arisu agreed with my suggestion, that is good.

Initially I was still very nervous, what if she said「I want to go save her now」. What should I do?

Of course, I do not wish to go back on my words. Once I reached Level 3, I will raise the Summon Magic Skill to Rank 2, and then follow our promise and send the crow to scout.

But, if according to the scouting report, if I discover that we cannot enter the Cultivating Centre by force, then I will also tell her directly.

I don't wish to conduct a suicide attack. If it is possible, I also do not wish for Arisu to do so.

Once Arisu's Spear Skill reach Rank 2, I will use Summon Magic to call out Puppet Golems, and increase our combat strength, then even if we face 2 or 3 orcs at once, perhaps it will not be a problem. Even if there is 4 of them, we should be able to find a solution.

But, what if the 10 orcs that she mentioned are still there…...

If those fellows are all gathered at the same place…… Then that is impossible, we do not have any chance of victory.

At least not until both Arisu and I have increased our level further.

When that happens, I intend to convince her with reason. As for whether it will be successful, I do not know, I can only try.

Assuming such a situation, if Arisu still insist on going to save her…...

I will abandon her, and let her go on alone.

She should be unable to win against those orcs. A tragedy will definitely happen.

But I will not stop her. I can't stop her. In my heart, I am indebted to her.

Because she is present, that is why I can level up safely. Under the current situation, this is something at put one at ease.

More importantly. she is sincere towards me. Including the enemies' number, the danger in the Cultivating Centre, she told me everything. She asked for my assistance in such a situation.

Telling me all of dangers honestly, will increase the chances of me rejecting it, but she still said it.

She faced me seriously.

Hence I also wish to face her sincerely. I will not trick her.

I took a look at my watch, and the needle is pointing to 4.30pm. The time when the earthquake happened, is roughly around 2.30pm to 3pm, which is to say from the earthquake until now, only 2 hours have passed.

In this season, the sun will set before 6pm.

No, at least yesterday and the day before is like this. Since such a thing happened, then today may not be the same as before. But from the height of the sun, there should not be a big difference in the sunset timing. Moving in the forest at night is dangerous.

「Hurry up, we must level up within 30 mins from now, before 5pm.」

「Yes!」

I sent out the crow familiar, and ordered it to search of orcs who are alone.

Then I ran to the orc, and lure it to Arisu.

When Arisu is fighting with the orc, I sent the crow familiar to search for the next orc.

Though the endless cycle of not wasting a second, the 2 of us within 20mins, defeated 3 orcs. And Arisu leveled up.

The next second.

Arisu and I entered the white room together.

Chapter 10: Prepare for Battle

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 10

Chapter 10: Prepare for Battle

Arisu and I looked at each other in the White Room.

「What is going on?」

「Perhaps it is because of this.」

I looked at the illusionary red rings on our little fingers.

Then, I turned my sights to the table.

This time there are 2 sets of tables and chairs side by side in the room.

The laptops on the tables, are showing the my ability value and Aris's respectively.

I took a peek at Arisu's computer screen.

「So this is Arisu's ability values……」

「Wa, Wah wah, no you cannot see!」

「What the problem, after all it is not something unspeakable.」

「But I will be embarrassed!」

Arisu jumped up and down with a panicked face, attempting to push me away from her laptop.

I felt that her reactions are very funy, so I deliberately continue to take peeks at her laptop.

「Muu~」

Arisu blushed, then, I lightly poked her at the sides.

「This is a harassment.」

「Just a joke to smooth the mood.」

「There is an sly look on your face.」

I did not deny that. Looking at Arisu who is blushing and using her hand to cover the screen, I laughed.

「Mu-! That’s too much! I was wrong about Kazu-senpai!」

「Sorry, that was too much.」

Seeing that we cannot continuing discussing, hence I apologized honestly.

This is only wasting time. But in this room whereby time has stopped, it doesn’t matter how much we waste.

That’s right, we can waste time, but we can also not waste time.

This room is really too suitable for strategy planning.

Well, we sat in our own chairs, and entered questions into the laptop. The reason why we can enter this room together. Is it because one of the members in the party leveled up?

The answer is YES. In the future as long as a person in the party level up, everyone in the party will be able to enter this room.

If you changed the setting in this laptop, you will also be able to stop coming to this room.

Yes, the options showing on the screen indeed increased. Under the「Party Members」field, Arisu's name appeared. There is a checkbox on the left of the name, if you check it, it seems that you can cancel the function of the party member entering the room together.

「There is no need for this function……」

I did not feel that I would not want to come to this room.

It is actually the opposite. Unless there are problems between the relationships of the party members, or perhaps hiding one's ability, if not there are only pros coming to this room.

The best benefit is that there are plenty of time to organise your thoughts calmly, and there are also ample time to discuss with your party members. I can discuss with Arisu on how to cooperate in detail. This can be discussed after I reached level 3 when the sun is about to set and when time is of utmost essential.

「Do you have any matters that you wish to discuss now?」

I asked Arisu.

「This……」

Arisu looked at me who is sitting on the chair, seemingly a bit hesitant.

「Can I…… ask about stuff regarding Kazu-senpai?」

「My stuff are very boring, there is nothing much to talk about.」

I gave such a reply immediately.

Arisu lowered her head. She is a smart person, and should have realized that I do not wish to touch on this matter.

「Well. Then, we can talk about it in the future.」

「Mmm, if there is a chance I will tell you.」

I will say it when there are chances in the future. If that time, you are still around with me.

I added this sentence secretly in my heart.

Arisu returned to her chair, and controlled her laptop.

Arisu：Level 2 Spear Skill 1→2／Healing Magic 1 Skill Point 2→0

At the moment when she clicked confirm, we returned to the forest.

「Okay, we got to act faster. Although we do not know how many orcs we need to defeat before we can level up, But it is better to be faster.」

「Yes…… that, I say if. If there are 2 orcs, can you bring both together?」

I see, her Spear Skill has already raised to Rank 2, plus with my support, perhaps she can deal with 2 orcs at the same time.

If it is too much, I can send my crow familiar to support. If it is impossible to win, our speed has also became faster with the assistance of support magic. All we need to do is escape.

No matter what, there will be situations where we need to face a lot of enemies at once. We need to test how to deal with it now. At this moment, the crow returned.

「That side, there are 2. This side, there is 1.」

The crow used its beak to point out the directions to me.

「Bring me to the side where there are 2 of them.」

I said so, while beginning to run.

I brought back 2 orcs, and Arisu looks as though it is nothing much.

I don't know if its me, but her posture seems more impressive while she is holding the spear.

「Can you do it?」

「Yes!」

While we brushed past each other, we briefly talked.

Arisu lowered her centre of gravity, and kick off the ground, dashing towards the orcs with an impressive presence.

After I brushed past Arisu, I stopped and headed back.

As though she was very relaxed, Arisu held the heavy metal spear and crossed eyes with the orc that is dashing towards her with its sword raised up…...

Her body slanted towards the right and moved, striking at the orc with very smooth movements.

With one strike, Arisu pierced the throat of the orcs on her right.

I was shocked beyond words, staring blankly at the scene in front of me. Her movements are so smooth that it sends shiver down one's spine. It was as though she was like a martial arts expert, completely controlling the space and pace of her opponents.

The other orc missed, and Arisu took the chance to let go of the metal spear in her hands.

「Kazu-senpai!」

「Okay.」

I immediately grabbed the bamboo spear beside the tree, and threw it to her.

When dealing with 2 orcs at the same time, the spear that is used to stab the 1st orc may become temporarily unusable. We have considered this point, and hence prepared the bamboo spear aside as a back up.

Once Arisu got the bamboo spear, she displayed a battle pose, taking a big step forward, using the bamboo spear to stab the other panicking orc.

But, this time the attack is slightly shallow.

This orc held the spear in its hand. It used its shoulder to take Arisu's attack, and while screeching in pain, it spinned its body forcefully.

The orc swung the spear horizontally, with the wind pressure nearly blowing Arisu away. No how strong the Spear Skill is, she is after all just a Year 3 Middle School girl.

Luckily with the support of《Physical Up》and《Mighty Arm》, Arisu managed to

stablise her steps.

She dashed nimbly towards the orc who was unstable due to the attack just now, and tackled its body. The hand holding the bamboo spear, shifted the spear head and stabbed accurately at the orc's weakness— its throat.

Blue blood sprayed around.

The orc collapsed, unmoving.

The combat time taken for the 2 orc, is only roughly about 10 seconds. If my movement was smoother when I was throwing the back up bamboo spear to her, the time taken should be shorter.

「It was unexpectedly successful.」

Arisu turned over, and smiled at me. Behind her, the bodies of 2 fallen orcs gradually disappeared, leaving a gem.

A opening trumpet music rang in my ears.
「You leveled up!」

I heard a neutral voice saying so.

So that's it — I thought so in my heart. After I formed a party with Arisu, we have defeated a total of 6 orcs, which is to say, everyone got an average experience of 3 orcs.

「So we just have to defeat the same amount of orcs as the next level individually.」

Arisu and I were transferred to the white room together.

We looked at each other in the white room once again.

「With this, I can raise the Summon Magic to Rank 2.」

「Yes.」

「As per our agreement, let's go and check out the Cultivating Centre.」

「Yes!」

Hence, to save time, we have to discuss on a thorough plan.

「First, we will move to the nearby of the Cultivating Centre. When we meet any orcs that are patrolling nearby, if we avoid being detected by other orcs, we will quickly take care of them.」

「We just have to decrease the numbers.」

「Next, we just have to observe the situation, when we meet one then we will solve it……」

The time now should be 5pm, perhaps there is no time to do a detailed investigation. Though I said so, but battling in the night is not really advisable.

The more important thing is that, the orcs may have night vision. As to whether or not that they have such an ability, there isn't much relations to the current situation. But before we know these fellows' nature fullym we have to act with the assumption that「Orcs have night vision ability.」

「Night vision ability…… Is it like a cat, where their eyes glow in the night?」

「That I do not know. But, mountain boars moves in the night, and pigs are domestic mountain boars.」

「Ah, that is true.」

「But even though we are all humans, as modern Japanese, our eyes have already deteriorated a lot…… We should be considered as a race that does not have good eyesight. But for people that hunts as their way of life, it is said that even during night, they can navigate in the forest easily……」

「Kazu-senpai is so knowledgable.」

No, this seems to be a story from a novel.

Arisu's eyes were dazzling, hence I decided to just let to go. In short, moving in the night is not advantageous to us.

「In Rank 2 Summon Magic, there seems to be a magic called《Summon Floating Lantern》, which can summon a torch that floats in the air……」

「A torch is too attention grabbing.」

Actually I feel that using a torchlight is enough. Just that I do not have a torchlight now.

「Anyway, if it attracts the enemies to gather here, then that will be troublesome. After all we are small in numbers. If we are surrounded by a large number of orcs, there is nothing we can do.」

Hence, once the enemies outnumbers us, then the basic tactics will be to battle while escaping.

「If there are less than 3 orcs in the same place, then we will take them down with a strong attack. Arisu just have to show her strength that you displayed just now when you defeat the 2 orcs. It is very simple!」

「Th..this…… I will do my best.」

Arisu clenched her fist, her actions seemingly adorable. This defenseless look, is really hard to let one believe that she was the one who fought like an Asura just now.

「If there are more than 7 orcs then we will escape immediately. If there are above 4 but lesser than 6, then we will use either my familiar or myself as bait, and defeat each individually.」

「But, the risk that Kazu-senpai is taking will be too high.」

「Before getting the hang of the orcs' action modulus, actually you are in greater danger, and there is a possibility of being surrounded. If such a situation occurs, I do not have the ability to save you, so if we failed……」

「I understand.」

Arisu held her hands tightly in front of her chest.

Her shoulders slightly trembled. This is natural, how can one not be afraid. If she fails, she will suffer the worse fate as a girl, and then killed later. She held such a determination, wanting to save her best friend wholeheartedly.

「I had fallen into the hands of the orcs before……If Kazu-senpai did not save me at that time……」

「You will decide whether if we will implement this plan. If you feel that it is too much……」

「No,」

Even so, Arisu still shook her head. She surpassed her trembling with her strong will, and look straight into my eyes.

「I want to do it, please let me do it.」

She clearly announced it so.

Kazuhisa: Level 3 Support Magic 2 / Summon Magic１→２　Skill Point ２→０

Chapter 11: Breaking into the Cultivating Centre

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 11

Chapter 11: Breaking into the Cultivating Centre

After I level up to Level 3, 15 minutes have passed.

The 2 of us are already at the bushes near the Cultivating Centre.

I am a transfer student who only transferred over during High School, hence I am not familiar with this building and had to have Arisu explain it to me.

The Cultivating Centre is a wooden building that is 3 stories high. About 40 years ago, it is being used as the school building, only until recently it is renovated to become the current look. Although it is said to be renovated, but it is said to have almost been completely rebuilt. Not only replacing the old and rotting wood, the main pillar is used as the core, and it used the wood that can still be used. The more important parts are reinforced with steel, and the originally 2 stories building is rebuilt into one with 3 stories.

Not only are the electricity, gas and water systems completely new, even heaters are installed. The facilities are even better than the main school buildings.

As for the interior, rather than saying it is a school, it is closer to that of the western building commonly seen inside movies. Entering from the main door, it is a 2 stories big lounge. On the first floor, there are cooking classrooms and the showers. On the second floor, there are japanese styled rooms that are being used by the Tea Ceremony Society and junior-sized ballrooms. On the third floor, there are multi purposed big-sized conference rooms and guestrooms for VIPs.

The basement which is normally locked, stored provisions and fuels that can be used during disasters.

Actually my summoning magic can also summon food, and also water. But currently there isn't such a need, moreover MP is very valuable, so I didn't conduct any experiments.

But there are back-up fuels, which makes one happy. In such a situation, it is very valuable to have fuel.

Hence, even without Arisu's reason, taking over the Cultivating Centre is an attractive suggestion in itself. And with the approaching night, taking over the Cultivating Centre also means securing a place for the night.

According to Arisu, at that time there are about 10 people in the Cultivating Centre. Among them, 5 of them are in the cooking classrooms, and there are about 5 people in the Tea Ceremony Society.

「The door in front of the level 3 stairs is closed. That door is locked, so as long as the orcs did not break in, we should not need to pay any special attention to the third story.」

Arisu whispered while hiding in the bushes.

「If there are any orcs on the level 2 balcony, then we should be able to see it immediately…… In short, as long as we see the lounge, I guess we can grasp the general situation.」

「If there are only 2 orcs and below in the lounge, there is no need to consider. Just attack.」

「Okay.」

Before reaching here, we have battled with the orcs twice, and every time Arisu stuck the throat, killing the orc immediately. Her battle tactic is already so polished that there is no chance fo the opponent to even scream.

Arisu is currently level 2, which is to say after leveling, she has already took care of 4 orcs. Because the experience is shared among the 2 of us, so she only needs to kill 2 more orcs, then she will be able to level up.

After leveling, we can conduct another strategic meeting in the white room. Even if it is during battle, we can also spend a lot of time to confirm the battle tactics.

This is a big plus point. Hence, if there are only 2 orcs and below, there is no need to consider. Just attack. Because we will have time to plan in detail, even if the worst situation happens —— Like reinforcement from the enemy, we can also calm down, and immediately escape.

There is no signs of orcs in the surroundings, so I sent the crow to investigate.

The crow flew to the main gate of the Cultivating Centre, and landed, looking into the interior of the centre.

It really looks like a very suspicious crow.

Well, in reality it is indeed a spy……

Luckily, nothing happened. The crow spread its wings and flew while giving off a Ka ka sound, returning to my side.

「Orcs, 2.」

The voice that only I can hear, sounded in my ears.

「Okay, good job!」

I nodded, and looked into Arisu’s eyes.

Arisu swallowed her saliva, and held her spear tightly.

「Don’t panic, I will cast magic on you first.」

《Keen Weapon》,《Physical Up》,《Mighty Arm》,《Blood Attraction》.

I cast the magic sequentially. Even if she is injured a little, as long as she uses《Blood Attraction》to absorb HP from the orcs, she should be able to continue fighting.

But the problem is that, what if she is hit by those muscular orcs, will the slim Arisu be able to withstand it……

Ah~ this magic seems kind of subtle? Ah, forget it, as long as the meaning gets across. It is better to have then none. Luckily I have enough MP.

Subtracting the 1 point used by the crow familiar, the MP that I have now is 29 points.

Using 4 types of magics on Arisu, the remaining MP is 24 points.

……Argh~ this should be right.《Blood Attraction》is a Rank 2 magic, so it will use twice the amount of MP.

Next, I continued to use magic.

「《Summon Puppet Golem》.」

A wooden puppet of about 150cm in height appeared in front of me. That is a roughly made wooden puppet, ‘making one can’t help but name it as 「Pinocchio」. But its nose is really low though.

The puppet held a pole in its right hand, and a wooden round shield on its left. The puppet then bowed at me.

「So..so cute.」

Arisu's eyes glowed. Oi, oi, you are about to fight with the orcs.

Ah, forget it, having such spirits is also a good thing.

Next, I cast magic on the Puppet Golem.

「《Keen Weapon》,《Physical Up》,《Mighty Arm》」

I guess《Blood Attraction》is not needed. If the familiar is destroyed, then we will talk about it when it happens.

Finally, I cast these 3 magic on myself too. The MP that Rank 2 summon magic uses is 4 points, so……

Current MP/ Maximum MP = 14/25

It should be okay like this. Hmph, yes it should be alright.

Taking note of the number of times that I can use magic, is an extremely important point. If it can be like a game, being able to know how much HP and MP are left at anytime, that will be convienent.

The pity is, this world does not seem to be able to show one's ability values. Since this is so, we need to calculate the consumption of MP carefully.

As to how much is recovered, it is very hard to calculate accurately……

After a while, we may need something like a stopwatch?

Saying so, looking at the MP left, I should be more careful, and not summon another Puppet Golem first. According to how the battle situation develops,

there could be a chance that I will need to summon another, but for now I only need 1 Puppet Golem to act as my guard.

「Go!」

Hearing my sign, Arisu rushed out from the bushes.

Although I am slower by half a beat, but I also rushed out behind her. If there is only 2 orcs, then there is no need for any strategy. In fact I should also enter the Cultivating Centre, and shut the main door, to prevent the sounds of battle from travelling outside, and attracting any reinforcement of the orcs.

The Puppet Golem also followed behind me shakily. Though its steps seems very unstable, but it is surprisingly fast, and its pace is almost the same as mine.

Arisu stopped in front of the main door.

Her movements stopped for a second. What exactly happened—— me who was slower by a few steps, finally caught up……

I looked into the lounge of the Cultivating Centre.

The orcs are there.

In the dimly lighted lounge, 2 orcs are pressing on a snow-white doll thing. They showed their naked lower bottom, shaking their hips.

I seem to have heard the sound of Arisu clutching her teeth.

Before coming here, I have always thought that she is a gentle, not easily agitated, stable person.

I thought she is a person who can suppress her emotions, a person who can act calmly.

But Arisu of this moment is filled with rage.

She nearly lost all reasonings in her rage.

Arisu lowered her centre of gravity, and kicked off from the ground.

Her black long hair swished with the wind, her whole body turning into a gust of wind, rushing towards the orcs.

The sound of Arisu stepping on the ground, caused the orcs who are focused on shaking their hips to realise the abnormal situation at the door, and hence turned their heads.

But, at this moment——

Arisu's spear has already stabbed into the throat of the orc that is closer to her.

Fresh blue blood sprayed everywhere. But Arisu did not have a single drop of blood on her.

In the next instant, her figure disappeared.

No, she simply just turned only. While she is turning, she pulled out the spear in the orc's throat, and using the body of the orc who has stopped breathing as a shield, she hid her figure.

The orc which was uninjured panicked, searching for Arisu's traces. But, her of that moment has already gone behind that orc.

She wielded her spear, and gave a beautiful fierce blow to the orc.

The strike accurately pierced the orc's throat.

At this moment, the 2 orcs fell on each other.

Their bodies gradually fades.

What is this?

So scary.

In the future it is better to not make her angry —— I thought so, and sworn in my heart.

Arisu breathed out deeply.

She stared at the thing that looked like a white doll beside her, and then bit her lips tightly.

The next second, we are sent to the white room.

Arisu and I looked at each other in the white room.

Arisu looked at me with an expression full of sorrow. I did not want to ask.

But I had to ask. So I moved my thirsty throat, and spoke.

「That……」

「Is not Tamaki.」

Ah…… I shook my head, and said.

「Is she still breathing?」

「Her neck turned in an unnatural way.」

Arisu clutched her teeth tightly again. Then she clutched her fists, and lowered her head.

「I can't believe it.」

I walked carefully towards Arsu, and lightly patted her head.

Arisu started to sob.

She jumped into my blossom, and cried loudly. I am helpless, and could only let Arisu vent.

That is the only thing that I can do now.

「I am a despicable person.」

After a while, Arisu said so while sobbing.

「There was a second that I was relieved, thinking that it was really great that she is not Tamaki.」

Arisu now sat down on the ground and cried.

And me who lent her my chest to lean on, naturally squat down, so as to hold Arisu.

Arisu's voluptuous twin peaks were tightly pressed on my chest, making me swallow my saliva.

But, this evil thought immediately disappeared. Because the strength that Arisu used to grab on my uniform, became stronger. No, her entire body is slightly shaking.

One can't help but be sad at this sight.

「That girl was killed. She was violated by the orcs then killed, but she is still being violated. Seeing such a scene, I actually left relieved. I am really the worst type of person.」

This is natural—— I said in my heart.

This is nothing but the result of putting the most important person to you and a stranger on a scale. If it was me, I will definitely be like her and feel relieved too.

That is something natural, and yet Arisu blamed herself so severely.

Her heart is really kind, and I feel that this is a very good thing.

But, that is only a virtue during normal times. In the current situation, that attitude will only be a burden.

But I could not say anything, completely helpless.

Since the beginning, I had the attitude that if something happens, I will abandon her. The me who is like this, how should I comfort her?

Words that are said with such insincere intentions, how could it enter her heart?

So I only silently listen to Arisu's confession. This is the only thing that I can do.

I quickly supported Arisu who has fallen, and a constant breathing sound could be heard.

「……So she slept.」

I lightly let the girl lie on the floor of the white room.

Then I adjusted my sitting position to a kneeling position, and placed Arisu's

head on my thigh.

When we are in this room, the time in the real world has stopped. Since that is so, at least I should let her have a good rest, until her heart feels that it is enough. Just let her sleep to her content.

When we return to reality, that tragic scene will continue.

She will definitely be constantly tormented in her heart.

So at least now I should let her rest —— I lowered my head and looked at Arisu's peaceful sleeping face.

At this moment, I hope that she can rest properly.

I thought so from the bottom of my heart.

Chapter 12: The Clean-up Battle of the Cultivating Centre

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 12

Chapter 12: The Clean-up Battle of the Cultivating Centre

I don’t know how much time have passed.

Though my legs are numbed, and I felt frustrated, but I cannot wake Arisu who is sleeping soundly. And I do not have any courage to prank her who is sleeping, hence I can only stare at her sleeping face.

It was me who pushed her to the battlefield.

I use this girl who is younger and weaker than me as a shield, and hid myself in safety while battling.

I am after all a guy, to this, more or less I would feel sorry about it.

If it’s just this level of numbness in the leg, it can be considered as a sort of repayment for her……

Me who is always thinking in such a petty way, is probably a coward.

Hmm, being a coward is not bad. I will depend on my wits to survive.

I remembered the scene seen from the cliff.

A never-seen before grassland, a huge bird.

And the orcs that attacked us.

「Another world.」

I could not help but say it out.

Even if we escape from the orcs, and successfully left the school, and went down the mountain. Our homes may not be there.

So that is the reason why there is the existence of such a room.

So that is why these Skills exist.

In this world that seems like a joke, and like a game, but yet is reality, we have to survive on.

「I don't wish to die.」

2, 3 hours ago, I had intended to kill that fellow, and as for the things in the future I could wait until then before thinking about it.

But now, I am only concerned on surviving.

Perhaps it is before I experience combat. Perhaps I have a more realistic experience towards「Death」. Now that I know, to me, death is scarier than I expected.

Just be a coward, and then use the power of these Skills to survive on.

For this aim, I must use Arisu.

Since so, just only having numb legs, is nothing much.

While thinking, I felt that a long time has already passed.

Arisu moved. She opened her eyes, and rubbed her eyes sleepily.

Ah—— She wiped her saliva with her hand.

Fooo—— then she gave out a cute voice, and yawned……

Then her eyes which has been directed downward, met my eyes.

「Wah!」

「Good morning.」

I revealed a pranking look. Arisu shrieked and rolled away from my thigh.

After that, she kneel and kowtow to me as an apology, saying「Sorry, sorry」.

「After all time does not move in this room, so what is the matter.」

「B..but!」

「And your sleeping look is adorable.」

「Yo..you saw it!」

「I enjoyed it thoroughly.」

Blushing, Arisu keeping shouting「Please forget it!」while hitting my head. And I remained sitting.

The reason why I was sitting, is because my legs are so numb that I cannot stand up.

…... After returning to the real world, will my legs no longer be numb?

It should be. Even if you get ample rest in this world, once you return to the real

world you will still be as tired.

So, even if you get injured in this world, once you return to the original place, the wound will heal?

Then, if you use magic in this world?

I have many things that I want to experiment, but these have to be put aside.

We have got to return to the battlefield which we fought with the orcs.

We have to leave this time-stopped room, and return to the vicious world.

「Kazu-senpai, should I raise my Heal Skill Rank?」

Arisu had leveled to level 3. Spear Skill Rank 2, Heal Skill Rank 1.

Using the newly obtained 2 points, although it cannot be used to raise Spear Skill, but it can be used to raise Heal Skill to Rank 2. But……

「No, I feel that saving it is better.」

I said so.

「Just by raising Spear Skill Rank 1 to 2, you can easily defeat the orcs, if you raise it by 1 more Rank, to Rank 3, then you maybe able to deal with the situation of being surrounded by orcs.」

「That is all due to Kazu-senpai's support magic.」

The effect of Support Magic is indeed good, because due to the rise in physical ability, Arisu could obtain the upper hand in fight with the orcs.

Because of this, to continue to maintain such a situation, I feel that she should

raise Spear Skill as a priority. I told my thoughts to her.

「Then I will follow your words.」

Arisu agreed…… No, she agreed to follow my thinking, and sat in front of the computer.

She breathed in deeply.

「Let's return.」

「Okay.」

We are about to return to the battlefield which is like hell. The killings are about to begin again.

Arisu pressed the confirm button.

In the next second, we are back to the lounge of the Cultivating Centre.

The Cultivating Centre is full of an odor that makes one feel like vomiting.

Arisu look another peek at the naked body of the girl who was violated by the orcs before being killed and shook her head, before turning to look at me.

I walked a few steps into the lounge, and surveyed the empty balcony at level 2.

The sounds of rushing footsteps could be heard from level 2, it could be that the orcs on level 2 have discovered that there are intruders.

There are 2 paths linking to level 2 from the lounge, situated at the left and right side of the lounge respectively.

「Arisu, if there are orcs coming from the left side, you will take care of it. I will

think of ways to deal with the right side with the Puppet Golem.」

「Yes!」

It will be bad if we are surrounded by enemies. Arisu and I reached the bottom of the left and right side of the stairs respectively.

Taking a look up, we only saw 2 orcs swaying their fat bodies, on the way down the stairs. But because the stairs are too narrow, hence they can only walk in line.

Good chance. I ordered the Puppet Golem to deal with the orcs, and at the same time ran towards Arisu's direction.

Arisu stood at the left side of the stairs, waiting for the 2 orcs to come down.

「Right side also have 2! We will deal with this side first!」

While saying so, I chanted《Summon Puppet Golem》

The second Puppet Golem appeared behind Arisu.

「《Keen Weapon》,《Physical Up》,《Mighty Arm》」

I used magic to strengthen the Puppet Golem, and signaled to Arisu.

Current MP/ Maximum MP = 7/21

My MP is almost finished. I wished to preserve the MP left, and use them on Support Magic. The battle, can only depend on the current battle strength.

「Arisu!」

「Yes, I am attacking!」

Arisu took a step back, and stood beside the newly summoned Puppet Golem. One of the orcs could not wait and jumped down from the stairs, wielding its sword at Arisu…...

The Puppet Golem took a step forward, and blocked the attack with the shield.

The puppet nearly fell over, but in the end it hung on.

Good, you did great, my puppet. Do your best. I cheered for it while clenching my sweaty fist. All I can do is only cheer.

On the other hand, the orc whose attack was blocked, lost its balance more severely than the Puppet Golem. Arisu striked at it, and the metal spearhead pierced into the orc's belly.

The orc retreated shakily……

The Puppet Golem's rod hitted the orc's head.

The orc fell down, no longer moving.

The other orc seeing this, was in a rage.

It came down from the stairs, wielding its sword and rushing towards Arisu.

Arisu quickly put some distance between the orc, and hid behind the Puppet Golem.

The Puppet Golem's shield once again blocked the orc's attack.

Arisu lowered her body, and using the Puppet Golem's body as an axis, and spinned anti-clockwise.

The orc could not catch her presence for a second.

This battle method was similar to just now how she dealt with the orcs in the lounge. That time she used the body of the orc she just defeated, and now she lowered herself and used the smaller Puppet Golem to block herself.

When the orc saw Arisu again, her spear has already pierced the pig-man's throat who did not have time to protect itself.

Arisu's moves are still as mesmerizing. She uses her brain when fighting—— not just completely relying on Skills, always taking the most appropriate actions to give her foes the fatal blow. Perhaps she has the special combat talent?

Arisu looked at me who was surprised for a second, before running to the right stairs which the 1st Puppet Golem is defending desperately. I quickly tried to catch up to Arisu.

The 2nd Puppet Golem also followed behind me.

Due to Arisu's efforts, the other 2 orcs on the right stairs also quickly died.

I leveled up.

We are sent to the white room.

Ah, seems that after defeating these orcs, the experience was just enough for me to level up to level 4.

Then again, there is nothing much to do, because I cannot rank up Skills, nor is there a need to reorganise strategies.

Arisu and I once again confirmed our action plans in the white room.

「First send the Puppet Golem to scout the rooms on level 1. Then go to level 2,

and search for the remaining orcs.」

Since we cannot predict when the enemy will assault us.

Hence the role of the bait, is done by the Puppet Golems.

Arisu is the main force. If it was a drama, then I will go up to scout first, then say to her「It's up to you sensei.」, then she will leave behind the words「Leave it to me」, then stroll towards the battlefield——

Ah~ But an Arisu who will say「Leave it to me」seems a bit irritating.

「Even if we discovered surviving students, we must also put exterminating the orcs as a priority.」

「Yes.」

「If we meet any situation that we cannot handle, then we must run away without hesitation. Understand?」

「Even if we discovered surviving students……?」

「As long as we are still alive, we can come back. If we die, then nobody can save them.」

「..... I understand.」

Arisu nodded unwillingly.

「Okay, then let's go.」

I pressed the confirm button.

So we returned to the lounge of the Cultivating Centre once again.

First we search every classroom on level 1, in the end we did not see any signs of orcs.

In this period, orcs on level 2 walked down the stairs.

But, they are quickly dealt with by Arisu.

The orcs that came from level 2, amounted to 3.

「It should be okay. Let's head up.」

I let the Puppet Golem walk in front, and carefully walked up to level 2.

It was silent around the vicinity at the level 2 balcony.

「.....There shouldn't be any orcs here.」

I walked a few steps in the corridor without any suspicions.

Just as I was about to walk past an intersection, I carelessly thought that there was nothing, and just glance there.

「Danger, Kazu-senpai.」

Hearing Arisu's screams, I turned my head to look again.

An orc happened to show itself at the end of the corridor, and threw an axe at me at the same time.

Shit.

I could not react all of a sudden, my body was frozen. It is just like when crossing a road intersection, then seeing a car suddenly rushing out, then you will freeze

on the spot.

This is a human reflex. It is said in the army, the soldiers will keep training, get the habit, and completely removing this sort of reflex that is not beneficial to survival.

Of course, I am not a soldier. If you insist, I am just a high school student who is not apt at sports.

The axe that the orc threw, is about to hit my head.

In my eyes, all of these seems like slow motion.

Suddenly, my body fell to the side. When I discovered it was actually Arisu who rushed over and push me down, I have already fallen onto the ground.

A painful groan was heard from the girl who tried to suppress the pain. I raised my head, only seeing Arisu pressing against her shoulder that is full of blood. It could be that the axe grazed it.

The orc rushed over. I quickly ordered the 2 Puppet Golems to intercept.

Arisu also immediately raised her spear, heading to support.

The orc was immediately wounded fatally.

Arisu leveled up.

In the white room.

「Why do you save me, Arisu?」

「What do you mean by why……」

Arisu had a face of confusion while looking at me.

That is true, being questioned by someone whom you saved, anyone would think 「What is wrong with this fellow」.

「In my heart, the thought of『I have got to save him』appeared, then my body automatically rushed out.」

「Because of this thought, you almost died…… No, sorry, you saved me, how could I say this. I was too much, please forget those words.」

「Yes, yes.」

I took a deep breath. Just what am I angry about? Why am I so angry with Arisu?

Perhaps it is because Arisu saved me with a selfless heart.

Defeating this orc, the clean-up battle of the Cultivating Centre should be almost done.

To her, even without me, she should be able to deal with it alone.

But yet she stepped out, and saved me. In the viewpoint of profit and loss, this is a complete loss.

But, why can she do such a self-sacrificing move?

I clearly know what is the answer.

Because her act of saving me, is not based on profit or loss or a result from logical thinking.

I had suspected her. I had thought of it before, if she is actually lying to me, and even those blur looks were all just an act. If each of her moves has an objective

behind it?

It is really stupid. She had decided to save me from the start, because she is such a person.

I suddenly felt that I am very despicable. No, actually, I am a despicable, filthy and cowardly person. I had just decided that no matter what I will survive.

Even so, looking at Arisu, I…...

「What is wrong?」

My sight accidentally crossed with a girl whose face was full of doubts.

A sharp pain came from my chest. Not knowing why, I silently looked away.

I quickly find an excuse, and answered Arisu who had a doubting look.

「If everything is fine then it is good.」

「……Hmm, I am fine.」

The wound on Arisu's shoulder, can be healed with《Heal》, but now there should not be a need to raise the Rank of Healing Magic.

Hence, Arisu raised her Spear Skill to Rank 3. With this, she does not need me even more.

It should be like this.

Arisu: Level 4 Spear Skill 2→3／Healing Magic 1 Skill Point 4→1

Chapter 13: Survivors

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 13

Translator: Avert

Editor: Avert

Chapter 13: Survivors

Arisu and I have both leveled to level 4. First we used magic to heal Arisu's wound.

Arisu used magic 3 time to heal the wound on her shoulder.

We maintained high alert at the surroundings again, and investigated the classrooms on level 2. A unique stench came out from a classroom with its door opened.

That is a stench mixed with orc's body odor and semen.

I made Arisu who is slightly hesitate wait at the door, and went in alone to scout the interior of the classroom.

There are 3 completely naked girls on the floor, covered in a viscous white fluid. Among them, one of their hands shook, and the eyes among her messy bangs began to open as though she felt that it is troublesome.

「Alive! There is still one more person who is alive!」

Hearing my voice, Arisu rushed into the room. She ran over to the surviving girl and carried her up. After confirming that the other party still have a response,

she then relaxed from the bottom of her heart.

When Arisu parted the girl's hair, then I realised…

「You are… Shiki-san?」

「Gaya…san?」

Shiki Yukariko. She is my classmate, and also the vice-chairman of our class.

The feelings that I had towards most of the people in the High School section, if I were to say it nicely, it would be「All of you should go and die, bastards」.

The feelings I had for her is the same. Until now.

She did not participate in bullying me, but she did after all leave me in the lurch.

In reality, anyone who goes again that fellow, no matter who, will have the same result as me. From this point of view, she is a person of reason. She just calmly avoided the mine with her cold look.

Saying so, this cannot become the reason why I did not hate her.

「I see. So Gaya-san saved me.」

「You should be thanking Arisu, she was the one who wanted to come and save the people, moreover...」

「Wait, Kazu-senpai!」

Arisu stared at me harshly.

「Pl..please get out!」

「Ah, that's right.」

Perhaps I am already immune to such a miserable scene.

Although it is already too late, but I still shifted my sight away from the naked body of my classmate quickly. Ah, her breasts are big. So she just seems skinny from her usual clothes—— I am actually thinking about such stupid stuff.

「I will check out the other classrooms.」

After leaving these words, I turned around and left quickly.

当时我有看了一眼教室外的门牌，上面写著「茶道社休息室」。
That time I did look at the label outside the classroom. it wrote「Tea Ceremony Society Resting Room」.

So she is from the Tea Ceremony Society. I remembered Arisu saying that, other than them, today the people from the Tea Ceremony Society are also conducting club activities. Perhaps because there aren't any tatami rooms that the Tea Ceremony can use in the High School Section, so they have to go over to the Middle School Section for their activities every time.

Then, the 2 other bodies on the side, should also be members of the Tea Ceremony Society. But knowing this now, didn't have much meaning…

I remembered the lesson from just now, and let my bodyguards, the Puppet Golems take the vanguard and began scouting.

I discovered 2 corpses belonging to 2 guys in the Middle School in another classroom. Their heads have been splitted open by swords, and their shoes are covered in mud, seemingly escaping from the outside into the Cultivating Centre. I believe the situation at that time was very urgent, if not they would not have ran into this place where there is nowhere to escape to.

One of them seems to be preparing to open the window, his hand is still on the window's lock. I opened the window, fulfilling his last wish. Fresh, but slightly chilly wind blew in.

It seems to be night soon, we have to hurry up and finished what we needed to do before night falls.

I went past the level 2 balcony, and circled around to the opposite of the classroom where Arisu and the others are at.

One of the doors is tightly shutted, and the stairs to the 3rd story, should be behind this door.

I tried twist the doorknob, the door seems to be locked.

「The information that Arisu provided is indeed correct.」

I mumbled to myself, and this moment I discovered that there are sounds on the other side of the door.

「Oi, is there anyone?」

I began to think panically.

Is it the orcs? No, it can't be. If it's the orcs, then after opening the door they would not doing such a troublesome thing like closing the door.

Then...

「Are you survivors? The orcs over this side have all been defeated, it is already safe.」

「Really...」

A scared female voice came over from the other side of the door. I skipped the process, only saying「A lot of things happened, so me and a girl called Arisu came over here to save people」.

「Arisu!」

The girl behind the other side of the door suddenly shrieked.

「Is Arisu safe?」

「Yes, she is currently opposite helping people who are injured…」

Then again, Arisu wanted to find her friend, that is why she remembered this place.

Although why she who is willing to be bait and protect Arisu, is behind this door...

「You are… Tamaki-san?」

「Yes, I am! Thank goodness, Arisu is fine!」

The door knob is twisted with kaching kaching, but it does not open. I took the moment to order the Puppet Golem to hide, because I am too lazy to explain, and in case it made her scared, which is a troublesome thing.

「Aa— mo— Ei—tsu, Ei—tsu!」(TL note: sounds of putting in alot of effort at opening)

I thought, just by using brute force is not enough to open the door.

The girl behind the door panickedly twisted the knob, and finally opened the

lock.

The door opened suddenly.

A young girl with golden twin tails rushed towards me.

Her head rammed my stomach, and I groaned in pain like a frog being stepped on.

「Ah, so..sorry!」

The girl raised her head, and panickedly looked at me who is squatting on the ground in pain

Her size is almost the same as Arisu, but the peaks in front of her chest seems to be slightly smaller than Arisu.

She has a pair of blue eyes that seems like the deep oceans, and a high nose, and snow-white skin.

She looks like an westerner. Ah—— Golden hair, blue eyes? She does not seem to be Japanese.

I felt confused.

「You are… Tamaki-san?」

「Hmm, yes. You are curious about my appearance? Mesmerised? I am adopted.」

Adopted. She must have gone through a lot. It seems like I shouldn’t ask too much.

「And, you can call me by my name directly! Arisu’s friend is my friend!」

I had initially wanted to say that「I don’t think I am already friends with Arisu」, but saying it halfway, I shrugged my shoulders. Forget it, after all Arisu and I are just partners who have similar aims. No, I should say we are once partners...

As long as she saved her good friend, then Arisu will have no more reason to fight.

I introduced myself, and told her that she can call me「Kazu」.

「Arisu also called me like that.」

「I understand, Kazu-senpai!」

Tamaki said「Please take care of me」, while revealing a cheerful smile, and her twin tails swung like the ropes of a swing.

Ah, she is just like a sun, I thought so in my heart. My meaning is that she is so bright that one had to look away.

「Ah, then Arisu?」

「She is there...」

I pointed to the other side.

「But, can you wait for a while?」

「Why?」

「That… She is treating someone who is injured...」

Hearing the words「someone who is injured」, Tamaki seems to have understood the meaning of these words. The colour of her face sunk.

This is also expected. She has been waiting on the other side of this door, what had happened on level 2, she should have known. Even so, she held her breath and quietly hid here.

This is an extremely smart action. But being smart and peace in the mind is not equivalent. I believe to her, it must have been a torturous time.

「Ah, right. I have to inform the others.」

「Others? There are still other survivors upstairs?」

「Yes, we are all hiding together.」

I see, then...

Just as Tamaki turned, and was preparing to go and inform the others——

A roar shook the entire building of the Cultivating Centre.

Hearing that roar from the lounge, Tamaki accidentally tripped, falling on the ground heavily. (TL note: fan service time~)

Ah, her panties is showing, and it is black. Against the school rules.

No, this is not important.

I noticed one thing. The roar—— is a challenge from the enemy. My instincts tells me that.

「Tamaki, you must close the door now. Then hide.」

I deliberately used a strong tone to say it.

「Eh~ eh~ But——」

「Arisu and I will think of some methods. Until you get my permission, do not open the door.」

「I..I understand!」

Turning my back towards Tamaki, then sounds of her panickedly closing the door is heard.

I took the Puppet Golem that was hidden in order not to scare the survivors, and ran to the balcony on level 2.

Next I saw Arisu also rushing out from the classroom opposite of the balcony.

I crossed eyes with her, and we nodded.

I looked out from the balcony.

And just nice I crossed eyes with the orc that looked up.

Its evil red piercing eyes that seems be locked on me.

That is an orc with a bronze coloured skin. In its hands is a giant axe that is higher than it, and it is bigger than the other orcs beside it by another size.

Elite orc can simply be used to describe it—— I thought so in my heart.

We cannot defeat it —— I had judged at that moment. That is a special orc.

It is possible that it is the leader of the orcs, and in its surroundings there are still 6 more ordinary orcs. Currently Arisu and I simply cannot handle an opponent with such a strong combat strength.

Under the instructions of the elite orc, the ordinary orcs stepped onto the stairs.

Each flight of stairs has 2, a total of 4 orcs. I quickly ordered the 2 Puppet Golems to stay at the stairs, preparing for battle.

While Arisu held the spear, and waited at the other stairs.

The battles at the 2 stairs are about to start.

Because the stairs are very narrow, hence the Puppet Golem can fight with the orc in a 2 on 1 manner. If it is just 1 Puppet Golem, even if Support magic is cast on it, its battle prowess will still lose to the orc. But if it is like this, 2 on 1, then they can have the advantage in battle.

The injuries of the orc in front it getting worse, but the orc standing at the back has no method of advancing, hence completely useless. Arisu stood at an advantageous location where she could attack from the top, and hence she dealt with the 2 orcs in an instant.

Following the flow, she ran down.

...Wait, wait!

「No, Arisu! Not now…」

I was slower by a beat, Arisu had only gone halfway, the bronze orc used the axe to hack down the support of the stairs. The entire building shook vigorously, and I had to quickly grab onto the railings.

Such shocking power.

The stairs that Arisu was on, collapsed. Arisu shriek, and lost her balance, rolling to level 1. Luckily the 2 orcs that ran toward Arisu also fall to the ground due to the collapsing of the stairs, so I guess it can be considered a good thing among

the misfortune.

When Arisu fall on to the ground, she landed on her back, or perhap the impacted place did not affect her much, and she stood up immediately. But the stairs besides her has been completely destroyed.

The bronze elite orc who has overwhelming destructive power stood in front of Arisu.

「Ah, ah, ahah…」

Scared, Arisu held the spear and kept retreating

Elite orc used its axe to strike at her.

Arisu retreated in panic, and luckily under the assistance of support magic, her body is very light, and hence avoided that strike, but...

Just from the air pressure, it managed to blow her frail body away.

Arisu was slammed against the wall.

Elite orc had wanted to continue attacking, but Arisu is on the ground, groaning, seemingly unable to move.

「Arisu, roll to the side!」

Arisu heard my instructions and rolled, avoiding the attack from the giant axe.

The giant axe smashed the floor, scattering cement everywhere.

Not good, not good, not good. What is with this fellow, he is completely different from the other orcs.

The level of the opponent has risen too much. What kind of lousy game is this.

There is only 1 point that is advantageous to us, and that is that Arisu who had just stood up, is facing the main door of the lounge, which is the exit.

Now she is able to escape. I looked at the side of the classroom, the window that was opened to ventilate the room was still opened, if there is only 1 person then he should be able to get through it.

「Arisu! I will send the Puppet Golem to deal with that side, take the chance and escape!」

「Eh~ But——」

「I will jump out from the window! As long as we are still alive, we can return to save them!」

Shiki Yukariko should still be in that room. Then, what we are doing is equivalent to ignoring her when she had thought that she is finally safe. But, who can care that much.

The most important thing is that Arisu and I must survive.

Luckily, Tamaki has already locked the door, and hid in level 3. If she is lucky, she will not be discovered. And Arisu will not know that Tamaki is still alive.

If she knew, perhaps it will be hard to convince her, so as long as she is in the dark...

At this moment, the 2 Puppet Golems managed to defeat 1 orc with much difficulty, and I called the one that has lighter injuries to my side, and let it jump down.

The Puppet Golem stepped on the defenseless orcs on level 1, and attacked the

elite orc.

Although I could only buy a little time. But, that is enough, the most important thing is that it gave Arisu and I enough time to escape.

「Escape, NOW! Gather at the usual place!」

I shouted towards the balcony, and ran towards the classroom beside.

I forcefully squeezed my body through the window.

And jumped down.

I landed from the 2nd story, and the impact from landing numbed my legs completely. I groaned in pain.

My ankles could be twisted, but if my movements are too slow, I could be caught up by the enemies.

I furrowed my eyebrows, and ran towards the forests, dragging along my legs which are in pain.
A opening trumpet music rang in my ears.

「You leveled up!」

I heard a neutral voice saying so, and was immediately transferred to the white room.

「Ah… Huh?」

I could not understand the situation this instant, and could only stand there blankly.

If it is abouting leveling, I remember there is still…yes, as long as all the orcs

other than the leader are defeated, it will just nice be enough for me to level up.

But Arisu should have already escaped. She should not have time to defeat the orcs.

Arisu appeared before me.

She is covered with wounds, there are scratches on her hands and legs and she is bleeding everywhere. She used her hands to press on her flank, only seeing her shirt around that area slowly turning red.

Arisu raised her head and looked at me, revealing an unnatural smile.

「I did not successfully escape. I lied, sorry.」

Arisu laughed powerlessly while saying so.

Chapter 14: The reason why Arisu and I failed

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 14

Chapter 14: The reason why Arisu and I failed

I stared at Arisu dumbly.

Why can't she escape in time? What shall we do next—— I thought.

「It is not Kazu-senpai's fault.」

Arisu shook her head, attempt to comfort me who had stiffened up. While using magic to heal the injury on her flank, she used the other hand to scratch the back of her head. Even if she use magic now, once she leave this room, everything will reveal back.But yet she still used magic, this means that the pain from the wound must have been unbearable for her.

「Once I thought about if we just left Shiki-senpai like that, what if… then my legs just stopped.」

This sort of thinking is not logical—— My numbed brain thought so. Shiki Yukariko is not even Arisu's friend, she just happened to be in the same building only.

Before this, they probably have not spoken before?

Arisu should not have any obligation that she must save her?

For me it is the same. She had once left me in the lurch, even though she knew I suffered bullying in the class, but yet she pretended to not have seen it.

What is wrong with abandoning such a person? This is only karma that she

deserved, isn't it? Now an unbeatable enemy has appeared before us, escaping immediately is the most correct choice.

It should be, we can only choose to escape.

No.

I suddenly realise, I should stand in her shoes and think.

From Arisu's view, Shiki Yukariko is my classmate. Arisu perhaps thought that she is my friend, or someone who is important to me.

I have always hid my feelings toward Shiki from Arisu, and that is the result of me trying to maintain a good image in front of Arisu.

I don't wish to let Arisu know about my ugly heart. I do not want her to know how miserable I am.

In the end, Arisu…

She just slightly hesitated. And in that instant, it changed her fate.

「It's my fault.」

Arisu said while laughing at herself.

「That time I thought… At least I can save 1 person. But… before saving Tamaki, I shouldn't die.」

「Tamaki-san… is hiding on level 3. She is fine. She should have already closed the door again, and hiding properly inside.」

「I see… That's great, then I am relieved.」

Arisu laughed with a「hehe」.

「Relieved… What does that mean?」

「Ah, right, right. Sorry, Kazu-senpai… I will leave Tamaki to you, please save her. This is my… last wish.」

「What is this last wish… What is going on!」

「I feel that I could not be saved anymore. I have defeated all the leftover ordinary orcs, but now the orc leader is blocking the door… With my injured state, it should be impossible for me to escape.」

How could you still smile? I bit my lip tightly.

Why do you look at me with a shy look? I clutched my fist tightly.

You are about to die. And it will definitely be the worst and most painful way for a girl to die.

「Sorry, Kazu-senpai. The reason you shared your experience points with me, is because you feel that I can be of help, right?」

「Ah… yes.」

「In the end I did not help much, and just took away Kazu-senpai’s experience meaninglessly.」

There is no such thing, how could you not be of any help. Fighting with you is definitely not a waste of experience.

And, the most important thing is…

I walked towards Arisu, and tightly hugged her slender body without any care.

「Don’t say such things.」

「But——」

This moment, the instant that I know that I am going to lose her.

I felt a pain in my chest, a pain as though it is tearing me apart.

I only felt a strong intense feeling surging out from my heart. I want to hug her. I have a desire, to hold her tightly, making her mine. But she is about to disappear into a place that I can never reach, making me feel despair.

「So painful.」

Arisu rejected weakly.

I placed my face on Arisu’s cheeks.

Her face is wet, the tears that came out has wettened her cheeks.

「I don’t want.」

Arisu whispered.

「I don’t want to die. I do not want to be violated by that sort of creature and then killed.」

She said breathlessly.

「I am so stupid. Kazu-senpai has already found Tamaki for me, but I… What am I doing.」

I could not say anything, I could only hug Arisu tightly.

「I wish to be like this forever, Kazu-senpai, finally, hugging me like this. But we are about to be separated, I don't want that.」

「Arisu, you...」

I moved my body slightly back, and looked at Arisu. Her face is covered in tears, looking very awful. This awful-looking girl opened her lips, and lightly said「I love you」.

I pressed my lips onto her pink lips. We kissed very lousy, our teeth even knocked onto each other.

But, Arisu desperately sucked at my lips. Our tongues entangled, and our saliva mixed together. We forgot that we are sucking on each other's lips. Holding our breaths, continuously kissing, until the very last limit.

This is probably like the suspension bridge effect. Being in an intense situation for a long period of time, and the only person that she can rely on is me, and it is also the same for me. In this whatever another world, whatever orc, a situation where one could go mad, it is because of her, that I could remain sane.

So what. Now I desperately wanted her.

Even if it's an impulse, her passionate confession, the value of it will not decrease.

Our lips separated, and there is a still a strand of saliva between us.

I stared at the blushing Arisu. This girl in front of me, crying until her eyes are swollen and wounded everywhere.

我决定了
I have decided.

I set my determination, I wanted to protect, I must protect her until the last moment. This risk is nothing. The me of now, has found the target that I want to protect.

「Arisu.」

「Ye..yes!」

「I want to protect you.」

Arisu stared at me dumbfounded.

This sort of blur act is very adorable, I could not help but feel my heart beat faster.

I want to hug her again, but, there is no need to do it now. After I successfully saved her, I can hug her to my heart-content.

「I have already decided, I am going to go save you. So you must win for me.」

「Huh~ wh..what?」

「Now I will start to think about the strategy. I know the method that I thought of will be ridiculous, but even so, you must still win.」

「.....huh.」

「If you did not win, then you and I shall die together.」

「How can this be! How can I drag Kazu-senpai into this...」

「If you do not want that, then listen to my orders and move, then obtain victory.」

Arisu stared at me without blinking, but that is only for a short period. She quickly showed a suspecting look, as though saying「What the heck is this guy saying」.

She pouted with a「Mu——」.

Finally, she realised my expression is serious, and sighed.

「It's all my fault, there is no need for Kazu-senpai to clean up my mess.」

「There is, because I like you.」

「Ah~ Hmm, this~」

Arisu blushed, and looked at me with her big eyes…

Then, she smiled hesitantly.

「...Yes.」

「There is no way to control liking someone. I want you, and I don't want to hand you over to orcs, those kind of creatures. So I have decided now, that I will gamble my own life. Do you have an opinion on that!」

「Wh..why are you getting angry due to being embarrassed! Please calm down!」

「The girl that I like is about to be violated, who can calm down!」

「Wah, please don't say out such words so loudly!」

Arisu danced around panicky. Hahaha, that is so stupid. There is only 2 of us here.

「To be honest, I want to push you down here.」

「Wah, wah ah.」

「But I will not do that, doing this does not satisfy even 0.001%. I shall preserve the unsatisfied feeling to go and save you.」

「...Somehow this doesn't feel romantic.」

Arisu rolled her eyes at me. The Arisu that uses such a look at look at me, is extremely adorable.

「You don't wish to be pushed down by me?」

「It is not that I don't want, but please take note of your words!」

Arisu began to shout unlike her usual self, and then she realise the hidden meaning behind her words. And then she began shouting「Ah」, fanatically.

「Er,, this, th..that, ah~」

「Anyway, I will go and save you! So before I get there, you must survive! Understand?」

「Ah—— well, I understand… I will do my best. But to be honest, it is hard.」

「Just let me think of the method.」

Arisu gave an exasperated expression.

At this moment, I suddenly understood why some coaches like to focus on

「Perseverance」. Because when there is already nothing we can do, so we can only depend on perseverance.

I sat in front of the laptop and thought. Is there any way? Now what can I do? What are the possibilities? All the answers lies within the computer.

The current abilities are...

Kazuhisa: Level 5 Support Magic 2/ Summon Magic 2 Skill Points 4

I can rank up all of my skills that I have, if I wish to get a new skill, I can also raise it to Rank 2.

Though it maybe so...

That bronze-skinned orc—— elite orc, is an enemy that is completely different from any of the orcs that we have met. Its body is very big, and it has the strength to destroy the stairs and support. Other than that, from how it blocked Arisu's way, its brain should also be pretty decent.

It is an opponent that Arisu, with Spear Skill Rank 3, cannot handle.

The truth is that when Arisu's Skill Rank increase, her combat ability increase tremendously. If you considered that orc's size, perhaps their rank does not have that much of a difference.

Hmm, at least just now the Puppet Golem managed to hold it off a while, so I guess it should not be that strong until we cannot handle it.

The biggest problem is, because we suffered a surprise attack, hence we are completely unprepared.

The next problem is, due to the continuous battles, our abilities diminished very fast. Especially my MP, it is almost finished.

...How much did my MP recover? Just now we check the level 1 classroom and level 2. The whole process took about 10minutes. So as to say, my MP is probably around 11 or 12?

Now there is no room for mistakes. Just to be safe, I will take it that MP is 11.

If I summon 1 Puppet Golem, then MP is left 7.

Yes, its severe. Very severe.

I can feel that, the 2 Puppet Golem that I summoned previously, has already been destroyed by the enemy. Because the link between us are broken.

The only familiar left that I can control is the crow. But in this situation, will the crow be of use?

Perhaps it can take away the elite orc's attention for a few seconds. In such a situation, just a few second it will be very precious. If so, then I will order the crow to do its best.

Other than that—— I continued to think.

Which Skill should I rank up? Or perhaps, which new skill should I get? In this case, there is no need for me to consider about the future. Even if it is a skill that there is no chance to use in the future, it is fine. I should also protect Arisu until this extent.

I began to enter questions related to skills in the laptop. I can feel the sights of Arisu on my back. That is a feel mixed with anticipation and unease.

Among them, includes feelings of「it is indeed too much to ask for」, and the small hope of「perhaps he can really find the solution」.

I felt a tremendous pressure on me. To decrease this pressure, I could only continue to ask question...

Finally——

「Found it.」

I lightly said.

I found a chance for survival. A really small chance.

But, if we use this method...

Perhaps we can win.

Perhaps both Arisu and I can survive.

I turned toward Arisu, and explained to her the battle plan.

「Everything is based on the timing.」

「But, what if we failed...」

「Then we will both die.」

Arisu swallowed her saliva, and clutched her fist. Now it is her who is feeling the pressure.

「I am scared.」

「I am more scared of losing you, Arisu.」

「Ye..yes.」

「We must obtain victory.」

「...Yes!」

That's right, this reply is good. Arisu nodded strongly, and hence I chose my skill.

I pressed the confirm button that determines our fate.

Arisu and I returned to our original place at the same time.

... The battlefield where we will fight to the end.

Kazuhisa: Level 5 Support Magic 2→3/ Summon Magic 2 Skill Points 4→1

I returned to the back of the Cultivating Centre.

Just 1 second before I am about to dash into the woods.

I looked back, and saw the sunset dyeing the entire building orange. Until just now, I was worried that the orcs may come chasing, but now I know this thing will not happen.

Because Arisu has already killed all the ordinary orcs.

Because she has stopped, blocking the front, protecting me.

The crow familiar flew over, and landed on my shoulder. I brought the only creature that I can summon and ran. Going around the Cultivating Centre, and back to the main door. As fast as possible. I ran with all my strength.

「《Physical Up》」

I cast another magic to increase my speed. My support magic is now Rank 3, theoretically my speed should be slightly faster than just now.

Now, no matter how small the difference, it is important.

I ran forward. The ankle that I twisted was in much pain. But, heck it. All I wanted to do, is to move forward.

This moment, Arisu is fighting against a strong opponent alone. She challenged the high wall of despair courageously, and at the same time waited for my reinforcement.

I want to save her. I want to hold her tightly again.

I prayed sincerely.

No, not pray.

We must win.

Using these hands, these legs, using all the skills that we obtained, the power of Arisu and I.

I turned at the bend, although I am slightly dizzy, but I maintained the same speed and ran.

I heard the clashing of swords, that is the sound of the intense fight between Arisu and the elite orc.

She is fighting, Arisu is still working hard. This gave me unlimited courage.

I used all my strength, and ran past the corner.

The opened main door came to view.

I used all my remaining strength and ran to the door.

And looked inside.

Arisu just dodged the blow from giant axe of the elite orc, losing her balance. At this state, she cannot avoid the next blow.

「Arisu!」

Arisu at the position where she is about to fall, turned and looked at me, her expression has obviously became brighter.

I sent the crow familiar towards them.

I ordered the crow to attack the elite orc's face, although it can only restrain it, but as long as it gains us a few seconds of precious time.

Indeed, the elite orc swung its hand, annoyed, and chasing the crow that interrupted the battle. The body of the crow was smashed to the side, onto the wall.

I felt the link broke, the blow from the elite orc had defeated the crow.

But that is fine.

「《Summon Puppet Golem》」

I summoned the Puppet Golem and sent it to attack the elite orc. This is also another restrainment. I ran behind the Puppet Golem, slowly approaching the big body of the elite orc. The strong intense aura made one feel like stopping, and running away.

I desperately suppressed my emotion of fear, and focused my sight on Arisu who has fallen on the ground. My sights met with Arisu's, and her happy expression fills my heart with courage.

This moment, I feel that even if I face off against 100 elite orcs, I would not be afraid.

The Puppet Golem courageously attack the elite orc, and the elite orc used its chest to block the weak attack by the pole of the Puppet Golem, completely undaunted.

After all I did not use any support magic on the Puppet Golem, and it seems that just based on the original strength of the Puppet Golem is not enough.

But I had decided to let it be sacrificed, so there is no choice…

Thanks to this piece, we gain the precious few seconds.

I reached Arisu, and placed my hand on her weak shoulder.

「《Haste》」

Arisu's body began to glow in a golden light. She was shocked, and looked at her hands and legs.

She is covered with wounds, and her clothes are tattered, her skirt was nearly all gone, and her panties was completely exposed.

But, now her body is full of energy. That power is given by me to her.

「You can do it.」

「Yes!」

Arisu nodded, and stood up quickly. In this instant, the elite orc used the axe and chopped down on the Puppet Golem's head, smashing it into smitterting.

The bronze-skinned elite orc turn over here. It looked at Arisu and me, revealing its teeth evilly, with a grin.

Arisu and I stared at this creature, and smile cruelly together.

「Battle normally at first, and wait for my signal, is it okay?」

「Okay!」

There is no need for any detailed discussion, because we have already did it in the white room.

Arisu held the spear, kicked off from the ground, rushing at the elite orc.

The elite orc stood its ground, waiting for Arisu. It raised its giant axe, probably thinking of giving Arisu a strike from the top.

This fellow no longer has any intentions of violating Arisu. As for this, I have many thoughts on it, on one hand I am relieved, but on the other hand I felt that it's a pity, since it would not be unprepared...

Arisu is my woman, how can I hand it to this creature who is all brawn.

The elite orc did not dodge the strike from the metal spear in Arisu's hands.

No, it should be unable to dodge. Because Arisu's attack is much faster than the elite orc had expected.

That is the effect brought by my magic.

After I raised Support Magic to Rank 3, I obtained a new magic——《Haste》. Unlike《Physical Up》,《Haste》 can also make the target's entire movement faster, not only striking speed, even the movement speed will be faster.

Adding to the fact that Arisu raised her Spear Skill to Rank 3, hence she can demonstrate a strong attack that is close to Rank 4.

The spear stabbed deeply into the elite orc's chest, and blue blood sprayed.

Arisu quickly leave elite orc's side, and using movements that are more nimble than just now, she dodged the crazy counterattacks from the elite orc.

The furious orc swung its giant axe with big movements, chasing after Arisu. But Arisu used calm steps to dodge, and then stabbed again. This time the orc's blue blood sprayed out from its left shoulder.

Good, this is good, it seems to be going well. Until now it is all within the plans.

Well, when I was investigating Rank 3 Support Magic, I have already known that it will have such effects.

Then is the problem, even with using《Haste》to make Arisu's movement faster, the power that Arisu have now is still not enough. This level of attack, is not enough to deal a fatal blow.

Now Arisu is already very tired. She is covered in wounds and her abdomen is still bleeding. These wounds are taking away her strength every minute and second. It is possible that she will be the first to fall in the end.

But, I will not let such a thing happen. Although it is an elite orc, but its body structure is still the same as an ordinary orc.

Hence, their weakness must be the same.

That is the throat, as long as we pierce through its throat, it will be fine.

Arisu has already used this tactic to defeat many orcs, hence she must also know.

But she deliberately did not attack its weakness. If our strategy is discovered by the enemy, then the elite orc which used brute force to win will be alerted. If the opponent chose to use delaying tactics, then we will not have any chance at victory. Hence, she believed in me, and focused her attacks at the orc's abdomen, shoulders and legs, waiting for my instructions.

Slowly, Arisu began to show signs of tiredness. Because she is too tired, her legs seem to be no longer listening to her. The elite orc did not miss this chance, and swung its giant axe, and Arisu rolled to the side, barely dodging it. The elite orc stepped strongly on the ground, although Arisu used the spear to restrict its legs, but it still rushed over ignoring it.

Damn, I have this urge to show the trump card now.

But no. If I used the trump care now, then we will no longer have any chance at winning. From the result, I will not be able to protect Arisu.

Hence now I must endure, I must believe in Arisu. Please, Arisu!

I don't know if my prayers are answered, I saw Arisu dodge the blow from the giant axe, and rolled to the bow, and stood up.

Arisu first opened the distance, but the elite orc still rushed at her.

Arisu looked at me.

I nodded, that is now. Only now.

「Go!」

「Yes.」

Arisu also rushed toward the elite orc. Under the assistance of《Haste》, her

moves are very sharp, as though she is an arrow.

The elite orc stopped, and swung the axe. From this situation, her head will be split opened by that giant axe. But Arisu ran forward without fear.

The elite orc gave an evil smile, as though victory is in its hands.

At that instant——

「《Reflection》」

I cast the magic.

This sort of magic that does not require touching the target, is very rare in Support Magic.

It is a magic that is only effective to the companions near the caster.

This is a new magic that I learnt after raising it to Rank 3. The effect is...

A piece of rainbow-colour membrane appeared before Arisu.

The strike from the elite orc landed on the membrane...

The attack power is reflected back in 180 degree, the elite orc with shocking strength is pushed back. In this moment, it is in a completely defenseless state.

Arisu did not miss this chance, even if the giant axe is near her, she did not hesitate. She believed in me, until the very last moment.

Now, the girl used a impressive stance and strike out the spear.

The metal spear pierced deeply into the elite orc’s throat.

Fresh blue blood poured out like a waterfall.

That is a blow that she put all her strength into. The spearhead of the spear pierced the bone and flesh of the elite orc. and then exited out from the back of the neck. The skill system maybe like a game, but what is happening is definitely not a game. No matter human or monster, they are equal, as long as they are fatally wounded, they will die.

This is the truth that Arisu have proven a few times until now.

Hence, even though the elite orc has an overwhelming advantage, but under this blow, its life ended.

The elite orc gave out a dying cry, and it’s huge body collapse, gradually disappearing.

「Ah.」

Arisu whispered.

「Level up…」

The next second, Arisu and I are sent to the white room.

Chapter 15: Testing all sorts of magic in the White Room

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 15

Chapter 15: Testing all sorts of magic in the White Room

Our chances of winning in this battle with the elite orc is extremely low.

Even so, I decided to gamble. Because I want to save Arisu.

I have always thought that not trusting anyone is the correct choice. I have always been afraid that after trusting someone, I will be betrayed.

But compared to those fears, I was more afraid of witnessing her being violated by that sort of creature.

That is a foolhardy, illogical action, but I don't regret it.

Then I succeeded. I saved Arisu.

I am so, so happy, until I couldn't help it, hence once we are sent to the white room, I dashed to Arisu, and hugged her slender body tightly.

「Wah wah wah~ Kazu-senpai...」

Arisu gave out a「Hyaa」weird scream.

I moved back slightly, wanting to look at Arisu's face.

Arisu looked at me, blushing.

「Great. Everything proceeded as planned, that is really good.」

「Yo..you mean that, this plan is anyhow thought up?」

Arisu rolled her eyes.

「To be honest, I feel that the percentage of success is less than 3%. Everything depends on your trust in me.」

「Then, of course we will win.」

Arisu beamed.

「Because I have always felt that I am very fortunate for I believed in Kazu-senpai.」

「You… Why do you trust me so much?」

「Because Kazu-senpai has never betrayed my expectations.」

That is because you are useful to me.

I swallowed this sentence back. Because I know that, that has already become a sort of lie, to bluff myself.

Perhaps it was true in the beginning. Or perhaps it is really true. But, the reason why I saved her now is not only that.

Arisu used her moist-looking eyes and looked at me. Then she determinedly and slowly said:

「Please let me say this once. Kazu-senpai, I like you.」

I used a kiss to reply.

Arisu putted her hands around my neck, and replied me passionately.

We released each other, and I looked at Arisu again.

My partner then sat on the ground powerlessly, grinning sillily while looking at me.

「I relaxed.」

Taking a closer look, she seems even more disheveled than just now.

Not only is there a big hole on her blouse, revealing her breasts, her skirt can also only be described as tattered cloth. There are all sorts of tears on her clothes, revealing her tender skin. Other than that, her body is covered with wounds, her skin of her hands and legs are torn, oozing out blood.

I accompanied Arisu, and sat in front of her.

「It's okay… yeah right. Look at you.」

To reduce my unease, Arisu smiled. Is my expression really that worried? Perhaps it is really so.

「After all once I used healing magic, I can heal all these wounds in an instant.」

While saying so, Arisu cast《Heal》on her hands and legs. Surrounded by the blue light, Arisu's wounds gradually healed. After she used about 15 times of《Heal》. the wounds on her body are completely healed.

「With this it will be fine.」

「But, even if you healed your wounds in this room, once you return to the real world, you will once again be in the wounded state.」

「Well… That's true.」

Ah, forget it. We need to discuss our next plans, and more importantly, decide how to develop Arisu's skills.

That's right. The reason why we are in this room, is because Arisu leveled up.

The last time I leveled, was before fighting against the elite orc. The difference in experience between me and Arisu is 2 orcs' worth.

We are a 2-person party, hence the obtained experience will also be equally split. So as to say, the experience of an elite orc is worth at least 4 orcs.

No, thinking about its destructive power, defeating 4 orcs will be easier than defeating it.

Honestly speaking, I even felt that it is stronger than 10 orcs. To make it clearer, I do not even want to fight against that that sort of monster again.

Currently Arisu is level 5, Spear Skill Rank 3, Healing Magic Rank 1. There is still 3 points left in her skill points. Through Arisu's example, we have already confirmed when the rank of Spear Skill increases by one, her battle prowess will increase exponentially.

I guess, this skill system is perhaps most suited for increasing 1 skill.

But, the prerequisite is that there must be enough people in the party. Currently there are only 2 of us, so there is a need for us to handle all kinds of situations.

If one can always fight on his territory, then as long as you develop 1 skill, you will be able to wield powerful strength.

But, then one will be unable to deal with unexpected situations. Like the ambush this time, it could be said that we are at our weakest.

This time to heal her wounds from the intense battle with the elite orc, she used 15 times of《Heal》.

Last time when she healed her shoulder wound, she only used it thrice. For the wounds even earlier, I remembered it was enough to only use《Heal》once.

This is not because the effect of《Heal》got worse. From a game's perspective, it is because our HP increased as our levels increased.

In the answers from the computer, it has already revealed such information earlier. Since MP will increase, then it is not surprising that HP will increase, at that time although I did not pay much attention to this, but after experiencing it, I had an amazed feeling.

Perhaps we are already moving away from a human's basic standard. Or worse, we are slowly becoming an existence like a monster.

No, if it is not like that, then we will not be able to explain the fact why Arisu, after suffering the attack from the elite orc, could still keep her 4 limbs.

Her being safe and sound, is indeed something to be happy about...

But, just exactly what will we become in the future?

「Kazu-senpai, what is wrong?」

My expression probably looked pretty bad. Seeing Arisu with a face of doubts looking at me, I calmed the unease in my heart forcefully and smiled.

「I am thinking at your looks are quite provocative.」

「Huh? Ah, this...」

Arisu seems to only realise her looks now, she blushed, and panically covered the important parts with her hands and legs.

But Arisu, do you know? Creatures like guys, when seeing girls in a shy and panicked looks, will in fact get more excited.

「Hmm… That, but, do you want to see?」

「Emm, yes.」

I gave an embarrassed smile, and turned my head to the side. Actually I wanted to push you down—— I suppressed those heartfelt words with my gentlemanly spirit.

But, Arisu raised her head and looked at me instead, and then opened her mouth and said:

「If it's Kazu-senpai… then its fine.」

It's a shame, but I can't help but swallow my saliva.

Seeing my reaction, although Arisu shrunk her body due to embarrassment, but she still looked into my eyes.

「Ah—— you should listen carefully, Arisu. When guys hear this sort of words, they will become big bad wolves...」

Arisu reached over and held my hand, pulling me closer to her.

When I realised it, I discovered that I am already pressing on Arisu's body.

Those pink lips neared me.

We kissed.

「Where is the big wolf?」

At here.

Some time after we became one.

Through practical experiment, we have some important new discovery.

So as long as you use《Remove Pain》from Healing Magic Rank 1, even if it is the first time, it will be fine.

It is true, at the start because Arisu had felt too much pain, I nearly gave up in the middle.

But Arisu is very smart, she knew her magic inside out. She told me that it will be fine as long as she use《Remove Pain》.

In actuality, it is true. We did it pretty well. From the perspective of 2 first-timers, I felt that we had already done very well.

Another thing that I wish to specially note is that,《Remove Pain》only removes the effect of pain that is over the limit, and does not affect the other senses.

We also discover, as long as we stay in this white room for a long period of time, MP will also gradually recover. I had thought that my MP is already all gone, and because we need some water to clean our bodies, so I used Rank 1 Summon Magic《Summon Water》, and attempt to make some water.

From how I am able to use a few times of《Summon Water》, my MP should have already recovered.

According to previous experience, once we return to our original place, the MP recovered here will go back to 0. But in this white room, we can use magic

without a limit.

Perhaps this place maybe very suitable for conducting experiments with magic. Actually, when I first summon the water, all of them flowed onto the ground from who know where. So I used《Summon Cauldron》which is also Summon Magic Rank 1, and summoned a big cauldron to store the water and use it to bathe.

Looking at the figure of Arisu bathing, once again my “battle instincts” rose up. wasting my previous efforts.

Enough about that. Arisu and I used the white cloth that I summoned with Rank 2 Summon Magic《Summon Cloth》to cover our bodies, and leaned on the wall side by side.

「Can I ask questions about Kazu-senpai?」

「Things about me are boring you know.」

「Shiki-senpai, erm… What happened between you and her?」

Ah, hmm. Indeed it is about that.

A shock of pain appeared in my chest. Arisu discovered that my body has stiffened, and lightly hugged my shoulder.

「I don’t wish to force you. But I want to know everything about Kazu-senpai.」

Arisu said so, with her watery eyes looking at me.

…… those eyes are too much for me.

「After hearing it, you may feel quite bad.」

「Yes, even so it is fine.」

Hence, I told her everything. That despicable fellow, what that fellow did to me, why I was pushed to the point where I no longer believed in anyone, and why I dug the trap, which was for killing that fellow.

The whole class—— no the entire high school section is his ally. Even Shiki Yukariko was pressured into sinking to their level.

「Thinking about it calmly, actually I have no right to hate her. The actions she took, was natural. After all she did not have any power, and going along with the flow is natural.」

I lightly said so. While describing, I also arranged my feelings. That's right, Shiki-san is not wrong. Although I cannot fully accept it, but even so, I should not belittle her. More importantly, she has now received a deep wound, and did not need me to worsen it.

I remembered the expression she had when her eyes met mine while she was carried by Arisu.

This is my retribution—— she seems to be self-deprecating like that. Of course, I can still claim that I have the right to punish her, and also the ways to do so.

That's right, now I already have the power. If I will it, I can even exclude Shiki Yukariko from it.

「If I say I want revenge on Shiki-san, will you look down on me?」

「No, I do not have the right to look down on you.」

Arisu said so with a stern expression.

「I had thought that you would be more of a saint.」

「After listening to Kazu-senpai, I severely despise those students in the high school section, and even feel like beating them up...」

Arisu clutched her fist in front of her chest.

「I had said before that I was an obedient and quiet person in the past, right?」

「Yes, it seems so.」

「Part of the reason is because I am not good in sports. Because I was too weak, so I had to be more obedient, and low profiled. So even if someone is bullied, I can only pretend I didn't see it… I am the same as Shiki-senpai.」

Arisu said until here, and then looked at me as though she was begging for forgiveness.

「Will you look… down on me?」

I did not answer, and instead used both my hands and hugged Arisu's head, bringing her to my chest.

「Arisu did not do anything to me, so you don't need to think about anything outside your scope.」

「Yes.」

「There is no need for you to hate Shiki-san.」

「I know.」

「I will also give way. Of course that is if the other party has the will… We should

give way to each other, for the future.」

「For the future… huh?」

I analysed the situation simply. This should be another world and we are the wanderers, and before us there are at least the orcs as our enemies.

We are all in a state of isolation. The only companion, is the existence that created the white room. No, actually we cannot even confirm if the owner of the room is a friend. Until now, we also do not know if there is a way to return to our original world.

If the surviving students do not work together, then we will be in danger.

「For leveling up, and to come to this room, one must at least kill 1 orc.」

「It is impossible for an average person.」

「If there is someone to assist, just like how I helped you, then it will be different. From tomorrow, I have the idea of letting the willing survivors level up just like you. Just having a skill from one of the weapon system, will help a lot during battle.」

「As long as I fight for everyone...」
「It is better for one to be able to protect himself, and we also need to take into account of the possibility of us acting separately.」

「Me and Kazu-senpai?」

「Ah, for instance if both of us go to the main building of the middle school section, then the people who are left behind...」

I see—— Arisu nodded.

「To survive, one must fight, right?」

「Yes. I wil not request for everyone, but there must be at least a few.」

I guess, the Cultivating Centre will become our base from now on. Although I do not know there are how many survivors as said by Tamaki, but if we take the necessary precautions then there won't be a need for us to worry.

That's right, tomorrow. Now the sun has already set. Although Rank 5 Support Magic has《Night Vision》— a magic that gives the ability to see in the night, but acting in the night is still too dangerous.

More importantly, both Arisu and I are exhausted, and just wanted to rest for today.

「Tomorrow we need to help the others first… Then is it better to first raise Healing Magic to Rank 2?」

「Raising Healing Magic to Rank 2… Ah I see, is it because of《Flower Coat》?」

「Yes.」

After asking the computer, we know that among Rank 2 Healing Magic, there is a magic called《Flower Coat》, which can raise the HP of the person momentarily. As for whether it is useful, it is like buying an insurance, which can place one at ease.

「We shall accumulate power like this, and slowly head to the high school section… Is that so?」

「I don't know how many survivors are there in the high school section. If that fellow is still alive… Only that fellow, I will never forgive him.」

I clutched my fist tightly.

「That, the『fellow』that you said… What is his name?」

「Ah—hmm. He is called Saso Shiba, it seems that his father is one of the directors of the school……」

Then I talked bad about that guy for a while.

「So, Arisu, you must also be careful of that guy. Hmm, Arisu?」

When I realised it, I discovered Arisu lowered her head, seemingly disturbed.

「Are you alright?」

「Ah, yes.」

Arisu raised her head in a panic, seemingly very tired. This is expected, after all she just had a death match. I believe she is tired mentally too. (TL note: who is the one to blame lol)

「I am sorry for letting you listen to my boring talk.」

「No, no… It's fine, I am okay.」

Arisu shook her head in a panic, she probably thought that she spoiled my fun. No she did not, the me of now, is already very happy just by seeing your face.

「Ah, Arisu.」

「Yes.」

「Once we leave this white room, you will return to being a virgin. So as to say, as long as we do it in this room, I can take away your first time everytime...」

「..... That……」

Arisu narrowed her eyes.

「Does making me feel pain, make you happy?」

「No, that… Although the crying Arisu is also cute, but I felt that it is not the same.」

「Why did you speak in a respectful manner?」(TL note: the I in the previous sentence was spoken in form of lowering himself. keigo as you may know)

「Erm— this, hmm—」

Arisu, seeing me beginning to mumble, sighed deeply.

Then, she raised her head and looked at me.

「If Kazu-senpai really hope so, I am willing to let you be happy, but...」

「But?」

「Please let me consider if I want to date you.」

「Ah, erm— I was too much. Sorry.」

I apologise to her. Although I felt that this was a reward in my heart,but I still apologise sincerely.

Arisu: Level 5 Spear Skill 3／Healing Magic 1→2 Skill Point 3→1

Chapter 16: Arrival of the Night

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 16

Chapter 16: Arrival of the Night

Arisu and I left the white room, and returned to the lounge of the Cultivating Centre.

There is only a blue gem in the place where the elite orc has fallen.

This seems like the magic stone in the games? Like the crystallisation of the monster's magic or something.

I picked up the gem, and placed it in my pocket. Then I turned to Arisu.

Arisu has revealed back to the state of being covered in injuries. The instant our eyes met, her face turned red, revealing a shy smile. I was embarrassed too and gave a forced smile.

Not longer after we looked at each other...

「Ah— Arisu, Kazu-senpai!」

A high pitched voice came from the balcony on level 2. Turning around, I saw Tamaki leaning out of the balcony, waving her hands strongly. Looking carefully, she is actually crying. She is sniffing and waving her hands at us at the same time.

「It's great, it's really great! Just now I heard a big sound, and then everything became quiet. I almost die worrying!」

This girl really has nerves of steel— I could not help but give a bitter smile.

What if the ones that lost were us, and the ones that survived is the elite orc?

But then again, ah, this also means she is that worried about Arisu and me. Arisu and I waved to her.

Other than Tamaki, there are still 7 more people who are hiding in level 3. And they are all students from the middle school section.

The students who died include 3 girls and the 2 guys who escaped here from the outside. The only survivor who are caught by the orcs is Shiki Yukariko. The number of survivors is actually quite a lot— The moment I said that...

「The 2 students from Year 1 are brought here, when I separated from Arisu and escaped here!」

Tamaki raised her chest and said proudly. So Tamaki and the 2 Year 1s ignored the highly dangerous level 1 which has orcs patrolling, and climbed to the nearby tree, and then threw a rope into an opened window on level 3 then directly entered the Cultivating Centre from there.

Then, the Tea Ceremony Society students who are originally on level 3 brought them into safety.

This sort of skill, even Indiana Joe will be shocked at it.

「In this place there are only girls?」

「Other than me and Tamaki, there are only students from the Tea Ceremony Society and Cooking Society.」

Arisu said so. She isn't wrong, thinking about it, the facilities in this Cultivating Centre, is a classroom targeted at girls. So it is only natural for the survivors to be girls.

Hmm— although they are students who are younger than me, but if there are guys, then I can leave the heavy stuff to them.

Other than that, a situation like a guy being surrounded by girls, is kind of uncomfortable. But if it is in a novel, it can be described as a paradise...

Ah, imaginations that are not realistic are useless. After tomorrow, I shall hope for guys who have successfully escaped.

I looked out of the window, the skies have already started turning dark, and soon it will be completely dark. But we cannot use any light, because it will be too obvious, and as long as 1 orc is attracted, we will be unable to handle it.

「Ah— Anyway we should close the main door, and then…」

Suddenly I felt a strong wave of dizziness, and kneeled onto the ground. Arisu had wanted to support me, but her body too, gave way, and limped over.

「Ah, haha, Kazu-senpai, are you okay?」

「No, Arisu are you...」

We looked at each other and smiled bitterly. It seems that once our tensed emotions relaxed, the accumulated fatigue came in at one go.

「Ah— Kazu-senpai should go and rest with Arisu. Just leave the rest to us.」

「Sorry, Tamaki. Then we will count on you.」

I shall rest slightly. Arisu and I leaned on the wall of the lounge, and I shutted my eyes.

Sleepiness came in immediately.

Once I opened my eyes, I noticed the surroundings are filled with the scent of incense used in funerals. The surroundings have a dim light, probably from candles. I see, if it's candles, then once you close the main door, the light will not escape outside.

「I lighted some incense, because it is too smelly.」

A voice came from somewhere very near me, I raised my head and saw Shiki Yukariko sitting beside me, looking at me. She is wearing gym clothes from the high school section, that is probably something that is always in the Tea Ceremony Society.

But, why is she the only one around? Seeing my confused expression, Shiki Yukariko laughed bitterly.

「Arisu told me to look after you, while she is going to bathe with Tamaki.」

I looked to the side, and Arisu who is supposed to be beside me is gone. I see— I thought so in my heart. Saying so, did they make hot water? I also wish to take a bath.

「Sorry to spoil your expectation, there is only cold water.」

I guessed so. But even if there is only cold water, that is already good enough. I am covered in sweat, mud and orc's blood, completely filthy. And I feel itchy all over, no matter whether it is a cold bath or ice-cold bath, I don't care.

But I will probably fall sick with a ice-cold bath.

「Because I have already bathe, so now I am fine.」

I see, she had bathed already, which is to say…

I remembered the scene when we first discovered her. Indeed, seeing her state, anyone will let her bathe first.

Although it is so, ah. There is time to bathe, which means this Cultivating Centre is already safe. When I am about to feel relieved, my stomach suddenly growled.

Shiki-san took a bar of Calorie Mate from her pocket and gave me.

「The smell from cooking food is very dangerous, so we can only eat this. You can eat it.」

「To me now, this is already a delicacy.」

Calorie Mate is indeed delicious, I finished it in an instant, and licked my fingers.

「Who brought this?」

「There is a food storage in the basement of this Cultivating Centre, which are emergency rations. We cleared it a bit, those rations could probably let 10 people here survived up to roughly 1 year. Other than that, there are some cans. The water in the bottles are also quite an amount, so we do not need to worry for a while. We also found some generator which uses fuel, but since it will be too noisy, so we did not use it.」

That's a smart judgement— I thought so in my heart. I am even touched by her ability to handle stuff. She had just met with that sort of tragic stuff… Her liveliness surprised me.

「Also, we moved all the corpses to the innermost classroom on level 1. We will bury them tomorrow morning. Other than that… ah, why do you keep looking at me?」

「Wah, ah, sorry.」

「Forget it, it's fine.」

Shiki-san used her hand to brush her hair behind her.

「Just saying so, I am actually just forcefully enduring it. If I don't do something, I will not be able to handle it.」

「I see… Sorry.」

「Don't apologize. If not for you, I maybe already dead, or still in midst of hell, so I am very grateful to you, thank you.」

「You should thank Arisu. When the elite orc appeared, I had intended to abandon you.」

「I heard the situation then, it is natural for you to do that. And really saying, actually it was me who have always abandoned you.」

Yes— I nodded powerlessly. She is right. By the result, I saved her, but actually that was just the development of the situation then.

The reason why she ignored me then, was the same. Well, what humans can do are only following the scenario, making the best choice.

…… there is no meaning in saying anything now.

「Don't reject it anymore, the you now is filled with power.」

「You heard about the thing on Magic and Skills?」

「Arisu told us everything. Including the white room. Although it is unbelievable, but we can only believe it now. My wounds are also healed by Arisu.」

I see, I have only gratitude to Arisu who saved me the trouble.

「So, what to do now? You can banish me out of this building, and send me to the orcs.」

「I will not do that sort of thing.」

「I know. But if you are that sort of person, I will have lesser guilt to my self-reproach.」

Yes— I expressed my agreement. So she had felt painful to her powerlessness— herself who can't do anything.

「Okay, anyway, if you are willing, can you give me a punch, and then ask you to forgive me?」

I didn't expect her to be such a simple person. I wa shocked.

「I won't beat you.」

「Ah— then at least flick my forehead.」

Shiki-san smiled as though she is pranking me, and leaned her forehead towards me.

Her shoulders are still shaking.

I understood, that she is forcing herself. Even so, she still hope that she can be strong and happy.

I laughed bitterly and lightly flicked her forehead.

「This does not hurt at all.」

「You have already experienced so much, and I do not want others to feel pain

anymore.」

「Yes. You have killed many orcs, it has been tough on you.」

Actually, the one standing in the frontline is Arisu, she is the one who has it tough……

Ah, regarding that I will forget it — I thought so. But before sleeping again, I should do the stuff that should be done.

「I will go use magic to set some alarming system.」

When I just stood up, Shiki-san gave a「ekk」sound, backed away.

「Ah—— Sorry.」

「..... Sorry.」

Shiki-san shrunk her body, and looked at me, revealing an ironic smile.

「I thought I have already worked very hard……」

I did not say anything, and while keeping a distance from her, I moved to the door.

It is already completely dark outside the Cultivating Centre. I walked out, and shut the main door.

Looking up, a sky full of stars came into view.

There is no light in the surroundings, so it is natural for the stars to be so bright. Even the street lights which illuminates the dorms and the school are no longer around, making one feel fresh at the view.

I looked at the sky, the Milky Way is also beautiful…...

At this moment, I discovered something. I understood why this sky look so unnatural.

「There are 2 moons……」

I mumbled to myself.

「This is indeed not the world we are originally in.」

It's another world

The strongest evidence is here. Looking at it carefully, the constellations seems different. I do not know much about constellation, so I can't say what is wrong…… But I can confirm, that the stars I have seen before is not like this.

I did not know how long I daze off. Suddenly, I remembered the reason why I came out.

「That's right, I have to use magic to strengthen our defense.」

In Rank 2 Support Magic, there is a magic called《Alert Territory》.

This magic is different from the other magic. Once you set it at a certain location, once a certain thing or person pass by, it will ring an alert that only I can hear. I thought about it, and decide to set the alert as「As long as something which exceeds the size of a kid pass the boundary around the Cultivating Centre, the alarm will sound.」

I walked around the building, and set the circle of alerting magic in the perimeter. With the size of the Cultivating Centre, I only had to go one round, and set it at 4 places.

The effective time of the magic is about 12 hours, or until I cancelled it. As long as it can last until morning then it is fine.

Finally I looked at the starry sky again.

「Why did we come to this world?」

Is there an answer to this question?

I shook my head, and returned to the Cultivating Centre.

If the orcs suddenly invade, level 1 is the most dangerous.

So all of us should sleep in level 3.

The girls slept in a big Japanese-styled room, while I slept in a small Western-styled room.

I had a bit of expectation, don't know if Arisu will sneak into my bed in the middle of the night. But I didn't have the energy to wait, once I enter the bed, I slept like a log.

I believed Arisu is also the same. She, who is in the frontline, is definitely more tired than me.

The long day ended just like that.

Then……

The second long day in another world begins.

Chapter 17: Dawn

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 17

Chapter 17: Dawn

I had a dream.

In that dream, that fellow is looking down on me who is on the ground, revealing his scorning smile.

「Stupid.」

That fellow said so.

「You can’t even protect the woman you loved.」

That fellow looked to my side, I also followed his line of sight and turned.

A girl was lying on the ground. A thick spear has penetrated her body, with the spearhead stabbed into the ground.

The girl is Arisu. I lowered my head and looked, Arisu who is lying in the pool of blood has already lost the glow in her eyes.

「I was wrong.」

The pale-faced Arisu opened her mouth and spoke.

「I shouldn’t have followed Kazu-senpai. Because of your decision, I—」

Ah, right. I suddenly realised it, and looked up at the fellow who is laughing at me.

So I lost to him again.

「No matter where you are, you are a useless thing, you caused her death.」

That’s right, it is all because of me, that is why Arisu died. Because I made a wrong decision, so everything is ruined. Even so—

「Even so, I have already decided that I will not run. This time I will not escape.」

I stared at that fellow, and he laughed loudly...

I heard, during the olden days when there are no electricity, people would sleep once the sun sets, then wake up once the sun rises.

Because I slept too early, in the end before dawn arrives, I woke up.

Covered in sweat, I sat up on the bed, panting. I seemed to have some dream, and it's a nightmare.

「No matter what, it shouldn’t have been a nightmare.」

I mumbled to myself. After all yesterday was very tragic, we are no longer able to return to our daily lives. And it has only been a day, and everything has turned into a nightmare.

The nightmare will continue today, it will not end.

I got out of the bed, and because of muscle fatigue, my body feels stiff. But recently I have been digging traps, so it can be counted as training. Arisu must have felt worse, I guess?

Once I got down, I discovered the girls have already gotten out of bed.

The air is filled with dried bonito smell. After asking, then I realise it is Shiki-san's suggestion. Although it may attract the orcs' attention, but even if they have to brave this risk, a good breakfast should be served to replenish one's strength.Although there is no gas in the gas stove in the cooking classroom, but there are portable gas stove. In such a situation, it is indeed good to have people from the Cooking Society.

Breakfast is miso soup, instant rice and instant curry.

The girls from the Cooking Society expressed their apologies that this was just a simple meal.

But it is already very good. To Japanese, curry is a delicacy. We, who are hungry, wolfed down the breakfast. Not only me and Arisu, but everyone had 2 bowl of rice.

「Today we are going to have the final battle, how can I not store some energy!」

Tamaki said so. I see, the situation that we are in now, and the reality that we must face in the future, they are all very clear about it. Thanks to the hot rice filling our stomach, we are now full of energy.

After eating breakfast, dawn has yet to arrive, so we decided to have a meeting to organise our current information and at the same time discuss our next direction.

The meeting location is the discussion room on level 3. Level 1 and 2 has been messed up by the orcs' destruction of the place, and before cleaning it up, we do not wish to use it, so it is only natural to gather at level 3.

After sitting down at the chair in the meeting room, I looked at the audience.

My eyes met with Arisu's, so I gave a smile, but there seems to be some doubts in Arisu, and then she gave an unnatural smile back.

Huh—? What is going on? I feel that we seemed to be a bit distant……

No, it should be just me. Yes, it must be because everyone is around, so she deliberately kept a distance from me.

Of course, the situation is constantly changing. Now, the phase of just the 2 of us fighting has come to an end. If we continue to just depend on just ourselves, we will not be able to survive through today. This is something that we have already confirmed in the white room.

No, if Arisu and I continue to take independent action, perhaps we can survive. But then, we will not be able to protect Arisu's good friend—Tamaki, and we won't be able to protect the lives of the 2 Year 1 that— Tamaki saved.

I mustered my spirit, and surveyed at everyone, and then said:

「I wish to confirm again, regarding the situation outside this mountain, all of you have heard it from Arisu?」

「I witnessed it.」

Tamaki answered. I asked her, what does that mean?

「You can see from the rooftop.」

「See what?」

「The plains.」

Ah, I see— I could not help but gave a shocked sound. The rooftop of this building is taller than the woods, hence it must be able the other side of the mountain clearly.

「Because evacuating is very boring, so I ran to the rooftop to see the situation in the surroundings. I was shocked. The scenery outside is different from the usual.」

「What do you feel about it?」

「Ah— it feels that we came to a game world.」

Tamaki's expression of it, is more direct than mine.

Game world, hmm, with orcs, and such plains, coupled with the scene of huge birds taking away people.

Not caring if using the term「Game World」that is used to describe the scenario is correct, anyway, they seem to have grasp the situation we are in.

This is not Earth, but another world.

「And, last night I looked up, and discovered that there is 2 moon in the sky.」

「Ah, yes.」

「The constellations are completely different too.」

「You know about constellations?」

「Arisu knows.」

I turn towards Arisu, and Arisu nodded unwillingly.

「I like mythology. 」

「Just like chuunibyou that sort of feeling?」

「Chuunibyou?」

Arisu tilted her head in confusion. Oh shit, I accidentally said something very hikikomori. I looked at the surroundings, and discovered a few girls snickering. Tamaki also gave a smirk smile, seeing her golden ponytails shaking.

Ah— damn. Forget it, I shall not care and return to the main topic.

「Ah, then everyone agrees and understand that this is not Earth.」

The girls nodded, and some of them even revealed an expression that seems to be almost crying. That can't be helped. If crying can solve the problem, then even I would want to cry. More importantly, why am I chairing the meeting?

Ah, this too can't be helped.

There are only 2 students from the high school section, which is me and Shiki-san. And Shiki-san politely gave the power to direct the meeting.

Standing in my shoes, I still have some issues with Shiki-san. In other words, I don't wish to be directed by her.

I am very narrow-minded.

Really, even though it is kinda weird saying it by myself, but I am a really petty person.

Ah, forget it, shall not bother about how petty I am for now. Now we are having a meeting, and the urgent thing is to provide information.

「This is another world. After the earthquake, our school, which is the entire mountain has been transferred to another world. We are wanderers in this other world.」

I said so.

「And those orcs invaded this mountain. From the timing, the orcs shouldn't have climbed the mountain after the earthquake, instead they came from the top of the mountain. So there must be some sort of transfer point at the top of the mountain, something that can transcend time-space.」

I am not sure if this guess is right, but I guess they must have used some special way to move.

This world already has magic, even if there is a transfer point, there should not be surprising.

Of course, they could also have taken a transportation like saucership.

「Although I am not sure what are the aims of the orcs, but we can be sure that, that they are definitely our enemies. We have to presume that all of the buildings on this mountains have been occupied by the orcs, and as for comrades… we shall assume there is none. Perhaps some adults or students have survived, and are currently hiding.」

If there are adult survivors, they may have occupied some area, or escaped into the forest. To meet up with them, we have to search all the buildings.

But, the Cultivating Centre which just had 10 orcs, already gave us such a hard time yesterday.

I don't think that is the main force of our enemy.

Other than that, the bronze-skinned orc that appeared at the end— using the name that I gave, that is elite orc. If that is the last one, then it will be good.

It is better of me to not have those kind of optimistic view, we should presume that the enemies are very strong, and there are many elite orcs, and use that as

a premise to act.

And there are at least 100 ordinary orcs, or even more. Perhaps there are even stronger monsters.

Indeed, not knowing the full potential of the enemy is a terrifying thing. The most important thing should be investigation.

But before that—

「I feel that, everyone here should do their best to level up to level 1.」

I heard the sounds of saliva being swallowed.

「This means everyone will take turns to kill the orcs. Arisu and I will think of ways to stop the orcs from moving, and all of you just have to use the spear to stab it to death. Anyway once you get to level 1, and obtained skills, then even if you suffer an attack from the orcs, you can handle it. This is not compulsory, after leveling up I will not force you to fight. But in the current situation, the difference in safety for level 0 and 1 is very big.」

Of course, if after leveling up, you have the wish to join in the fight, then I will assist from the side.

If we only depend on the 2 of us, eventually we will reach a bottleneck. From yesterday's battle, this can clearly be seen.

It is efficient in getting experience in small parties, but if we met with any troubles, then it will be hard to recover from it.

Yesterday it was Arisu who resisted my commands. Logically, I should have abandoned Arisu.

Luckily we pulled through. But, I do not wish to do that sort of dangerous stuff

again.

We have to play it safe. Even if it is not a companion who we trust from the bottom of our heart, as long as she can support Arisu and I in times of need, it will be fine. I desperately need such a person.

Also, if we want to use this Cultivating Centre as base, then it must have someone to protect it.

Thinking about it carefully, it was really fortunate being able to sleep on a bed last night. If we camped out in the wilds, we may not be able to rest well, and in fact we wouldn't even know if we can sleep in peace.

「I am willing.」

Should I said this was expected? The first one to raise her hand is Arisu's good friend, Tamaki.

「I do not wish to continue to run, and I cannot always let Arisu protect me.」

She said it half-jokingly, and smiled to Arisu. Arisu gave a bitter smile in reply:
「What is so bad about letting me protect you.」

「It should have been me that protect Arisu! It cannot be reversed!」

After Tamaki said it, she turned towards me.

「So, let me join your party, Kazu-senpai.」

「Ah— my party will definitely become the main force, so the risk is very high…… Forget it, this is also fine.」

To protect Arisu, she will even give up her own life. Although it will not be the same when protecting me, but as long as Arisu still likes me, I believe Tamaki will

not betray us.

No, wait? What if Tamaki loves Arisu?

I am of course referring to the sexually side.

She actually has a big sense of jealousy towards me……

I looked at Tamaki's face, then she gave a「Eh?」sound, tilting her head innocently.

「What. I don't supposed you have fallen in love with me?」

「Huh?」

Arisu gave out some sound like she was coughing, and looked at me, and then at Tamaki. THe girl who felt that she was Arisu's best friend, laughed with a 「hehe」.

「Ah— Tamaki, stop causing trouble……」

「Oh, so you want both me and Arisu?」

「Oi.」

Arisu turned red and white, seemingly very busy. Tamaki has the look that she wanted to continue teasing me, but I decide to ignore her appropriately.

Hmm, it is better to ignore her. As for whether Tamaki is a lesbian, it is okay to put it aside for now. She should not be that sort of person.

Then again, I feel that she didn't think about it that much.

「The others?」

「I am also willing.」

Shiki-san said.

「I do not wish to experience that sort of thing again…… But, I do not wish to join Gaya-san's party. Honestly speaking, I hope not to ever meet orcs again. But, I also do not wish that I do not have any power to fight back. So, Gaya-san, sorry, but please help me prepare 1 orc.」

I understand it of course.

The next to raise her hand, is one of the Year 1 student from middle school section that Tamaki saved yesterday.

「I am willing.」

「You are…...」

「I am Tagamiya Mia, I wish to join Kazu-senpai's party.」

Tagamiya Mia is a girl who is even thinner than Arisu. Her figure is very small, not even reaching 150cm in height. Her special traits is her shiny black hair, and deep black pupils and her child-like face.

She seems like an elementary school kid. Ah, she who is studying in middle school year 1, is indeed an elementary school kid half a year ago, this is only natural.

「I wish to use magic.」

「Oh— that is true. If using magic to fight, then it has nothing to do with body size. But, Mia…… Can I call you that? Mia, even if you can use magic, it will still be as dangerous.」

「I understand.」

I look at Mia's eyes, thinking that she is not joking. She replied with her deep black eyes. Oh— I do not quite understand.

「My elder brother is in the High school section.」

「Brother?」

「He is in Year 3 Class 2.」

「But, I have never heard of the surname Tagamiya.」

「..... I see.」

「You wish to find him? So that is why you want power?」

Mia nodded. I see, so she likes her brother alot.

「Even if my elder brother is that useless, but he is still my brother, I have to protect him.」

…… Something is different.

To be honest, I hope that all of the students in the High School section are killed. Her brother may know about my stuff, perhaps through him, the people here will know how lousy I was.

Even so, there is no need to consider so much at this stage. Seeing the situation yesterday, she is still willing to fight, which says that she has exceptional courage. At least I can see it today.

If any emergency situation occurs, Arisu and Tamaki will stand on my side. From this point, party members other than Arisu and Tamaki, only Mia is needed. Even if Mia which to rebel, in the situation of 3 against 1, we will not lose.

「I cannot agree to go and search the High School section immediately, but before long, we will meet with the situation of needing to head to the High School section. Then we can search carefully.」

「This is fine, I do not wish to wait silently.」

Mia said so, so I expressed that I will looking forward to it. No matter what, all of it depends on whether she can successfully kill an orc. When she passes this rite, I will ask her again if she wanted to join the party.

Although I just said those words, but I do not hope that everyone here will have the courage to kill orcs. I estimate that only half of them will be willing.

Or supposed to be.

But after Mia, everyone raised their hands sequentially. Finally, everyone actually voiced their wish to kill orcs. It seems that yesterday's tragedy had a greater influence on them then I expected, and it gave them the realization.

「I know, then first—」

I announced to everyone.

「First let's dig some traps!」

I proudly announced. Other than Arisu, everyone at the scene gave a shocked expression.

Chapter 18: Digging Expert

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 18

Chapter 18: Digging Expert

The sun rose.

We are digging holes behind the Cultivating Centre, as practice for making traps.

Don’t look at me like that, I can dig holes very well.

Because I had accumulated a lot of experience, I clearly know the skills on how to dig a deep hole in a short time. Everyone can call me a hole digging expert.

As digging holes requires clothes that are more suited for physical activities, hence I asked everyone to change to the gym clothes stored in the Cultivating Centre’s storage room, and then gather at the back door. These are old-styled gym clothes that was supposed to be phased-out, but perhaps due to some error, they are kept in the innermost part of the storage room.

The bottom that they are wearing are not comfy shorts, but bloomers that adhere tightly. Just how long ago was it? These bloomers that were abolished due to pressure from the Parents’ Society. Well it seems to be in good conditions……

Arisu had a shy look, and looked up at me.

「Erm, are you happy?」

「Huh, happy about what?」

「I heard that all guys like bloomers.」

「Who said that?」

「Tamaki did.」

Tamaki escaped from the scene quickly like a rabbit. That fellow, don't you dare escape.

The other girls looked at us, and revealed their smirk smile. Damn.

「Then when using the metal shovel, so it is better to wear jackets. All of you do not wish to get injured right?」

「If we get injured, Arisu will heal us.」

Shiki-san said so, her face also have that smirk smile. That damn fellow.

「Next we are going to have to fight with orcs.」

「Is there any relation, today's weather should also be very hot.」

Shiki-san combed her hair, shaking her head.

「Moreover, just a jacket will not be able to block the orc's axe. Since so, don't you think that wearing a bit lighter might be better?」

Listening to her say so, me who pushed Arisu and the familiars to the frontline does not have the right to say much.

「Anyway, everyone please take care not to get injured.」

Since saying anymore will not help, I can only shrug my shoulders.

I cast《Mighty Arm》on everyone, increasing their arm strength. Now me who is

level 5 after casting《Mighty Arm》on 11 people, only need to rest for about 20mins, then my MP will be completely recovered. The effect of the magic will last about 1 hour to 1.5hour, so as to say, I can cast it limitlessly.

Everyone is armed with a shovel, this is also found in the basement of the Cultivating Centre. Initially I dug an ideal trap as a demonstration, then they followed.

I instructed them while beside them on how to dig to be more efficient. The hole that was finished first, was extremely ugly. Ah, but this is only practice. As a grave, it is more than enough.

That‘s right, this is a grave. We will be using it to bury the 5 people that the orcs killed in this building yesterday.

After we buried the corpses in the graves, we made a mound, and lastly put a branch in front of the grave as a marker.

We lightly clasped our hands together(TL note: the act of praying). After that we may need to dig a hole for disposal of waste, but because we found an emergency toilet in the storage, so we just have to install it in the lounge, saving the trouble.

As for why we didn’t install the toilet outside, is because we do not know when the orcs will attack, so it is too dangerous.

Until now, 1.5hours have passed, and it is 7.30am now.

Now we are about to do the main thing. I told them to dig a real deep hole in a slightly more hidden place in the forest. Through everyone’s cooperation, or perhaps everyone is getting used to it, hence the digging speed is faster than I expected.

I summoned a Puppet Golem, and let it stay guard when we are digging.

Other than that, I also summoned a crow. I don't know if it's me, but this crow seems fiercer than yesterday.

No, this fellow is really different from yesterday. Its beak is sharper than the original, and its round eyes is filled with a conqueror's aura…… No it isn't that exaggerated, it is just obvious that it is stronger than yesterday's crow…… Why?

Ah, right! I realised it. Just like Support Magic will become stronger with ranking up, Summon Magic will also be strengthened with its rank being raised.

So as to say, the summoned familiar, will become stronger as the rank rises.

Ah, but it shouldn't have any drastic changes……

I noted it down. In the future when considering to rank up Support Magic or Summoning Magi, it can serve as a base for judging.

I decided to send Arisu to investigate, and sent my crow familiar to accompany her. If Arisu has anything that she want to communicate with me, she can let the crow bite a piece of paper to return, replacing emails.

Not a messaging pigeon, but a messaging crow.

I asked her to observe from the forest, the middle school section's main school building, boys and girls dormitories, staff room, gymnasium, tracks and the tennis field *etc.* Just roughly and safely observe awhile will be fine.

There is another thing that I must sternly command Arisu.

「Even if you see someone in a bad situation, you cannot dash out to save them.」

「B..but~」

「If you die, then I will also lose my hope to live on. If you are not around, I may follow you.」

I don't know whether to use shameful or cowardly to describe this command….. This should be considered as begging. Because I felt that if I don't say it, Arisu will display her sense of justice again.

To ensure that it is under control, then I must use something of similar importance to chain her up.

If that can be me, then I will gladly become her chains.

I do not wish to lose Arisu. Yesterday Arisu told me that, if she dies, then she will leave Tamaki to me. That means that even if she dies, there is someone to replace her?

That is too naive. And such naivety is very dangerous.

The her now, could possibly die for me. So I deliberately said that「If you die, I will also die with you.」

Arisu opened her eyes widely and stared at me.

「This…… Perhaps I may change my mind, and viciously betray Kazu-senpai?」

I smiled. What kind of foolish words are those.

I clearly knew that she is those serious type, so it is impossible. Even me who is full of doubts towards people, also trusted her completely.

「Then I will leave a note cursing you, and commit suicide. The idea of taking Tamaki as a hostage, and bring her with me, seems good too.」

「Ah, Ka.. kazu-senpai.」

「No, sorry, I am just joking.」

「I mean to say, if I betray you, I should have some sort of realisation?」

「No, please do not betray me.」

She nodded with a stern expression. It should be fine…… I think it should be.

I don't know if it is because it is still early, but we can't see any signs of orcs. Perhaps they are still sleeping? If so then its great. I hope they will keep sleeping until we are ready.

I took the chance to use《Repair》on the weapons left by the defeated orcs, to remove the rust on the weapons.

Although there are spears, axe and swords, but I hope that everyone will use spears. Using weapons that have a long reach to attack is definitely safer, and it may more or less decrease the fear emotion.

Before long, the crow following Arisu returned, with a slip of paper in its beak.

That was Arisu's message. it wrote:「Can I bring orcs over? One.」

I wrote OK on the paper, and let the crow bite it, before flying back to Arisu.

「The orc will becoming in a while, this time we will not use traps, so everyone please back away, and hide behind the trees.」

I summoned another Puppet Golem, and cast the 3 magic《Keen Weapon》,《Physical Up》,《Mighty Arm》on both Puppet Golems.

Arisu is running in the woods, approaching us.

Tightly behind her, are 2 orcs holding axes.

This is different from what is said? Ah, Arisu suddenly turned and give it a strike. One of the orcs had its throat pierced through by the spear, and it fell, becoming paler and then disappeared. After the orc disappeared, a gem is left on the ground.

The other orc is nearing Arisu, and raised its axe high. Arisu dodged it with quick step, and ran again.

I see, now it is like what she said, she brought 1 orc back. How should I say this, I should not underestimate her.

「Sorry, there was one more hiding under the tree… What should I do now, Kazu-senpai!」

Arisu shouted to us, while running towards us.

「Ah, I wish to immobilise it.」

「Then I will attack its legs.」

Arisu quickly turned in front of me, and aimed her spear at that orc. That orc did not mind even when seeing its comrade getting killed, and still rushed towards Arisu.

Arisu stepped forward, and attacked the kneecap of the orc with the spear.

But her blow is too powerful, shattering the entire kneecap of the orc. The pig-man then rolled onto the ground.

Arisu did not hesitate to strike again, attacking the other kneecap.

Next she striked twice, and sounds of bone shattering sounded out from the left

and right shoulder of the orc.

「Is this fine?」

「Yes, it is fine… You are so strong.」

The orc is struggling on the ground, and I order the 2 Puppet Golem to hold down the orc's hands.

Looking behind, I only saw that the people hiding behind the trees are so scared that they stepped back.

「Th..this is too much.」

Shiki-san gave a forced smile.

Is this sort of thinking too naive— I mumbled to myself in my heart. She had just suffered such a tragedy yesterday, and now she is still concerned about the methods?

I looked at the orc that has fallen onto the ground again.

……Wah, this is bad. Who did such a thing?

Arisu.

Hmph, enough fooling around. The truth is that, both of us are pretty unscrupulous. But this is all for the future, for the sake of survival.

「Okay, who wants to be the first to level up?」

2 person raised their hands— Tamaki and the Middle School Year 1, Mia.

Mia is slightly faster. Hmm— is it because she is Year 1? No, forget it, it's fine.

「Mia, I will leave this to you.」

「Okay.」

I gave the bamboo spear to the most petite girl in the group. Although she is pretty silent, and does not have much expression, but she should still be nervous, seeing that her hands are shaking when she is holding the bamboo spear.

Other than that, the reason why I gave her the bamboo spear and not the metal spear, is because I feel that the metal spear is too heavy, she may not be able to use it.

「Being able to stab the throat is good, but as long as you keep stabbing, it will die.」

「Okay.」

Arisu cast《Flower Coat》of Healing Magic Rank 2 on Mia. This is magic that use pink mist to surround the person who is being cast on, and hence absorb the impact of attacks. Through actual experiments, once Arisu uses her spear to attack lightly, this magic will lose its effect.

In a game's point of view, this is like increasing 5 HP. No, actually I do not even know how much is 5 HP, and said it for the sake of saying. Even so, it should ease the worries for the people.

Mia followed my instructions and kept stabbing at the orc. She concentrated on her strikes, as though she is cursing. In the process, the struggling orc kick her foot, and she gave a「ouch」sound, losing her balance. But thanks to《Flower Coat》, she remains full of energy.

After stabbing about 20 times, she luckily stabbed the orc's eye.

The orc’s figure finally disappeared, and Mia’s action suddenly stopped.

「I leveled up.」

She turned to me and said.

「As I said, I obtained Earth and Wind Magic.」

Chapter 19: Prying around the Girls' Dormitory

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 19

Chapter 19: Prying around the Girls' Dormitory

I respected Mia’s judgement, and let her choose what sort of magic that she want to get.

But, I have already told her the rough direction of this party. Which is the below:

Although there is still sometime before it can be accomplished, but this elite party will consist of the 4 of us, me, Arisu, Tamaki and Mia.
Also, the vanguard will be Arisu and Tamaki, and the rearguard will be me and Mia.
There is no need to concentrate on firepower, but if there is, it will also be good. It will be the best if there is a convenient magic for escaping.

The combination of Earth Magic and Wind Magic, at least in Rank 1 stage, there is no magic for direct attack. But on the other hand, there are many convenient magic for support.

If that is so, then it is enough, After Mia, it is time for Tamaki to level up.

From this time, we began using traps. After digging a tap, as long as it is hidden carefully, then it can be reused.

Arisu brought our prey— which is the orc, then made it fall into the trap, then Tamaki stabbed it ot death. Tamaki also level up, and she gain Sword Skill 1 and Physical 1.

After Tamaki, Shiki-san also leveled up. The skills that Shiki-san gained are Detection 1 and Throwing 1.

After Shiki-san gained Detection Skill, she became an expert on disguising traps. Once you raise this skill, the ability of setting traps like hunters will also increase.

The reason why Shiki-san chose Detection Skill, is not to make herself a detective.

「I do not wish to fight at all, so I will do my best at running away or hiding.」

She raised her chest and said so. So big— I thought so in my heart.

Other than that, as for the reason for the Throwing Skill.

「Knives, choppers, there are as many as you want here. And they are more trustworthy than the weapons obtained from orcs.」

I see, that is indeed reasonable— I thought so. She is really a person of logic.

The magic that Mia obtained, showed its prowess immediately. The《Earth Bound》of Earth Magic is very useful, this is a magic that can control the plants on the ground and use it to tie up the enemy's' legs.

This magic can stop an orc's movements, and if it is successful, it can even trip it. And then Arisu will break the hand that is holding the weapon, so that everyone can kill the orc in a safer condition.

Although it seems like bullying the weak, but once we think about what these fellows did to us first, this sort of behaviours is nothing much.

After 3 person leveled up to Level 1, even if I am not around, it should be fine. Hence I asked Tamaki to be the guide and go investigating with me. According to Arisu, there is nearly no movement from the orcs at dawn. She express that if we do not get closer than we will not be able to get clearer information, and hence she hope that permit her to get closer to the buildings.

I immediately refuted her opinion, and express that if she really needs to do so, then it should be me who go and check it out.

First of all, the place that I am heading to, is the one that is the nearest to the Cultivating Centre… Though I said that, it takes about 10mins of walking in the forest before I can reach the girls' dormitory. The 3 stories tall girls' dormitory, as it means, it is the place where the middle school girls live everyday.

That is a squarish building that is about 60m wide.

If I didn't remember wrongly, our school's high school section should have 1300 people while the middle school section has about 700 people. So to say, there are about 350 girls? If there isn't such a big building, then it will not be able to hold so many people.

Then again……

Girl dormitory huh.

Ah, I don't have any other meanings. It is just that the words girls' dormitory, will make one think of many times— yeah right! Okay, I will be lying if I say there is nothing. But since we are attacking it, then we should start from the nearest place. That's all.

Attacking the Girls' Dormitory.

That sounds so cool. A guy poking his head out from the woods near the girls' dormitory, and using a binoculars to peek at the interior. That person is me.

That is a perverted action normally, but now this is an extreme period.

「Kazu-senpai, you look like a pervert.」

「Listen well Tamaki, this is part of the battle plans.」

But every curtain at the windows of the girls' dormitory are pulled down, so it is impossible to see the situation inside. Hmm—

Got it, there is a window broken at 1 of the rooms on level 3, perhaps we can enter from there. I decided to send the crow in to investigate.

I used a new magic— Support Magic Rank 3's《Remote Viewing》.

《Remote Viewing》 allows me to view the sights of the person who has the magic casted on, it is like a magic specially designed to be used with the crow.

But once I used it, before the magic effect ends, I will only have the sights of that person. So as to say, in this period, I will be in a completely defenseless state. So when using this magic, there must be someone who protecting me.

So I asked Tamaki to help me survey the surroundings.

Other than that, the reason why Tamaki chose Physical Rank 1, is that she wanted to use the giant axe that the elite orc, that was defeated by us, had. After getting the skill, she tried to lift the giant axe, although it is not to the level of being very easy, but at least she was not affected by the weight of the giant axe.

The power of skills is really great— everyone had to be in awe of it.

But in such an investigation, such a big axe will only be a burden. So what she is holding in her hands, is an ordinary metal sword. That was a rusty sword that belonged to the orcs, but I used《Repair》to polish it. Although Tamaki seems a bit unsatisfied, but I could only ask her to bear with it for now.

Other than her and Arisu, I do not intend to call anyone else to be my guard. Although I am not clear on Tamaki's character, but I don't think she will hurt

someone who is important to Arisu, which is me.

Anyway, after I cast《Remote Viewing》, the view of the crow appeared before me.

The crow familiar spread its wing and flew into the sky. Wawa, that's awesome. The feeling of flying in the sky is so comfortable. If there are any free time, I sure wish to play with this magic.

But, I also do not know when will I have such a time.

The crow landed on the railings on rooftop of the girls' dormitory. At this moment, the group of crows which had gathered at the rooftop immediately flew away. Did they know that my crow is not a normal crow?

Then again, those crows gathered at the rooftop, which means…

There are fallen figures on the rooftop, which are corpses. There are 6 in total, which are all girls.

Those crows gathered on the corpses, and fed on the corpses until they are in pieces. I desperately suppressed the feeling of vomiting.

Luckily, the crow began to fly again quickly. Although this magic allows me to share the view of the crow, but I cannot issue orders to it. The crow entered the dormitory from the broken window on level 3.

There is a corpse of a young girl beside the window, her neck is twisted in an unnatural way; and like the other corpses, her lower half is naked. I guess that she might have wanted to escape, and broke the window, but was captured at the window, and violated, and then killed. I putted my palms together for this stranger, and pray that she did not experience much pain.

Tamaki who is standing beside me, should have seen me putting my palms

together, but she did not say anything.

The crow according to my instructions, entered the girls' dormitory and began its investigation.

The difference between yesterday is that, we have ample time today. Even if this crow gets killed, it will not cause anything harm to me, but I am just unsure without the enemy knows the existence of familiars.

Forget it, the orcs looks so stupid.

But maybe I am too arrogant.

Wouldn't I be setting a death flag for myself? Ah, forget it, it should be fine.

The crow landed on the ground, and walked in the dim corridor. It seems like there is nothing that will move. This magic cannot transmit sound, so even if someone gave out pained groans, I will not be able to hear it.

The crows came to level 1, and then neared a opened room, and peeked inside.

This seems like a dining hall.

I saw a rough legs of a few orcs, and saw that there are many girls fainted on the ground, their bodies occasionally twitched convulsively

「There are survivors right?」

I don't know if she detected the changes in the expressions on my face, but she whispered lightly beside my ear.

Her breath makes my ears feel so itchy. Her soft little hand, is covered over my tightly clenched fist.

「How did you know?」

「Seeing you revealing that expression of unwillingness and clutching of your teeth, how can I not know.」

「……Yes.」

「Do we have any methods of saving them?」

If they are still alive, I of course wish to save…...

But there is a problem— among the orcs, there is one with bronze skin.

「There is an elite orc.」

I said it in a low voice.

Tamaki and I returned to our companions who are hunting orcs.

Because I wish to discuss with them about the issue in the girls' dormitory.

When we returned, everyone just raised to level 1. With this, there are 9 people who are level 1, while Arisu and I are level 5.

If this is so, we might as well get everyone to level 2— I thought so greedily. After all from previous experience, once you level the Ranks of the weapon skills to 2, then it will be easy to deal with the orcs.

Though so, if we want to invade the girls' dormitory and save the survivors, then time is of essence.

Now it is about to be 9am, the orcs should be beginning to become active.

「I know this sounds very heartless, but under the situation without a concrete

way of defeating the elite orc, I am against going to the girls' dormitory.」

The one who said so is Shiki-san, and I feel that her opinion is very accurate.

But I do not wish to accept her opinion.

I am clear that this is because I am just narrow-minded. It seems that while I am not around, Shiki-san has become everyone's mental support. Other than battle-related stuff, Arisu seems to be quite reliant on her opinion.

Shiki Yukariko has always been good at taking care of other, and at the same time has the qualities of a leader. It is just that when I am being bullied, she pretended to not have seen it.

Ah, damn, if I continued it will be like I am ranting.

Nevermind, I shall put this thing aside for now.

「Of course, we have to consider the survivors in the girls' dormitory, there could be friends of our juniors here. Under this premise, I feel that we have to a bit more cautious.」

Among the people present, other than me and Shiki-san, all of them are students from middle school section. The earthquake happened on Saturday after school, and at this time, unless they participated in society activities, if not everyone will be in the dorms. So, their classmates, roommates, friends, seniors, juniors etc, have a high chance of being trapped there.

Of course, that is if they are still alive...

Ah right— I suddenly discovered one thing.

So Shiki-san is taking the place of being the bad guy for me.

Perhaps that is not being thoughtful, but purely based on her judgement, that she feel that the bad guy should not be me now.

No, this is definitely it. She seems like someone who is better than me in controlling the people. The reason why I can be the leader, is because I am already level 5, stronger than all of them.

Under such a situation, only power can make everyone be at ease.

Regarding this point, she… no, everyone present is clear on that.

I looked at Arisu. I don't know how much of my despicable thoughts have been seen through by her but Arisu walked to my side, and held my hand.

「I will follow Kazu-senpai's view.」

「Wah, you two are so bright.」

Tamaki was joking at the side, so I lightly knocked on top of her head with my fist. The golden-hair girl grabbed her head and squat down.

「Ahhh, Arisu~ Kazu-senpai is bullying me.」

「You deserved it.」

Arisu said it coldly. Disregarding that— I said so, and requested for the opinions of the others.

Mia from Middle School Year 1 raised her hand.

「What I am suggesting is not an action plan, is that okay?」

「Ah, you can say out any opinions.」

「In Rank 2 Earth Magic, there is a magic called《Heat Metal》.」

I have also check such an information regarding that magic.

This is a magic that can heat up metals. If you cast it on weapons, the enemy will not be able to hold it due to the heat, and could only drop the weapon.

「I see. No matter how strong the elite orc is, once it does not have any weapons — You mean this right?」

「Yup.」

Having such a choice in using magic to support, that is really great. With this, our tactics will become more versatile.

Then again, although this girl called Mia is only in middle school year 1, she is shown to be pretty calm. Seems that she is a talent to be nurtured.

I crossed my arms in front of my chest and think. Just now Mia successfully used Earth Magic to help others to level up. From how it seems, she seems to be full of courage too.

「I know, you and Tamaki should level up to level 2.」

I judged that it is hard to immediately attack the girl's dormitory. If our actual combat strength is only Arisu and me, then it is limited in handling the situation. If we are not careful, we will end up like yesterday,

Although we won yesterday's bet, but it is hard to say if it will go well the next time. The important thing now, is to raise our battle strength. Although it is earlier than expected, but we should began to groom our main elite force.

Actually I have planned to level everyone level up to level 2, but it seems that there is no time.

「Arisu, is there any place that gathered about 4, 5 orcs?」

「If it is the place that I went to just now, there are 3, 4 orcs sleeping at the shed near the tennis court. But I think they should be up by now……」

Then we will set this place as the goal.

「Then let's go PL.」

「What is PL?」

Arisu tilted her head and asked.

「Ah— this is a term used in games. It's the short form of Power Leveling, which is the stronger players would bring the weaker players around, forcefully leveling them up.」

I feel that this phase being used at this moment, is the most apt.

Chapter 20: Elite Party

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 20

Chapter 20: Elite Party

We returned to the Cultivating Centre. I used a chalk to draw a line on the ground in front of the Cultivating Centre. And asked them to dig holes at the specific locations. I asked them to dig a 1 metre long, 2 metre deep, and 5 metre wide hole at a location about 1 metre from the main door.

This is a simple moat.

There is no need to deliberately hide this hole. After all the grass near the main door is already very little, the ground is bare, so even if we used grass to cover the trap, it will be seen through immediately. So this is like a dry ditch.

The aim of making such a trap, is to block the movements of the orcs, making it easier for us to defend.

「Even if all of you guard the main door, once the number of orcs became too big, it will be hard to defend. After digging this hole, the orcs can only attack from the left and right side. So even if we are little in number, it will become easier for us to defend.」

「If we do such big actions in front of the Cultivating Centre, then the news of us using the Cultivating Centre as a base will be discovered.」

「Afterall we will be discovered eventually. Since that is so, we should have made preparations early.」

Hearing my refute, Shiki-san nodded in understanding.

「If you throw things from the windows at level 2 and 3, it will be easier to hit the targets right.」

「Oh—That's right. This moat, perhaps is very helpful to throwing skill.」

「Isn't that good? Okay, everyone, let's work harder to dig another hole.」

Shiki-san encouraged the already tired middle school girls, and took up the shovel first and began to dig.

Ah, her waist movement is really good. If she gets a bit more experience, she will become an outstanding digging expert.

Okay, it should be fine leaving the digging to them. Arisu, Tamaki, Mia and I separated to guys and girls, and took off our sweaty gym clothes. We used wet towels to wipe off our bodies' sweat, and changed into new uniforms in the storage. Although we do not know if the orcs can smell well, so we do not know how alert we should be but having some precautions is better than having nothing.

Then, the 4 of us formed the future elite party. A red circle appeared on Tamaki and Mai's little finger on their right hand.

「All of you should go and quickly level up, and then we will go to the white room to discuss.」

「Okay—— Roger——!」

Tamaki began to salute jokingly, while Mia just nodded.

「That, that, Kazu-senpai.」

「..... What, Tamaki. What do you need from me?」

「Can I use that giant axe?」

Tamaki pointed to the giant axe at the lounge in the Cultivating Centre. That is the weapon used by the elite orc yesterday.

「Do you really want to use it?」

「In the past a wiseman said, power is POWER!」(TL note: power is in japanese, while POWER was said in English.)

「Your English is very lousy right?」

Hmm— which is as long as you wield that axe, ordinary orc will not approach easily. Although I wish that Tamaki can be a bit more steady, but as long as she pair with Mia, I don't think she will be over reckless.

「You must protect Mia who is your kouhai」(TL note: Kouhai = junior)

「Leave it to me! I am a capable girl!」

She seems like she knows how to take care of others, so I decided to believe her self-recommendation.

The 4 of us trekked through the forest, moving toward the tennis ball field mentioned by Arisu.

As Arisu said, there are loud snorings from the storage room.

「Tamaki, Mia, the 2 of you stay here and wait for orders. Mia, if any orcs escapes —」

「I will use《Earth Bound》to stop them?」

「Yes, I will count on you for that.」

Mia’s comprehension is very strong, which makes me happy. I sent the crow to scout the situation inside the storage room.

「4 orcs, all sleeping.」

The crow used the voice that only I can hear to say.

「Humans?」

「None.」

I gave a sign to Arisu. Arisu took her spear, and dash into the storage room alone.

30 seconds later, Arisu walked out as though nothing has happened.

「Oh~ already defeated them? So amazing.」

Tamaki is shocked. Arisu took out the red gems that the 4 orcs transformed into, as proof.

「That, there are corpses inside...」

「We shall not bother with it for now, okay?」

Arisu hesitated a bit, but she still nodded. Although I also felt that the dead are very pitiful, but we really do not have the time to bury them one by one.

「We still need to defeat 4 orcs, then Tamaki and Mia will level up.」

As we have already become a 4 man party, the number of orcs that are needed to level up also increase by 2 times. Even so, considering the future situations, this is still worth it.

「Next where should we go?」

「The changing rooms are nearby, But I don't know if there are orcs there……」

From the result, there are also orcs at the changing rooms, and there are just nice 4 of them.

The orcs there are already awake, hence other than Arisu, I also sent 2 Puppet Golems with her, but the orcs seems to be completely annihilated by Arisu. One of the orcs tried to run away, but was trapped by the《Earth Bound》used by Mia, and finally it was killed by Tamaki.

「Ah, Level Up.」

Mia lightly mumbled. Arisu, Tamaki, Mia and I were sent to the white room together.

In the white room.

Tamaki's first movement, is to steal a look at Arisu's computer screen.

「Wah wah— This is Arisu's every details! Wa~ Arisu is really Level 5! So strong!」

Arisu looked at me, as though she has something to say.

Yes, the thing that Tamaki did is exactly what I did to Arisu yesterday. Arisu wanted to say, should be that Tamaki and I belong to the same type of people. I know. Sorry.

「Next is Kazu-senpai. Wah~ You are really Level 5 too!」

Argh, after all the computer did not mention any problematic records, so there is nothing to worry about upon being seen, so I did not mind it.

Tamaki surveyed the room.

「But, even if 4 people came together, there is still nothing here. Only the tables increased.」

「Yes.」

「How does it feel making love in such a bright place?」

I glared at Arisu.

「Sorry… Because she had used a misleading way to ask me, so...」

Arisu said so while blushing, at the same time shrunk away, as though feeling sorry from the bottom of her heart.

I peeked at Mia.

「I have learnt a lot.」

「I hope that you forget it.」

「If it is possible, I would like to learn from practicals.」

Mia looked at me with an obvious expression.

「I wish to accumulate some experience.」

「You don’t need those experience.」

「Lewd virgin, so what?」

I could not help but swallowed my saliva.

Arisu glared at me with her teary puppy eyes, and I quickly raised both my hand in surrender.

「Kazu-senpai is using his eyes to leer at other girls, well that can't be helped. As long as one is a healthy guy, of course he will do such stuff. I suggest you give up.」

Tamaki gave her a suggestion like a busybody.

Haha, this girl. I prepared to use my fist to knock on her head, and Tamaki immediately escape to behind Arisu.

But Arisu grabbed Tamaki's shoulders instead, and pushed her towards me like an offering.

「Please go ahead, Kazu-senpai.」

「Wah, Arisu, you traitor.」

I complimented Arisu「Good Job!」, and then lightly hitted Tamaki's head.

「Umm, ummm— but nevermind. According to my observation, Kazu-senpai especially loves breasts, so Arisu will definitely win.」

「Do you still want to continue?」

「I will not surrender under unreasonable violence!」

Tamaki raised her big thumb.

I sighed. Argh, this is better than being in low spirits from seeing the corpses.

That's right, just now in the changing room, there is also a male corpse. His chest

has been torn apart, and the neck is twisted in an unnatural direction. The reason why Tamaki behaved like this, maybe to redirect our attention.

Then again.

「Ah— hi, I say, shouldn't we begin our strategic meeting?」

I clapped, attracting everyone's attention.

It is about time to give them a sense of urgency, especially since the result of this meeting will concern our lives, so they should be a bit more nervous.

「Anyway, the 2 of you have already leveled up to Level 2.」

「But I did not do anything.」

Tamaki said it sarcastically.

「I am completely relying on Kazu-senpai and Arisu.」

「Next will be us relying on Tamaki, so don't mind it.」

「Hmm— Sorry, I shouldn't complain. Then, I just have to raise Sword Skill to Rank 2?」

「I raised Earth Magic to Rank 2.」

I nodded toward Tamaki and Mia, expressing my agreement.

「Is it fine with just the 4 of us entering the girls' dormitory?」

The 3 girls answered together「Yes」.

「The entries to the girls' dormitory are only the front door and the back door on

the other side?」

「Wah, Kazu-senpai is so clear about it. I don't suppose you have came here before to steal underwear?」

「Because from the outside, I feel that the structure of the girls' dormitory should be the same as the boys' dormitory of the high school section.」

「Oh, I see.」

Other than that, just now the places that the crow investigated inside the girls' dormitory, are the same as the second boys' dormitory of the high school section. Even if I who is the only one present that has never been to the girls' dormitory, I will not get lost even if i enter in. That's really great.

Intruding the girls' dormitory...

No, this sentence sounds too dangerous. I shook my head.

「Ah, you must be thinking about something dirty—」

Tamaki stared at me.

「Ah, what should I do with you—」

「Why do you look so happy?」

Ah, forget it. I shrugged my shoulders, and returned to the original topic.

「We will use the most basic way to fight. Arisu and I will create a distraction at the main entrance, then Tamaki and Mia will take this chance to go to back door, and if any orcs appear, just defeat them 1 by 1. Before entering the dormitory, I

hope to decrease the number of enemies as much as possible. If the orcs want to escape, you must do your best to stop them.」

But from our current experiences, it seems that no orc will directly escape without fighting...

「What if the elite orc appears?」

Tamaki asked.

「If it comes out from the main entrance, it will be handled by Arisu and I. Then I will call out, the 2 of you must come immediately. If it appears from the back door, then both of you should drop what you are doing and escape immediately.」

「Should I use《Earth Bound》to stop it?」

「I think it is better not to. Although we do not know the rules of the magic that are cast on the enemies, but from a game point of view, stronger enemies may resist it.」

「Resist?」

Arisu said while tilting her head. Ah— it's another game term.

「Which is that it may have resistance to magic.」

「I see.」

「Ah, Kazu-senpai, is there any magic that can increase that sort of resistance?」

Tamaki asked directly.

「Hmm— well. In Rank 1 of Support Magic, there is a magic called《Clear

Mind》.」

Mia gave a「Mu」sound.

「《Clear Mind》」... Synchro Tuner?

「What is that?」

Mia expressed「nothing」, and at the same time shook her head in regret. I am not clear not what does that mean, but it should have some link to a game, anime or manga. Forget it.

「Wait a moment, let me check.」

After Mia finished her words, she sat at her computer and typed. She entered a lot of questions, and asked in a very fast speed.

In this time, we just randomly chatted.

「Hmm, I roughly understand it. Under these few situations, magic will be ineffective.」

Mia categorised the attack magic of this mysterious skills system as such:
When casting magic against a single enemy, the caster must target the enemy. So as to say, if one cannot see the opponent, then he will not be able to cast magic.

If it is a Missile type magic, then the magic will fly straight towards the enemy. There are not auto-homing attacks. If the enemy is moving fast, then there is the possibility of missing the target. If there are obstructions in the middle, it can also hit it.

As for Direct type, the distance does not matter, it will activate in an instant, hence the opponent will not be able to avoid it.

Missile Type and Direct Type, are names that I created temporary. Until now, it is the process from activation of the magic until it hits its target. Next is if the opponent have the ability to resist it.

According to the different type of magic, the requirements to resist is also different. For example when casting Rank 1 Earth Magic《Earth Bound》, if the enemy raised his legs in the instant when the plants at the feet began to move due to the magic, then the enemy will not be restrained. Knowing that this magic is not 100% effective, Mia could not help but give a bitter expression.

《Clear Mind》can increase the resistance against mind magic that affects one mentally. The so-called Mind Magic, includes Rank 1 Wind Magic《Sleeping Song》etc. The others also includes magic that clouds one's heart. Other than that it is said that some monster have special abilities that are similar to these magic. So scary, so scary.

《Clear Mind》also has the effect of suppressing one's fear.

According to Mia, yesterday just by hearing the elite orc's roar, she and Tamaki were so scared until they were shivering.

Since you said it like this, perhaps it is really so. The reason why Arisu and I could still move freely, perhaps it is only due to being lucky. Or it could be that we have already been in the battlefield for a while, so we do not feel especially afraid.

Even if the magic is effective, he could still use a more violent method to escape the magic's effect.

With《Earth Bound》as an example, if the opponent is a hercules, he could even pull out the roots, and struggle free…… Seems like《Earth Bound》will be useless against elite orc.

Hmm, I see, I roughly understand it.

But, once you list out all the possible situation of being resisted, the advantage of《Heat Metal》becomes clear.

According to Mia's question, it is hard to increase resistance against magic like《Heat Metal》that is cast on objects. But《Heat Metal》is a type of missile type magic that gives off a light trail, hence it is still possible to dodge it…

No matter how strong the elite orc is, it will be hard for it to hold the burning hot axe and fight. Even if it did not throw the axe away, we should still be able to look forward to its movements becoming slower.

Ah, but—

「I suddenly realised, Mia, what if the enemy is holding a weapon with wooden handles...」

Mia and I gave an「Ah」sound, and looked at each other. As the axe that the elite orc was using yesterday, part of the handle is made of metal, so I neglected such a point……

「If the handle of the weapon is made of wood, then《Heat Metal》is useless.」

Mia lowered her shoulders in disappointment.

「We can only pray that the weapon of the elite orc is pure metallic.」

Yes— we both sighed.

「I should have guessed.」

「No, I should have guessed it...」

Ah, after the whole day yesterday, I feel that there is still no improvements.

Tamaki: Level 2　Sword Skill 1 → 2／Physical 1　Skill Point 0

Mia: Level 2　Earth Magic 1 → 2／Wind Magic 1　Skill Point 0

Chapter 21: Middle School Section Girls' Dormitory Raiding Battle

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 21

Chapter 21: Middle School Section Girls' Dormitory Raiding Battle

After the strategy meeting ended.

「Can I talk to Tamaki in private?」

Before we are about to leave the white room, Arisu brought Tamaki to a corner in the room, and the 2 of them began to talk secretly.

I wanted to know what they are talking about. I am really curious about it.

But, I can't eavesdrop right? Mia pulled my sleeve, as though she saw through my hesitation.

「There are secrets among the girls.」

I felt that Arisu and Tamaki's expression are very stern. Seeing that they will peek at my side once in awhile, causes me to feel even more curious.

「Then, let's have some secret talk between us too.」

「Like?」

「Arisu is sensitive behind the ears……」

Why do you know such stuff.

「When we are bathing that time, we had some body contact.」

「That is really an interesting topic.」

And then? I put my ear closer to Mia. But it seems that because I was too loud, Arisu came running over while blushing, raising her head and then looking at my angrily.

Arisu reached out without saying anything, and squeezed my cheeks.

So painful.

But Arisu who puffed her cheeks, is so cute, causing to burst out in laughter. Arisu's eyebrow frowned even more. I raised my hands meekly, showing a sign of surrender.

「I will exercise prudence.」

Although I do not understand, but I should apologize first.

Hence, Tamaki and Mia raised Sword Skill and Earth Magic to Rank 2 respectively.

Once we left the white room, we took actions immediately. What is different from the scouting before, is that there are 3 orcs looking around at the main door now.

Are they keeping guard?

But they are just standing there, and it seems like they are not especially alert. And they will yawn once in awhile.

Perhaps they were ordered by the elite orc, that is why they stood there. No matter what, what is different from dawn, is that the orcs are active now.

「The orcs moving outside have increased...」

Now it is already over 9am. It is only the matter of time that the news of the human survivors using the Cultivating Centre as their base is discovered by the orcs— I thought so in my heart.

Since that is so, we should take the chance to kill as many elite orcs as possible.

I don't know if we are considered lucky, that every building of this school is surrounded by thick woods, helping to cover the noise.

Especially the girls' dormitory. I don't know if it is due to the consideration of safety, but its position is much more hidden than the other building. Even if there are some disturbance, it should not be discovered by the orcs in the other building.

Because of this, I wish to take this chance to eradicate all the orcs here. We should decrease the number of enemies as much as possible to the best of our abilities.

I summoned 1 crow and 2 Puppet Golem, hence my greatest amount of MP decreased by 9, becoming 41.

Our party has 4 people. As the number increased, it is really too much to cast support magic on all my companions, hence I have to select.

First, me who is not on the frontline, should only need《Physical Up》that speeds one up, which is used for escaping.

What is cast on Mia, is《Physical Up》and Rank 2 Support Magic《Smart Operation》, it can increase attack power of magic.

As for Arisu, Tamaki and the 2 Puppet Golems, it is the usual 3 magic, which are《Keen Weapon》,《Physical Up》and《Mighty Arm》.

The effective time of《Haste》is very short, when my Support Magic is still Rank 3, it can only sustain for 1 to 1.5 minutes, and it will quickly reach the dilema of not having enough.

On the other hand, I asked Arisu to cast Rank 2 Healing Magic《Flower Coat》on the 4 of us, other than the Puppet Golems. This is purely an insurance. Although it is just for a peace of mind, it is better than nothing.

「Let's change the strategy slightly. First we defeat the 3 orcs at the door. The 2 at the main door, will be by Arisu and the Puppet Golem.」

「Yes.」

「I will leave the one slightly further to you, Tamaki.」

「Ah, hm, I understand.」

Tamaki held the giant axe which is bigger than her with 2 of her hands, and nodded with a stiff expression.

She swallowed her saliva with a guru sound, completely different from the lively look she had in the white room. Her teeth could not stop trembling, it seems that her first battle is making her very nervous.

Is everything fine?

No, I could only ask her to do her best.

「If there are any orcs which tried to escape, then I will depend on Mia to trap them.」

「Understood.」

「Arisu, go!」

「Yes.」

I said so to her at the instant when the 2 orcs near the main door of the girls' dormitory are nearest to us.

Arisu rushed out from the forest.

I let the Puppet Golems follow behind her. After hesitating for a moment, Tamaki also scream out as though encouraging herself, and then rushed towards the orc that is slightly distant from us.

Tsk, why did you scream.

Ah, forget it, after all, the sounds from the battle will eventually let the orcs in the girls' dormitory discover that there are enemies invading.

Perhaps it is impossible for her to not scream. This can't be helped, after all it is her first time facing an orc that isn't like a doll. When I first fought to save Arisu, I also completely lost myself. The me of that time should have also screamed. That is something that can't be helped.

Then Arisu?

I attempted to remember. How should I say this, I felt that she is exceptionally stable, or should I say calm. But, that is because Arisu is slightly special.

Hmm. Now that I think back, I discovered that she has been incredible since the very beginning. Especially mentally, she is even stronger in that. I must think of it this way, the others cannot be compared with Arisu.

Tamaki wielded the giant axe and rushed towards the orc.

This is different from Arisu's first battle, she has Rank 2 Sword Skill, as long as she battle normally, she should be able to achieve victory easily...

The axe that Tamaki swung down is slightly off the centre, and it only chopped its shoulder. The orc's right hand that held the sword is completely chopped off.

Blue blood sprayed out, covering Tamaki's face.

「Eek……」

Tamaki suddenly froze.

I could not see her expression, but…

The situation is not good. I stood up.

The orc that has its right arm chopped off went into a frenzy, and rush towards Tamaki, using its body to ram her. Tamaki who is unable to move, fell down just like that…

「Mia, use attack magic on that orc!」

「Understood.」

Although there is a risk of misfire in the chaos of the battlefield, but I am worried that if this continues, if Tamaki is pinned down by the orc, then it will be harder to assist her.

We must take the chance to kill that orc now.

「《Stone Bullet》」

The stone that Mia released, pierced through the orc's forehead beautifully.

But the orc did not die, it collapse forward, pinning Tamaki down.

Tamaki gave a shriek.

On the other side of the battlefield… Arisu killed the 2 orcs in an instant, she didn't even need the assistance of the Puppet Golems.

Hmm, Arisu is the same as usual.

What happens next is the real problem. Hearing the noise outside, there is a commotion in the girls' dormitory.

Oh shit.

Not only that Tamaki could not help, but she could even be our burden. The original plan was for Tamaki to defeat the ordinary orcs…

「Mia, the battle plan has changed, we will abandon the back door. You will stay here and await orders, and completely be in charge of support. I will go over to Tamaki.」

「Understood.」

Tamaki lost to the pressure in her first battle. But Mia who participated in the first battle, could remain calm, and that is very comforting.

「Kazu-senpai, the orcs are running out from the girls' dormitory! Ah, that, Tamaki she...」

「Arisu, you and the Puppet Golems will line up, and not let any ordinary orcs come over.」

「Yes, yes.」

1 orc rush out furiously from the girls' dormitory.

Arisu is receiving the incoming attack. I ran towards Tamaki, and observed the battle situation with the corner of my eye.

Tamaki pinned down by the fallen orc, and she completely sunk into confusion. She loosened her hold on the axe, and shrieked, and struggled. Although the orc has not disappeared, but it has already lost consciousness, unmoving.

This is the most troublesome situation. I took out a knife— that is just a normal survivor knife.

I stabbed the knife into the back brain of the orc, the orc spasmed for a moment...

Then it finally stopped breathing.

Its body gradually disappeared, leaving a gem behind.

「Tamaki, can you stand? Oi.」

I pulled Tamaki's hand, supporting her up.

Tamaki raised her head and looked at me. Big beads of tears fell from her eyes and even her snot are falling. Other than that, there is also a big wet patch inside of her skirt.

Hmm, that is really scary, and it is something that cannot be helped.

Tamaki hugged me, burying her head in my bosom, and began to cry loudly.

I gently caressed her golden hair, at a complete loss.

「Sorry, sorry, sorry, sorry.」

She kept apologising to me.

「Don’t leave me behind, please, don’t leave me behind.」

「Wait a moment, what exactly are you saying...」

Then, an opening music rang in my ear.

Huh? What?

I raised my head, and saw that Arisu took care of the orc that came out from the big door. With this, I leveled up.

Honestly speaking, we are really saved by this.

Chapter 22: Tamaki's Past

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 22

Chapter 22: Tamaki's Past

The 4 of us are sent to the white room.

That’s great, we are saved.

Honestly speaking, I really do not wish to engage in battle with the elite orc in such a scattered state. It is impossible to achieve victory like this.

In fact, I have already began to think about how to retreat. Among Mia’s magic, are there any that could be of use? Or perhaps using magic to buy some time……

Right, in this battle, we defeated a total of 4 orcs, coupled with those we defeated earlier……

I see, the elite orc that was defeated yesterday, is equivalent to the experience of 5 ordinary orcs.

Could it be that orcs also have difference in levels, and the levels will affect the experience values? Which is to say, elite orc is a level 5 orc, so it has 10 skill point, which is just enough to raise a certain skill rank to 4?

Is the elite orc’s skill Rank 4 Sword Skill? Or is it some「Orc Battle Tactics」that is unique to orcs, and it is the skill that reached Rank 4? This point is unknown for now.

If the enemies also have a Skill System, then it is probably the latter. Just based on increasing Sword Skill, it is impossible for it to have that brute power.

If the systems in this world is all about Level and Skills, then I should assume that there is a Skill called【Orc】, that can increase body size and power.

Although this sounds pretty fake. Wah~ this is pretty disadvantageous to humans……

No, actually that may not be so. From current experience, the orcs are mostly simple fools. Even if it is an obvious lure, they will still obediently drop into the trap, and would not call for companions.

For instance, if a Level 0 like me wants to win Arisu that is of Level 1, then even if I use traps, it will also be hard to win her.

Which is to say, her judgement power is very strong, she will be able to discover that it is a bait immediately.

If facing a ordinary orc, as long as there are suitable equipment and preparation, I feel that there should be a chance at victory.

Actually, although there are many times due to luck, but eventually I also won.

In simple terms, our advantage is that we are able to use the correct people in the correct places……

I tried putting it in such a manner to escape reality, but Tamaki who is crying on my chest did not change.

I do not think that is she is at fault. Thinking back, it was Arisu who was too good.

I have been using a wrong standard to look at everyone. During my first physical battle with the orcs, did I also feel like I do not want to experience such a thing again?

I lowered my head and looked at Tamaki who kept saying「Sorry, don't abandon me, please」.

Then I looked up with a troubled face, at Arisu and Mia.

The 2 of them are also crying.

Argh, that, actually it was me who wanted to cry…….

Tamaki hugged me with more strength, bringing me closer.

I patted her back like I was pacifying a kid.

「Calm down. We are already safe, okay?」

Tamaki and I sat on the ground together. Argh, more accurately, it should be she grabbed on my clothes, pulling me down to sit.

Probably because this girl raised Physical Skill to Rank 1, she is really strong.

Right —— I suddenly thought of it. Although there are Physical, Movement Skills, but there are no skills related to mental.

Even with weapon skills and Physical Skills, Tamaki's heart has yet to become a warrior.If battling with the orcs, it is fine if it is something like just now, the problem is what to do next…

「Arisu, that, do you know why she became like this?」

「Yes, I roughly know it.」

「Can you tell me?」

「That~ but, it is better to first...」

Yes, we have to let her calm down first. I lightly caressed Tamaki's head, she is different from Arisu, there are scents of mandarins. Or perhaps she had put on perfume before.

「Tamaki, don't worry. I will not hate you, or abandon you over such a small thing.」

That's right, I will never take the initiative to betray you. As long as you continue to believe in me, I will also trust you forever

But Tamaki continues to cry.

She could have some severe emotional wounds. There must be something in her heart, pressing her to grab onto me who is the leader, begging for my forgiveness.

A past of cruel treatment.

I don't think that this is a troublesome matter. I am the same as her, bearing a shadow of emotions scars. We are actually similar, as long as time permits, I am willing to understand her pain, and even assist in the treatment of her scars.

Finally, it could be that Tamaki is too tired, she fell asleep like this in my arms.

I pulled my legs in, and let her head lie on my thigh. After a while my legs will become numb, then I will have to ask Arisu to help me cast《Remove Pain》.

Tamaki shrunk herself like a cat, with her arms around my waist, and slept just like that.

Occasionally she will give a few moans, don't know if she is having nightmares?

Then saying, this morning I seem to have had a nightmare too . The feeling was

really bad when I woke up.

My past experience has always been bothering me, continuously breaking my heart. I believe it is the same for Tamaki.

I once again lightly caress her golden hair.

Tamaki who is in a deep sleep, began to give out satisfied sounds.

「Arisu, Mia, can the both of you sit down too?」

「Yes.」

「Hmm.」

The 2 of them bend their legs, and sat in front of me, which is the so called sitting posture of the girls.

「Okay, now please tell me. Why did Tamaki become like this?」

「Ah, this~」

Arisu hesitated a moment, and spoke:

「Before that, can you please agree to my request?」

「Of course. As long as you request it, and it is within my abilities, I will agree to anything.」

「That, that~」

Arisu swallowed her saliva, and gave out a「Un」sound, and nodded while clenching her fists.

Then she shaked her head……

Finally she looked into my eyes.

「Kazu-senpai, this is my request. If Tamaki is also willing, I wish for you to get involved with her.」(TL note: means getting in a relationship. and you know what happens next)

「Huh?」

I gave out a weird cry.

Ryuuki Tamaki is an adopted child. I have heard this matter from herself before.

Afterall she is a golden-haired Westerner with blue eyes.

「Tamaki was an orphan.」

She did not know who her parents were, she was abandoned before she knew anything.

It is said that there was a period, the upper society strongly promote to adopt and educate orphans like her. The one who adopted Tamaki, was a certain investor.

But her parents in the Ryuuki family, had very bad tempers. Although normally she was treated very well, but once something goes wrong, their temper will erupt. And every time they will scold Tamaki, saying that she is a useless child.

Like our family do not need you, you are a child that nobody wants, we wanted to adopt someone smarter.

「Don’t such people get eliminated when they apply to adopt?」

「Normally they are really gentle people…… It is said that they also looked very kind.」

Yes—— Some people are just good at pretending—— I thought so like it doesn't concern me. Actually, I, myself, was forced to have the determination to kill someone due to「people are just good at pretending」.....

「Even so, Tamaki still continued to work hard. She kept pushing herself, forcing herself…… overwhelming herself. Tamaki's character is just very straight, and serious, so she will keep on working hard until she overworked……」

Until finally—— that's right.

Her heart broke.

Her parents' expectations, become a heavy burden to her. She can't help it, and even had situations where she had short-term memory loss.

So, the Ryuuki Family threw Tamaki to this school.

They abandoned her—— Arisu said so.

「Kazu-senpai is a transfer student in the high school section, so you may not know, but actually this school is for those who are rich….. like『Ubasuteyama』.」
(TL note: it is a Japanese legend whereby it is a place where the old are abandoned so that they can die)

I see, this school had a middle school and high school section, is a world that is separated from the outside world.

To people who wanted to use a bit of money to send their child away, this is indeed a very suitable place.

「In other words, this school has a lot of people like her?」

「Actually I am too.」

Arisu shrugged her shoulders expressionlessly. I looked at her in shock, only seeing her give a self-depreciating smile that was different from her usual smile.

「Actually I am an orphan too. Although I did not have any high expectations desired from me like Tamaki, but my foster parents also had the attitude of『just send her to this school』. I did not have a very good relationship with my foster parents.」

「Arisu……」

「Ah, please don't mind it. My foster parents have already promised me, that they will pay for all the school fees until university…… And in the current situation, those matters have nothing to do with me.」

That's true.

I sighed, raising my head and looked at the white ceiling.

After all this is another world.

「Oh yeah, then Mia?」

「Normal family, normal parents, just that their children are a bit of a hikikomori.」

「Why did you say it until like it is like a background of a movie.」

「Because they are worried that their daughter is too much of a hikikomori, so as parents they decided to send her to this environment, where everything is controlled and there is no entertainment……」

Mia stared at the ceiling mindlessly.

「The worst thing is, the mountain of pornographic mangas that I hid behind the bookshelf was discovered by them.」

「That was when you are in elementary school?」

Mia gave a「Huh?」sound, looking at me in surprise.

「Such things should be very common nowadays.」

「Don't expect to seek my agreement. I know that you are currently at an age whereby curiosity dominates, but a normal person will not have『a mountain』of pornographic mangas.」

Mia turned and looked at Arisu, and Arisu shook her heading, blushing.

「Ah, forget it. How do I say this, in short I understand that you deserved it.」

「Hmm, I think so too.」

「Didn't you mentioned before, that your brother is also studying in this school?」

「My brother brought ero-game to school during elementary school, and caused a surge……」

This brother, aren't you too capable.

Such actions, will perhaps attract someone to him. Hmm, actually it may not.

Then again, these siblings are really incredible.

「What about Kazu-chi?」

「..... You have decided to call me like this in the future? Anything. I just managed to enter this school with my results. In the transfer exams for high school, the difference is also higher.」

But I did not expect the tragedy of being bullied, I felt regret at my high chances of stepping on a landmine.

But —— I lowered my head and looked at Tamaki who is sleeping soundly, and lightly caressed her hair, then an alluring scent permeates.

「Arisu, didn't you mentioned before, thanks to her optimistic character, then you managed to get friends?」

「Yes, that is real. When I just entered school, I also did not know that Tamaki was forcing herself. Until once, I just slightly gave her a cold shoulder, then she……」

「Became like this?」

Arisu nodded, expressing that she heard Tamaki's past from her at this moment.

「Tamaki said, once she thought that she had failed the expectations of someone she trusted, then she will break down. Normally she would be fine.」

「So saying, she….. had so much trust in me」

I only met Tamaki yesterday evening.

Honestly speaking, between us there are only the relationships with Arisu. I did not expect that she actually—— how should I say this, invest in so much feelings.

「It's my…… fault.」

Arisu lowered her head and said.

「I convinced everyone—— that the rest of the days, we can only follow Kazu-senpai, if not everyone will die.」

「Ah, you said that to everyone because you wanted to help me?」

Arisu nodded, saying that it was from yesterday.

「So everyone worked hard, hoping to be able to help Kazu-senpai……」

「..... Could it be that why everyone is willing to level up to Level 1, was also because of you?」

So when I was sleeping in the single room, the girls are in the room discussing such stuff.

That is really an unexpected assist.

Arisu, having such thoughts, made me really happy. Although I am happy, but hmm—— so there was actually such a reason why the girls are actually more obedient than expected.

「Ah, but I am not the only one, Shiki-senpai also helped to convince everyone.」

「That person?」

「Yes. Shiki-senpai said that Kazu-senpai is a person with high endurance, so if we need someone to trust now, then we should trust such a person……」

Is she trying to repay her debt? Or she has other schemes?

「Anyway, because of this, that is why Tamaki wished to satisfy my expectations.」

If she did not satisfy the other party's expectation, then she will be abandoned —— Once she thought so, then her feelings will flow out uncontrollably like a spring.

To her, what should I do……

「You have to put her at ease. You have to let Tamaki believe that, no matter what mistakes she made, Kazu-senpai will not abandon her.」

「If it is only that, as long as I spent time to convince her, it will be fine. Luckily when we are in this white room, there is as much time as we want.」

「In the past I tried to convince Tamaki, and tell her that no matter what she did to me, I am fine. I had even let her use a knife to cut my arm.」

But now, the wounds are already gone—— Arisu smiled and said.

What is the matter with this kid, isn't it too intense.

This was more crazy than I had expected.

「Then, Tamaki also wished for me to hurt her, and reached out with her arm... … So the 2 of us cut each other's body.」

But the wounds on her hands, also disappeared because of yesterday's《Heal》magic —— Arisu followed up.

「If inflicting harm is enough, then can't I just follow suit?」

「Tamaki and I have been together for a long period of time.」

Oh—— I see. Even for Arisu who have spent a long time with her, have to go through such an intense ritual, of course there must been an even stronger bond between me and her.

「So that is why you want me to get involved with her?」

「Yes.」

Arisu nodded nervously.

The issue has become troublesome.

I could only sigh.

Chapter 23: Arisu’s Gentleness, Tamaki’s Heart

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 23

Chapter 23: Arisu’s Gentleness, Tamaki’s Heart

I know that Arisu is the sort of person whereby once she has a certain thought, she will persist with it.

Which is to say, from yesterday, she has already shown her insistent character a few times.

I stared at Arisu for a moment.

「That…… Do you feel that we are very annoying?」

「Do my expression tell you that?」

「No, ah…… I was only thinking, if you feel that way, I have to apologise to you. If you have a bad impression of Tamaki because of me…... 」

Arisu said so depressedly.

Ah, most people should worry if they will be hated first.

But, of course I will not hate you. Because Arisu is my angel.

I felt very perplexed; not knowing what to say, I could only shift my sight to Mia.

Only seeing Mia widened her eyes, and shook her head in bewilderment.

「A harem is a man’s dream, isn’t it?」

「These sort of words should not be said by you!」

「Ah, if you want to do it, I will go to the corner and face the wall. You don't have to worry about it.」

「..... I said~」

「Honestly——」

Mia gave a thumbs up.

「We do not know when we will die? As long as we fail in a certain area, we will be raped by the orcs and then killed? Since that is so, of course we will think of presenting our first time to the handsome onii-chan that we are interested in. I can understand this sort of feeling very well?」(TL note: Mia is ending her sentence in a question-like manner, cutesy way. There is no equivalent that i can think of so I just left the ? as it is, think of it that way. onii-chan = guy(older) in this case. left it in for more cutesy effect!)

Who is the handsome onii-chan.

Ah, I guess other than me, there is nobody else…… What kind of nonsense is this kid saying with that serious face.

「Aren't we working hard to fight in order to prevent this?」

「Yes. To prevent that sort of thing from happening, so we have to convince Tamaki-senpai.」

I gave a groan, and glared at Mia.

Mia revealed her mischevious smile, and raise her flat chest. (TL note: Upvote as Mia for the best girl)

Ah, seems like this fellow feels that her words are very reasonable. Damn.

「Arisu, do you also feel that it's fine? Letting your boyfriend and other girls……」

「That, this is something I proposed……」

Oh yeah, that's true——

I grabbed and thought. Seriously, why did it come to this? This is weird, all of these are too weird.

「Anyway, we will wait until Tamaki wakes up then we will do our best to convince her first, what do you think? You will help me right?」

「.....Erm, yes, of course.」

Why does she have a look that seems to be lack of interest?

「Arisu, I don't suppose you like NTR……」

「N, NT? What?」

Ah forget it. I just brushed it over.

Mia was snickering at a corner. This damned fellow, I will really violate you.

Ah, I am just joking. Yes, I am not brave enough to say such things in front of Arisu.

「Ah—— ah, yes. If it is.. possible, that~ 」

Arisu said until here, and lowered her head.

What is the matter? Did I say something wrong?

Today, Arisu feels weird. Argh, actually I only got to know Arisu yesterday. I only felt that her thinking logic is a bit different from yesterday.

Also, I can't seem to tell what is weird. But I have this feeling that she has some plan, or tempting to test me……

But, I feel that she should not be trying to harm me.

I can almost confirm that that is not an ill intent. At least on this, I trust Arisu. To be more exact, I am trusting that she is still in love with me.

「Arisu, I want you to look into my eyes.」

「Yes, yes.」

「The words that you said now, are all for my own good, right?」

「Of course.」

Arisu clenched her fist, and looked into my eyes, and nodded firmly. Ah, I feel so happy.

But, since that is so, why did she propose this?

I closed my eyes. Since she already said so, then I will believe that she is thinking for me.

And I will not discuss whether it is good or bad to me,

I feel that she has some big misunderstanding.

Arisu is a very obedient, and straight girl, but at the same time she is also very foolish. The problem is that she does not intend on telling me how did this

conclusion come about.

No, forget it. Luckily I have a set of words that should convince her. If that does not work, then I will think of a new method then……

Anyway, we still have to wait for Tamaki to wake up first.

We chatted while wasting time.

Finally, Tamaki sat up with sleepy eyes.

「Fuuu?」

She widened her eyes and looked at me.

「Good morning, Tamaki.」

「Ah—— Good morning—— Kazu-senpai……」

When she realised it, she immediately left my side with flushed cheeks. Tamaki kept on waving her hands, and saying a bunch of ununderstandable words, and kept shaking her head.

Arisu came running over, attempting to comfort her.

「Ah, that, no, I, I, wah!」

Finally she grabbed her head and squat down. I sighed, walked to her side, and squat down……

I gently caressed her scattered golden hair.

「Tamaki's hair feels more comfortable than Arisu's.」

「Muu.」

It was Arisu who pushed me to do so, and yet she is puffing her cheeks in anger.

Seeing her getting jealous, I relaxed instead. Confirming the fact that Arisu still likes me, made me very happy.

I shall not bother about how Arisu thinks, because I should think of ways to pacify Tamaki who is in front of me.

「I…… am a useless person, sorry. Kazu-senpai, that, I……」

「Tamaki, just listen to me. First of all, I like Arisu very much.」

「Eh…. hmmm, mmm.」

Tamaki raised her head in suspicion.

After she realised that I am serious, then she nodded.

「I don't wish to do things that Arisu don't like. No, I will definitely not do it. You understand?」

「Mmmm, mm, yes. I believe Kazu-senpai is such a person.」

「Since that is so, then things are simplier. You trust Arisu, right? As long as Arisu hopes so, I will definitely not abandon you. This is simple logic, do you understand?」

Tamaki looked at me in shock, and kept staring at me, as though she want to see through me.

「Hmm—— is it hard to understand?」

「I understand, but——」

「What?」

「I betrayed Kazu-senpai's expectation. And even leak due to my fear, it is so shameful that I can't do anything.」

Tamaki shift her sight away.

I deliberately use a very gentle voice to told her to「turn here」.

「No, that is not, Tamaki.」

I looked in the blue eyes that are as deep as the ocean, and said.

「Listen to me, it will not go smoothly for the first time for everyone. When Arisu entered the battlefield for her first time, she also leaked. 」

「Eh?」

「Eh!? Wait, wait a moment, Kazu-senpai!」

Arisu reached out towards me, attempting to stop me.

Even her ears have turned red.

Mia was faster by a step. She pretended that it was natural and got behind Arisu, and restricted her hands behind her. A beautiful assist.

Ah, actually I do not know if Arisu did leak anot.

But~? Seeing her reaction…… Did Arisu just gave herself away?

「I have read in a certain book once, that in the 911 incident in New York, the

firemen all leaked as well.」

「Eh?」

Tamaki raised her head, a face in shock. Suu suu~~ she sniffed her nose.

「Didn't you hear that when one means a fire hazard, his strength will be greater than normal? When in a critical situation, humans can do some unexpected things.」

「Hmm, mmm, I have also hear such…… myths.」

「It is not a myth. Although I also heard this—— it is said that human will go into a hercules mode under intense state, this is a common knowledge in psychology.」

Tamaki looked at me in doubt, her expression seems to be saying「then so what」.

「But, such a mode in a fire hazard, will temporarily cut off the other functions in the body that has nothing to do with sustaining life. Because the human body will concentrate all its power in the place that needs it the most. The phenomenon of leaking, is because the strength of the bladder is used on the place where survival is needed.」

「.....Uh, so——」

Tamaki reached out and touched her skirt, and frowned because of the moist feel.

「So——」I continued in a serious face.

「Your reaction is very normal. There is no need to mind……. it is good that you mentioned it first. It must be had to suddenly leak. 」

「I did not leak.」

「It's fine, there is no need to feel bothered——」

「I already said, I did not leak.」

「Okay, no matter what, I won't mind, and I feel that 1 or 2 failures is also unavoidable.」

「..... Huh?」

Tamaki tilted her head, revealing a blur expression, then a hurted expression, and then a crying expression. That is really busy.

Ah, but, I think it is all my fault.

To have my revenge against that fellow, I have read many books regarding military and physical power, and now the efforts finally paid off. Although these knowledge has no use in my initial revenge plan, but at least it helped Tamaki who was in a state of confusion.

「Sorry, but regarding your past, Arisu has already told me about them. With this as a premise, I want to say —— I want you.」

「Wah, wah ah, meow, meow, meow!」

Why did she call out like a cat. But that is fine.

Also, I said it wrongly.

「I want your heart.」

Ah, it seems wrong to say it this way. Hmmm—— I groaned while pointing my

finger on my forehead.

「Uhh—— I will say it again. I want a comrade that will not betray me. Just like the trust between you and Arisu, if you are willing to trust me, then I will also trust you completely.」

「Uh, uh—— that~」

Tamaki placed her hands on her cheek, raising her heading and staring at me with a blur expression.

Ah, I told you not to take it wrongly. Just now, it was my fault, I said it wrongly. Don't think about it too much.

「Ah, I know you said it wrongly. But, eh, I am very happy.」

「Woah, that is good.」

「If a smelly girl who smells like urine is fine, uhh… then please take good care of me.」

「You really took it the wrong way huh?」

After Tamaki bowed to me, she grabbed my out-reached hand and stood up.

She stood in front of me and smiled.

「Can't I continue to take it the wrong way?」

「..... Your character is indeed great.」(TL note: MC is sarcastic)

Tamaki laughed with a "hehe", and turned towards Arisu.

Arisu had just told me that it was fine, but now she is staring at me angrily.

「He——he—— Arisu, what is it? Your expression seems like you had your boyfriend snatched away.」

Tamaki pushed her luck and patted Arisu's shoulder

「I.. I don't care.」

Arisu turned her head away indignantly.

I sighed and shrugged my shoulders……

All of a sudden.

Tamaki stepped towards me, and placed her lips on my cheeks.

The feel of the soft lips was only for an instant. Tamaki immediately moved away.

She is blushing, but her face had the smile of a prankster.

「Hehe, there is only this now.」

I used my hand to stroke Tamaki's cheeks, while looking at her.

I did not look toward Arisu, because I feel it will be very scary. I felt like there was a piercing look from that side, so I deliberately did not look towards that side, I will definitely not look over!

After all, all these are arranged by you, now what are you angry about!

Hence ——

I sat on the chair in front of the computer and sighed.

What should I do?

I once again began to think calmly. Tamaki is not someone special, or rather, it was Arisu who was too special. I realised this point again.

Argh, but thinking about it carefully, just how many girls can face an orc in a battle in the world, and also be completely fearless while challenging an elite orc?

Too difficult. Suddenly sending her to battle is too difficult. But if we do not let her get used to it, it will be troublesome.

Considering the future situations, if the vanguard that can face the elite orc is Arisu only, it is definitely not enough, there is a need for Tamaki to grow as well.

The reason why I am so insistent on Tamaki, is only because she has the passive of protecting Arisu. Against elite orc who is the representation of fear, the spirit of willing to sacrifice for someone, will become a big source of courage.

I wish to settle the position, as preparations for the future elite orcs that we will face.

But, how to break the stalemate……

「I guess we still have to sacrifice the familiars.」

I turned towards Arisu to seek her opinion, and I just happened to meet her eyes.

Arisu crossed her arms in front of her chest, and looked at me with an expression that is deep in thought.

「Ah—— what is the matter?」

「That…… Kazu-senpai, can't you just depend on us?」

「It isn't impossible, but how can I treat all of you as expendable shields? I feel that we need to increase some choice in battle tactics. To put it bluntly, it is how we deal with the elite orc that we are about to face?」

Actually the answer is almost out.

When fighting with the elite orc, Arisu will be the vanguard, and Mia will use magic to assist.

This is the basic pattern. The conclusion from the previous discussion is that, Tamaki's job is to defeat the other ordinary orcs.

The problem is this.

Tamaki seems that she is fine, but she is probably still forcing herself.

She should still need a bit more time.

Then, I will need to summon familiars that are stronger than the Puppet Golems.

I wish to use my own freedom in exchange for power.

Although I said so to Tamaki, but in reality, using familiars to battle, it is much easier than using humans to battle psychologically.

I felt so deeply.

Kazuhisa: Level 6 Support Magic 3/ Summon Magic 2→3 Skill Points 3→0

After pressing the confirm button, we return to the original place.

The final battle begins.

Chapter 24: Final Battle at the Middle School Girls' Dormitory

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 24

Chapter 24: Final Battle at the Middle School Girls' Dormitory

We returned to the battlefield in front of the girls' dormitory from the white room.

I confirmed the situation around us quickly.

Tamaki is still crying in my arms. At a few dozen meters from the entrance of the girls' dormitory, Arisu and the 2 Puppet Golems are holding their weapons. While Mia is hiding slightly further away in the forest.

This moment, a shivering roar echoed out from the girls' dormitory.

Tamaki hugged me tighter, and Arisu steadied her steps. I glanced that Mia, I don't know if it is because she is scared, she is sitting on the ground on her butt.

This is bad. At this sort of scattered situation, we had to battle the elite orc……

「Arisu, come over here! I will cast《Haste》on you!」

「B..but~」

「Don't care about the Puppet Golems!」

Just as Arisu was running towards me, the bronze coloured orc also rushed out from the girls' dormitory.

It's the elite orc. This orc which is bigger than the other orc, wielded its giant axe

effortlessly, and smashed one of the Puppet Golems in a blow. The Puppet Golem lie on the ground, disappearing from its upper body.

The other Puppet Golem used its rod to knock at the elite orc, but it seems to be completely useless.

Ah, this is also expected. I placed my hand on the hand of Arisu who was running towards me.

「《Haste》」

Arisu's body gave out golden light.

「Go!」

「Yes.」

The elite orc also smashed the second Puppet Golem.

In the next second, Arisu who is holding the metal spear, rushed towards the elite orc and stabbed the spearhead into its body.

The elite orc roared in rage, and shook its huge body left and right, sending Arisu's small figure flying.

The moment Arisu contacted the ground, she lightly spinned around and stood up quickly.

The elite orc rushed towards her.

Arisu who had《Haste》on her, steadied her steps, held her spear and thrust sharply at the elite orc's legs.

Fresh blue blood sprayed around, staining the grass. The elite orc's naked legs

suffered a heavy blow, and it once again gave a roar.

Although it did not seem to be of much use. But it had the effect of restricting it, it did not chase again. Arisu took this big chance, and put some distance between them.

Very good, she fully utilised the experience she got from the battle field yesterday, and battled at her pace. At least she gained a bit of time for us.

I decided to take this moment to summon new familiars.

「《Summon Gray Wolf》」

A wolf with long gray fur appeared by my side.

It has a pair of smart and clear blue eyes, its body should be over 1.5m. It looked at me, as though waiting for my instructions.

「《Physical Up》,《Mighty Arm》, 《Haste》.」

I cast support magic on this very intelligent familiar.《Haste》magic effect, caused its fur to turn golden. At this moment, 3 orcs came out from the girls' dormitory.

I lightly patted the wolf's back, and pointed at the newly appeared orcs.

「Get rid of them! As long as you can buy us some time, it will be fine!」

The golden wolf gave a howl and sped towards the 3 orcs that held either swords or spears.

It bit the shoulder of the foremost orc, and pushed the party down.

The 2 other orcs began attacking the golden wolf. The smart golden wolf abandoned the follow-up attack, and retreated by jumping back a moment

before the sword and spear attacks.

Thanks to the effect of《Haste》, the nimbleness of the golden wolf is far above that of the orcs. It did not force itself to attack, only playing around with the 3 orcs in its palm. (TL note: or should I say paws~)

The truth is, just by avoiding the attacks, the golden wolf has its hands full. After its first attack, it did not have any more chance to give the enemies any injuries. Then slowly, scratches appeared, and the golden fur began to split. I guess when the effects of《Haste》ended, it is also the moment when it dies.

「Tamaki, can you stand?」

「Hmm, mmm…… it is fine, I can.」

Tamaki's face is pale, but she still clenched her teeth and stood up. She stared at me and reveal a forced smile.

「After returning here, it is still wet. It had already dried over there.」

Tamaki looked at her lower body, and said while smiling sarcastically.

「You can take it that today you can just leak as much as you want.」

「I am gonna wipe it on your body.」

「I heard that in certain areas, that is a sort of reward.」

Tamaki smiled and said:「What's that, pervert.」. She used her trembling hand and held the giant axe again.

I touched Tamaki's shoulder lightly, and cast《Haste》on her. Tamaki's body scattered golden light.

「No matter how ugly or embarrassing it is, I will always be looking at you. Go defeat them!」

I lightly patted her back. Tamaki stepped forward and leaned back, nearly falling, she glared at me while turning back, as though she is protesting……

She quickly turned her body towards the front.

The girl swallowed her saliva.

「I am going to head out, look at me!」

Tamaki ran towards the golden wolf that was fighting with the orcs.

The golden wolf successfully attracted the orcs' attention. Tamaki sneakily went behind the orcs, and gave its defenseless back an attack.

The orc's body was splitted into 2 by the slanted attack, the wound sprayed blue blood, and it fell on the spot.

The 2 orcs left turned their heads towards Tamaki in shock. At this moment, the golden wolf took the chance and bit the shoulder of 1 of the orcs, and pushed it down.

The last orc recognised Tamaki as a strong foe, and turned towards her……

Tamaki gave a shout, and swung her axe at the 2nd orc. This attack that disregarded all the defense, beautifully split the orc into halves.

The orc's body fell on both the left and right.

Tamaki placed the giant axe down breathlessly, and stood at the spot, completely bathed in the orcs' blue blood. (TL note: gosh, this is kinda freaky if she ever becomes a yandere)

This moment, the golden wolf tore apart the throat of the 3rd orc that it had pushed down, giving it the fatal blow.

Like this, the ordinary orcs are all wiped out.

「Okay, well done!」

「Ah…… Kazu..senpai.」

Tamaki turned back with a pale face.

「A..am I of help? 」

「Mmm, of course.」

Tamaki said「that's great」, and smiled unnaturally.

On the other side, the battle between Arisu and the elite orc has already reached the climax.

Arisu barely dodged the elite orc's attack, and at the same time, maintained distance with it.

Although just now I was focusing Tamaki's side, but I also kept taking note of the chances to cast《Reflection》on Arisu, but I could not find any suitable timing.

It was indeed a coincidence yesterday.

The most crucial part of《Reflection》is the timing when casting it. If it failed, Arisu will get split into 2. To cast《Reflection》without certain psychological tactics, it does not seem to be easy.

Since that is so, before finding other methods——

「Mia! Mia, magic, you can do it!」

I shouted to Mia who is still hiding in the forest. The girl who was confused due to the roar just now, recovered and quickly got up……

She looked at me, and her cheeks blushed.

Ah, this fellow also leaked.

Well, this is something that cannot be helped. That roar, can indeed have a great effect on lower leveled opponents.

I suddenly discovered one thing. I should have first cast《Clear Mind》on everyone before the elite orc appeared!

Wah, this is my mistake. I already knew that the elite orc will roar, why didn't I make preparations first?

Okay, forget it. Later when we have a reflection session, I will apologise to everyone.

「Mia, can you cast《Heat Metal》on the elite orc?」

「Mmm, I can!」

Mia nodded, and stood up.

She stretched her palms out, and aimed at the giant axe that the elite orc is about to wield at Arisu.

「《Heat Metal》.」

A ray of dark red light shot out from Mia's palm, and hit the giant axe of the elite

orc.

The axe followed its ordinary trajectory and came down, and Arisu avoided the attack at the last moment, but she was blown away by the wind, and fell on the ground.

The elite orc attempted to gave chase, and hence grabbed the handle of the axe, thinking of bringing it up……

A scent of burnt meat came.

The elite orc gave a miserable groan, and let go of the giant axe in its hand.

「Arisu!」

「Yes!」

Arisu jumped, and at the same time, stabbed her spear at the elite orc.

Under the impressive presence, the spear stabbed into the enemy's defenseless chest.

This blow beautifully pierced through the elite orc's heart.

The elite orc's scream pierced the surroundings.

It moved back a few steps shakily.

Then fell to the ground, powerlessly.

The huge bronze-coloured body gradually disappeared.

Finally, all that is left is a blue gem that is like yesterday's.

「Ah.」

Other than me, the other 3 all shouted.

「Leveled up.」

We are transferred to the white room. With this, it seems the experience points are enough.

Chapter 25: Earth and Wind Magic in the White Room

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Chapter 25

Chapter 25: Earth and Wind Magic in the White Room

Mia used her hands to block the front of the skirt while blushing.

Hahaha, she is really a fool. By doing that sort of movement, doesn't it attract others' attention?

「That's great, Tamaki. You have a companion.」

「I do not feel happy! Kazu-senpai is super pervertic!」

I gave a low-classed laugh.

Then I turn towards Mia and walked towards her, while rubbing my hands together.

Mia moved back with tears in her eyes.

「Kazu-senpai, your interest are too pervertic!」

Arisu puffed her cheeks, and stood in between me and Mia.

She lowered her eyes, revealing a sad expression.

「I hated this sort of Kazu-senpai.」

「Sorry. I wouldn't be like this anymore, please smile.」

I honestly bowed as an apology. Arisu's angry look is so adorable, too cute.

But I hurted her heart.

「I know, so Kazu-senpai's weakness is Arisu!」

「Your weakness is Arisu right?」

「I lost! So we are the same.」

Tamaki laughed with haha. This fellow had also gotten her lower half dirty, but yet she is still so energetic.

No, even her ears are red, and her line of sight is deliberately avoiding me, seems that she is just forcing it to be less awkward.

I feel like teasing her, and make her even more awkward.

I desperately suppressed the surging desire, because Arisu is glaring at me.

「Ah, Arisu, you also leveled up this time?」

「.....Yes. Including me, other than Kazu-senpai, the other 2 also leveled up.」

I decided to change the topic.

Regarding the experience needed to level up, it is the same for Tamaki and Mia, and Arisu should need a bit more than them.

Using an orc as calculation, it should be about half an orc's experience.

…… This sort of calculation is so troublesome.

Let's assume an orc's experience is 60.

Why set it at 60? Because it is the smallest common denominator for 2,3,4,5 and 6.

So as to say, no matter whether the party is 2, 3, 4, 5 or 6 people, it is a number that can be divided.

My current level is 6.

In other way, the experience needed for my next level up is 420.

We are a 4 person party, so with every orc that we defeated, everyone can get 15 experience.

After the last level up, we defeated 1 elite orc and 3 orcs, hence……

The current experience is 120.

I should still need about 300 points to level up.

Arisu who just leveled up, her current experience is 0.

The experience needed to level up for Tamaki and Mia is 240, and their experience now is 30.

Mmm, we will use this method to calculate in the future.

Well we shall not care about this now.

「Arisu's skill point is 3 now? Should you save it, or use it to raise the Rank of Healing Magic…….」

「Ah, that, can I voice my opinion?」

Arisu rarely voiced her own opinion.

Currently any arrangement regarding to skills, Arisu left it all to me to decide, hence it is really rare for her to say so.

But I roughly know why she said this.

I have also checked many information regarding healing magic.

Hence, I roughly know what she is hoping for.

「In Rank 3 Healing Magic, there is a magic called《Cure Mind》. Even if you are so scared until you could not move after hearing the elite orc's roar, as long as you cast this magic, you will immediately recover. And……」

「If we meet any female survivors, you wish to cure their mental wounds. Am I right?」

「..... Yes.」

Mmm, what I just proposed should be Arisu's real thoughts. She could have felt that if she just said this reason, I may not accept it, so she thought of the excuse.

This fellow, actually played mind games.

But she is adorable in such a way too. After being exposed by me, Arisu who looked at me while blushing is extremely cute.

She is an angel. I could not help but caress her head, in the end her face gotten even redder.

Regarding the former, I thought about it in detail.

The biggest problem is that when elite orc appears, will Arisu have the time to cast《Cure Mind》on others?

No, I shook my head. If she had that time, Arisu should attack the enemy. Of course, I will cast support magic《Clear Mind》on them first.

When Tamaki grew up a bit more and have the method of dealing with elite orcs, then that will be different……

Although that is so—— I crossed eyes with Arisu. The girl in front of me placed her hands tightly on her chest, and looked at me with sorrowful eyes, awaiting my decision.

She saved Shiki-san yesterday, but even though she treated Shiki-san's injuries, Arisu felt helpless at her inability to cure her mental wounds.

Thinking about it carefully, actually I have always been putting the burden on Arisu. Because I can't understand the pain of the girls, so no matter what happens, I have to rely on her.

On this, although it is bad to say this, but Tamaki and Mia are currently unreliable.

Since Arisu said she need《Cure Mind》, then it means that it is a must—— that is the conclusion I made. Afterall me who is a male, is unable to understand the wounds of the hearts of a female.

「I understand, then you will raise the rank of Healing Magic.」

「Yes, thank you, Kazu-senpai!」

A smile like a flower was shown on Arisu's face. That smile was that pure, and just by looking at her expression, even I was dyed in her happiness.

Ah, so adorable—— I could not help but feel the edges of my mouth curling up. Tamaki and Mia are both looking from the sides, but I do not care.

Ah—— but……

The me now, perhaps will be unable to make decision calmly due to emotions.

Not good. The worst situation is that I will doubt my own decisions.

Hmm—— I am indeed not suitable to be a leader. I do not even have the capability to lead people.

Among us, the person who has such an ability……

I thought about it.

No, even without thinking, the answer is obvious. Indeed the person is Shiki Yukariko.
Without doubt, she has the talent of being the leader. Putting aside my personal feelings, and letting her be the leader in controlling everything, should be the best choice.

But——

Will I be willing to listen to her commands?

…… that is difficult.

I know that my attitude is twisted. Me who is unable to accept it honestly, may even become the cause of causing unrest.

Problems of the heart is hard to solve, especially those in mine.

Normally if I meet people that I do not get along with, I can just ignore them.

But now is not normal times, but war times.

With limited manpower, limited companions, limited ways. Under such situations, can I still make decisions based on personal feelings and likes?

「Tamaki, Mia, how do you wish to use the skill points?」

「I wish to keep them and quickly raise Sword Skill to Rank 3.」

「Should I…… raise Wind Magic, or keep it, and then raise Earth Magic to Rank 3? I wish to hear Kazu-chi's opinions, Other than that, if you can use《Summon Cloth》to summon a cloth, I will be glad.」

「Cloth?」

「That, erm…… cover.」

Mia's last sound was so weak until it nearly couldn't be heard.

This petite girl lowered her head with eyes brimming with tears.

Okay. I nodded.

She had wanted to use cloth to replace her clothes. I suppose that is right, if we are going to stay in this white room for a period of time, of course she will think of taking off the uncomfortable underwear.

I used《Summon Cloth》to summon a big piece of cloth and gave it to the 2 of them.

The 2 of them wrapped the cloth around their waist.

They took off their skirts and panties, hid it behind them and then sat down. Because I am scared that Arisu will get angry, so I tried to hold back from looking in their direction, at the same time think about what to do.

The rustling of the clothes kept distracting me, and I had to work hard to concentrate on Mia's suggestion.

Argh, right, the problem is about wind and earth magic, and should be on which one to raise.

「Mia did not even use wind magic once in this battle.」

「I had predict that if there is a need to escape, then I will use《Smog》.」

《Smog》of Rank 1 Wind Magic, is a magic that create fog in the surroundings. Just as she said, this magic has a great effect when escaping. Versi vesa, other than escaping, there is almost no use for it. If we have the infrared goggles used in military, then it will be different. Else even our vision will be blocked. If something happens because of this, then it will be terrible.

「Other than that if we need to do ambushes, we can use《Sleeping Song》to hypnotize the orcs.」

「I feel that Mia's current MP is too little, if we use MP on such magic, we might as well get Arisu to defeat them…… Moreover I was thinking of using the sounds of battle to attract the enemies.」

「In the future when I continue to raise my level and MP becomes more, then Rank 1《Sleeping Song》will be useful.」

Just like she said, among Rank 1 Wind Magic, there isn't any strong magic that directly attacks the enemy.

The 2 magic left, are《Air Blast》which uses strong wind to restrict the enemy's' movement, and《Soft Landing》which reducing landing speed.

I believe when they are used in correct timings, these 2 magic are very useful.

Just that in this battle, we chose other magic.

As for Rank 2 Wind Magic……

「If you want to focus on attacking, then《Silent Field》should be useful.」

《Silent Field》is a magic that is cast on a person or an object.

It can create a space where no sound will leak out.

When the target which has the magic cast on moves, the space will follow. The space is roughly around 3m wide.

As long as the entire party enters the space and move together, then we can move without sounds of footsteps.

Or isolate the sounds during battle, and do assassinations like assassins in period dramas.

「There is still the attack magic《Sonic Edge》right? But Earth Magic has attack magic too.」

「If we keep the skill point and use it to raise the rank of Earth Magic, then what are the magic in Rank 3 of Earth Magic?」

「There is a magic called《Earth Pit》that is very suitable for Kazu-chi, that is a hole digging magic.」

「That's it!」

I pointed my finger at Mia.

Mia could not help but lean back, and her lower body that was covered by the white cloth was nearly exposed.

「..... You wanted to peek just now, pervert.」

「Well don’t care about this for now.」

「Pervert.」

The 3 girls glared at me.

「Sorry.」

I lost to the pressure of numbers, and could only bow honestly.

「Okay.」

Mia raised her chest in a swagger manner. This damn fellow.

I coughed a few times.

「I guess, Arisu will raise her Healing Magic to Rank 3, and it is better for the other 2 to save their skill points first. After all your levels are too low, and now you should focus on 1 skill.」

Nobody objected. In the battle just now, both Tamaki and Mia clearly felt that their power isn’t enough.

The 2 of them gave a serious expression, as though saying they want to catch up to me and Arisu immediately.

「Then we will decide it like this.」

We returned to our ordinary world.

Arisu: Level 6 Spear Skill 3／Healing Magic 2→3 Skill Point 3→0

Tamaki: Level 3　Sword Skill 2／Physical 1　Skill Point 2

Mia: Level 3　Earth Magic 2／Wind Magic 1　Skill Point 2

I sent the crow in to scout first, while we carefully stepped into the girls' dormitory.

The first target is the cafeteria.

The stench that came, caused all of us to frown.

The tables and chairs in the cafeteria are all destroyed , and there is an empty space in the middle.

There are many naked girls piled up here.

About 50 people.

No, should be 50「corpses」.

The girls that are piled up here are all dead.

Arisu who walked in front sucked in a breath, Tamaki and Mia also remained at their spot due to the tragic scene in front of them.

「Everyone…… are dead?」

Tamaki mumbled.

「No.」

I shook my head.

Then I pointed to the wall, there are about 10 naked girls lying there.

Their chests all slightly moved up.

「They are still alive!」

Arisu gave a big shout and immediately ran towards them.

Bonus Booklet: Fire Magic and Water Magic

BIFMSMTK Volume 1 Bonus Booklet

Bonus Booklet: Fire Magic and Water Magic

TL note: There is no Japanese raws for this booklet, so skill names maybe wrong.

The second day afternoon after arriving in the other world, inside the white room.

Arisu, Tamaki, Mia and I formed a circle, and sat on the ground, discussing what kind of skill that we should obtain.

The biggest problem is the balance of magic.

「Ah. I already have Wind Magic and Earth Magic……」

In the skill systems, there are a total of 7 magic.

What I have is Support Magic and Summon Magic, Arisu have Healing Magic, the others include Fire Magic, Water Magic, Wind Magic and Earth Magic. In the party formed by the 4 of us, there is Fire Magic and Water Magic is still missing.

「From a game's point of view, even without Fire and Water Magic, we shouldn't get stuck.」

Mia who is a gamer hikikomori said so.

「But the premise is that all 4 of us are still alive.」

「No matter what, as long as a person is missing in a 4 person party, the situation will become tough.」

I shook my head. If we are considering that someone will be missing, and that we can immediately cover it up, then we must fill the members to the limit of the party, which is 6 people.

I was very clear about this point from the very beginning. But even so, the reason why I only chose Tamaki and Mia, and form a 4 person party, is because I want to level up as fast as possible, and grow to the point where we can defeat the elite orc we met yesterday with ease.

In this world, as long as you strengthen your skills, you can be infinitely strong. We should strengthen ourselves as priority, and be able to protect ourselves in any situation.

Even though I said so, I am also curious on why Mia gave up on Fire and Water Magic.

「Why did you choose Earth and Wind Magic?」

Mia looked at me with sleepy eyes, and smiled slightly.

「The best thing about Fire Magic, is about its firepower and its suppressing power. But in this party, there are already 2 vanguards, and there is still Summoning Magic, so I judged that the firepower is enough. And as for the suppressing power, we can replace it through Summoning Magic by calling out a lot of familiars.」

Her thoughts are very reasonable. Actually I hope that Tamaki can raise her Sword Skill as a priority, and focus on a Skill completely, becoming an even stronger vanguard than Arisu. Then, Arisu can retreat to become the center. While using Healing Magic, and supporting Tamaki, becoming a vice attacker.

And my familiars can support the parts that Arisu could not provide.

As for the firepower during battle, currently the only thing missing is our ranged attacks…… And Earth and Wind Magic can provide them to a certain extent.

「If there are doubts, we should discuss until we are all in agreement. Let's continue.」

Mia opened her notebook, and continue to write the magic's names.

「Wait, Mia. Why can you write out the names of the magic so smoothly?」

「I was troubled in the white room for a long while. Although I told you that I want to choose Earth and Wind Magic, but if there are better magic, I will change my decision.」

「You are talking about the time when you leveled to Level 1? How long did you stay in the white room?」

「Hmmm…… should be over half a day.」

「I didn't expect that you are so indecisive.」

「Because this is something that concerns about my life and death.」

「She is completely right about this.」

Mia wrote down the names and effects of the Rank 1 Fire Magic in the notebook:

◆Fire Bullet
Shoots fireball. Attack magic.

◆Light Fire
Lights a fire. Give me a lighter.

◆Flash
Flash light, something that can block the enemy's' vision.

◆Warm
Assistance, provide human warmth. Give me more clothes to wear.

Not including the unnecessary retorts, Mia arranged the information relatively well. I have also check the Rank 1 and 2 of the magics, and hence I am touched by her straight to the point expressions.

「From this, the only meaningful magics are《Fire Bullet》and《Flash》which belongs to attack magic.」

「That's right. Even if there are magic that can replace the lighter, it is useless.」

「Mmm.」Mia nodded.

「If you also wrote Rank 2……」

◆Firework
Every Rank can release 1 firework. Attack magic.

◆Ghost Fire
A fire that floats in the air. Give me a torch light.

◆Flame Sword
A fire sword will grow out from your hand. Can be used for physical fight?

◆Resist Fire
Can resist fire.

「This has《Resist Fire》, which is a lesser magic for《Resist All》in Rank 4 of Support Magic.《Resist All》 can allow party members to have the resistance against 1 of the attributes. In the magic of all the 4 attributes, there is the lesser

magic in the Rank 2 of the skill.」

「Right. But my Support Magic is still far away from Rank 4.」

「As long as we kill orcs in large amounts, then it will be fast. Roughly within today, you will reach Rank 4.」

Hmm, if we use the current speed to kill orcs, perhaps that will be true.

「The most important magic in Rank 2 is《Fireworks》. This magic is very strong. Not only can it target, the range is also very far. It has a lot of good points. The other 3 attribute almost do not have such a convenient attack magic like it. At least not within the lower Rank.」

Mia explained it passionately. Oi, isn't your stand against Fire Magic?

「But only this magic is like this. Like I said just now, I don't put importance on attack. Since so, I judged that there is no need for Fire Magic now.」

「I see. Within Fire Magic, there isn't much convievent magic……」

「If you raise it to Rank 5, then there is the restraining magic《Flame Bound》and light healing magic《Fire Heal》. But in the current stage, even if we look so far into the future……」

「It is also useless. Yes, Rank 5 need 15 skill points, even if we all concentrate on focus on it, you will also need to raise until Level 8.」

「To survive until Level 8, it is better to have convenient magic like Earth Magic and Wind Magic.」

Her words are really convincing.

「Next is Water Magic.」

Mia listed the content regarding Water Magic in her notebook.

◆Rainwater
Summons water. Dredged.

◆Poison Needle.
Poison Needle. Attack Magic.

◆Ice Film
A film of cold air. Can be used as air conditioner?

◆Swim
Swim. Let me swim by my own.

「As you see, although《Poison Needle》is an attack magic that can release poison needle……」

「But that is a poison that cause the enemy to be paralysed, and it need about 10 seconds for its effect to show. When I realised this, there is a sort of despair feeling.」

「Hmm. Before the poison spreads to the orc's whole body, we will die first.」

We do not have that sort of time. If it is against the elite orc, perhaps it will have some meaning…… But will this be effective against the elite orc?

「《Rainwater》is a good news to farmers who lack water.」

「In other words, it is completely useless to us.」

Tamaki sighed. Arisu also nodded to express her agreement.

「And if we need water, Kazu-senpai can use summoning magic to conjure

some……」

「That's right. If it is battling at the lakeside or seaside, then《Swim》will be convievent.」

「But there is no lake in this mountain.」

There is at most the swimming point. This magic is really too hard to use.

「Anyway I also wrote down the Rank 2 magic.」

Mia continued to write fluently on her notebook.

◆Acid Burst
Shoot strong acid. Attack magic.

◆Ice Sword
Grows an ice sword from your hand.

◆Breath in Water
Able to breath in water.

◆Resist Ice
Opposite of fire magic.

「《Acid Burst》which belongs to attack magic, is a useful magic, only that its range is not too far, and that it can only reach 5 to 6 meters away.」

Splashing acid is a very scary thing. But if you really want to say it, shooting fireworks is also scary. But in terms of attack magic, there is this sort of feelings.

「As an attack magic,《Acid Burst》useful region seems to be wider than《Sonic Edge》of Rank 2 Wind Magic. From this angle, it is actually not bad.」

Mia's opinion is very unique, it has the irritating feeling. But, Rank 2 Earth Magic does not have attack magic, so there is always better to have rather than none……

「The problem is other magics. If there is no need for a physical close combat, then there is no need for《Ice Sword》. As for《Breath in Water》..... If there is a lake, then it will be useful.」

「So the main point is here. In this terrain which is situated in the deep mountains, there is no way to completely showcase the full might of Water Magic.」

Mia nodded to express her agreement.

「Right, do you still need me to say about the other magics?」

「Next time.」

I shook my head at the happy Mia, finally ending the discussion this time……

I pressed the confirm button on the computer, and left the white room, returning to our battlefield, continuing our battles.

Illustrations

Volume 2 Complete Illustrations

「わたしは悪でいい。
あなたたちの綺麗ばかべて、
わたしが引き受けてみせる」

Chapter 26: Search in the Girls' Dormitory

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 26

Chapter 26: Search in the Girls' Dormitory

Arisu used Healing Magic on the girls who luckily survived from the orcs' attack.

First is《Heal》, then its《Cure Mind》. The eyes of the girls which only held despair initially, gradually regain its life. Casting these magic costed a lot of MP, but this is also something that can't be helped.

「Tamaki, Mia!」

Seeing Tamaki and Mia standing blankly on the spot, I patted their shoulders. At these timings, it is better to give them things to do, no matter what it is.

「We should take the time to investigate the surroundings now.」

There shouldn't be any more elite orcs appearing, and the orcs here should have all been defeated by us. But even if so, we should not let our guard down.

I left this area to Arisu, and brought Tamaki and Mia to investigate the first floor with the wolf. The corridor is silent, and we looked into each room one by one.

A few doors are locked, but there is no need for courtesy. We used Tamaki's axe to break the door and entered to investigate.

「Ah—— right, where are the 2 of your rooms?」

「Arisu and my room are over there, just beside each other.」

「Hmm, my room is on the 3rd floor.」

After I thought about it, I instructed Tamaki to return to her room to change.

「Tamaki, help pack some stuff for changing for Arisu. Then search the other room, and find clothes that the girls in the cafeteria can wear.」

「Understood, we can't let Arisu stay there alone for too long, leave it to me.」

「Mia, you will follow me, let's go to Level 3.」

As long as the familiar wolf is around, there should not be a problem with the guard. Even if a surviving orc is hiding above, the sharp nose of the wolf will detect their presence—— this is what I had thought about.

The narrow corridor can't let 2 orcs walk side by side, as long as we can delay them for a while, then there is time to summon another wolf. And we can have Mia to use magic to support me.

And after summoning magic is raised to Rank 3, I learnt a new skill《Cure Familiar》, which can fully cure the grey wolf's wounds. Rank 3 summons will exhaust the greatest MP value by 9 points, hence as compared to re-summoning, curing familiars and re-using them maybe more efficient.

After splitting ways with Tamaki, Mia and I walked up the stairs. Luckily the enemies seem to have all rush out, there is no signs of orcs inside.

Level 2 and 3 are filled with sounds of buzzing of flies, painful to ears. They probably found corpse, that's why they gathered. We walked Mia's room which is on level 3 first, and let her change.

「Do you want to peek on me while I am changing?」

「No.」

I waited with wolf outside the room, I squatted , and the familiar wolf sat beside

me like the loyal dog Hachiko. Whoo whoo, it seems to be a smart kid, I caressed the grey fur on the wolf, and it closed its eyes in comfort. Oh man, this fellow is really cute.

「Do you want the stained panties?」

Mia's voice came from inside the room.

「No, throw it away, you should have many clothes for replacement in there.」

Mia stopped for a moment.

「hmm, that's right, I will choose something suitable from my roommate's wardrobe.」

I said it wrongly. To my carelessness, I could only groan in frustration. That sentence is as though saying that all her friends are dead. I pressed on my mouth, covering my groan.

「I don't mind.」

Perhaps because of my breath, or perhaps of other reason, Mia discovered my movement. She suddenly open the door, and pushed her head out.

「Actually I am clear that my friends, classmate, and teachers are most probably dead, only I am luckily enough to survive.」

「That is not certain.」

「It is better to have mental preparation. It's fine, I have already finished crying last night.」

Mia patted me, on my shoulder, who is squatting down, thinking of letting me be at ease.

「Last night, Shiki-senpai said to do so, and everyone cried together in the girls' room.」

「Shiki-san huh……」

Mia responded with「Hmm」, and nodded.

「She said if we want to cry, we should do it now. So if Kazu-chi has yet to cry, then I can lend you my chest.」

As Mia said, she puffed her flat chest.

「Although it is not big enough to give people comfort, but I can still lend it to you.」

「Self-sarcasm is your forte?」

「Be careful that I will let you eat stained panties.」

That is a reward to people with certain hobbies, but I do not feel happy about that.

And I do not a roommate that I am close enough to mourn his death, and I even hope that all the people will die. Ah—— but……

Revealing everything about myself now will make me lose face, so why not just say something to tide over. That's right, hmm.

「If I want to cry, I will cry on Arisu's bosom.」

「It is indeed better to have huge boobs right……」

At least change that「huge boobs」to「lover」.

Before Mia finished changing and organising simple luggages, I left to check the rooftop. I do not wish to let Mia see that tragedy there.

The 6 corpses on the rooftop is surrounded by large amount of crows and flies. After confirming that there are no orcs, I returned to level 3, and shut the door to the rooftop.

This moment, Mia also carried her luggage and walked out from her room.

「Let's go, Kazu-chi.」

There is no sign of sadness in her expression. Although her eyes are a bit swollen, but due to the dim in the corridor, so I could not see properly. Perhaps she cried again just now.

But just as she said, we should cry while we can, perhaps that is also a good thing. At least in our current situation, I thought so.

「Then again, Mia, why did you deliberately change to bloomers?」

Mia is dressed the same way when she is digging a hole as she left her room——PE shirt and bloomers.

「This is brought over from the Cultivating Centre, everyone had a part in it.」

「Sorry, I do not know where to start retorting.」

We followed the sequence and checked the rooms on level 3, and found 2 bodies in a certain room. Mia looked at the bodies quietly, and mumbled:「Sorry, I will return again」.

「You know them?」

「They are my classmates.」

Mia's expression did not change, but her hand that is holding the luggage is trembling.

I did not ask her relationship with the 2 person…… No, I could not ask.

As responsibility, we search all the rooms on level 3 once.

According to Mia, the girls who are staying on level 3 are all Year 1 students from the middle school section. She also expressed that other than her own class, she did not interact much with the other students. Hence it is better for me to just search by myself? But Mia is a person who stay in this dorm, so perhaps there are only some stuff that she will know.

「Next is level 2. Level 2 is the rooms for Year 2s, I do not know people from Year 2.」

Oh—— I nodded. After ending the search on level 2 and 3, we return the cafeteria, without being attacked by any orcs.

Tamaki had already changed her clothes and returned. Her top half is PE shirt, and her bottom is the same bloomers.

「Why even Tamaki is also wearing bloomers……」

「I gave it to her just now.」

Mia whispered. Oi, you.

Tamaki is crying while sitting down, it seems that she discovered a few familiar faces in the corpse pile, while Arisu is silently continuing to treat the survivors.

「Sorry, sorry, Arisu. Just awhile more, let me cry a bit more.」

Tamaki used PE shirt that she had just changed into to wipe her ever flowing tears.

Arisu remained silent, without an expression, as though she is wearing a mask, continue to cast《Heal》and《Cure Mind》. I brought over blankets from the nearby rooms to cover the bodies of the girls who have been treated, they remained powerless. If only we could have done this earlier.

The girls who survived after receiving Arisu's treatment amounted to 10. Their bodily wounds are healed with magic, their mental shock are reduced due to the effect of magic. Even so, no one could stand up immediately. Although magic can heal the wounds, but it can't replenish their strength.

Forget it, after all we predict that it will become like this. I gave instructions to Tamaki who have recovered and Mia who was holding luggages with both her hands at the cafeteria entrance:

「The 2 of you hurry back to the Cultivating Centre, and bring 5 people here.」

「I know. But, let me go by myself. I will return immediately, Mia will stay here.」

It's too dangerous for a person—— before I could say it, Tamaki rushed out, without even bringing her giant axe weapon.

Ah ah, that fellow is really! I could not do anything, but order the familiar wolf to go and protect Tamaki. I order it to wait near Tamaki, and if orcs appear, engage them.

My smart and adorable pet woofed as an expression of understanding the order, and chased after Tamaki.

「We will bury the bodies some other day. According to this situation, the

buildings are likely to have other survivors, I wish to save them as fast as possible.」

「Yes…… You are right.」

The moment when she stood up, Arisu's legs suddenly gave way.

I ran up to support her quickly.

「Sorry.」

「Thanks to you, these 10 people could survive, you should be proud.」

「But…… my friends, a few of them already……」

This huh—— I nodded. Hmm that's right, such stuff are bound to happen.

Since that is so, even if you behave a bit more sorrowful, it is fine. Express all your feeling—— I wish to say that……

But Arisu is very clear, no matter how sad she is, the dead will not return. The correct choice is to save as much survivors as possible, that is probably what she believes in.

But I don't feel that it is good to just purely increase the number of survivors. The Cultivating Centre is our gathering point, if the number of people defending there does not increase to a certain number, the future activities like this will be in trouble. But once the number increased too much, it will result in a fight between groups.

At the same time, I also feel that we should destroy the gathering points of the orcs, eliminating the enemies. What if the surviving orcs all attack the Cultivating Centre together, we will not be able to defend it. Before things develop to that, we have to think of methods to solve it.

Well it is just thinking, no matter what, I do not have much MP left.

Arisu's MP should be almost finished due to the healing. Arisu is still fine, but my MP is linked to my combat ability. I wish to bring them back first and rest.

Mia looked around the rooms in level one, and gathered clothes for changing in a few plastics bag back in a trained manner.

「Sorry for troubling you.」

「No, it is better for me to do something to calm myself.」

Mia finished her words, and pass the clothes to Arisu. Indeed it is PE shirt and bloomers, I am already too tired to retort……

「Mia, sorry, can I trouble you to go to the kitchen and find stuff like choppers.」

「Okay——」

Mia ran out of the cafeteria as though she is escaping.

Even though her steps are not steady, Arisu still returned to her room and changed into her PE shirt and bloomers.

After 20 mins, Tamaki returned. She followed my instructions, and brought 5 people over.

Shiki-san is also among them. Other than her, other 4 middle school section girls also witness the tragic scene, and stopped their breath, and then cried. Shiki-san slapped those girls' cheeks.

「I know that you all are in pain, but protecting the survivors are the most important thing now. We do not know when the Cultivating Centre will be

attacked, hence we cannot leave it too long.」

Shiki-san scolded those blur girls that came from the Cultivating Centre to help, and I cast《Mighty Arm》on them, to let them use their shoulders to support the girls. After all even though the victims underwent treatment, they are still powerless, causing them to weigh very heavily.

Luckily among 4 of the girls that were rescued, expressed that they can walk on their own, and stood up shakily. They supported each other's shoulders and walked.

「Although I am still not clear on the situation——」

Among the survivors, one of the girl with ponytail said. She used a cloth to wipe her hair that was stained with orc fluids, because of the sticky feeling, she frowned and looked at me.

「But there is no time, right. Since so, we will do our best to not become your burden.」

I only said「don't force yourself」, and chose to respect their will. Although we should at least let them wash with water, but as I expected, the tap water in the girls' dormitory cannot be used. Probably because of the earthquake, causing the water pipe to have problems somewhere.

「Then, Gaya-san, let's go.」

Shiki-san supported a girl each on both her shoulders respectively, and because it seems tough, I suggested to help, but I was rejected with a「You can't」as the reason.

「Your responsibility is to protect us during attacks when we are on the way back, isn't it?」

「Ah, that’s right.」

I felt that the initiative has been taken away. But her orders are very well-thought, nothing to complain about.

We retreated from the girls’ dormitory quickly and returned to the Cultivating Centre.

Just as we are about to reach the Cultivating Centre, the wolf familiar’s ears suddenly stood up.

Shiki-san carried the girl that we rescued, and walked slightly forward. At the same time, she stopped and turned back. I remember Shiki-san got the Detection Skill, in other words——

「Gaya-san, there is sounds of battling from the front.」

Shiki-san expressed in an urgent voice.

「The Cultivating Centre has been attacked by the orcs.」

Chapter 27: Defense Battle at the Cultivating Centre

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 27

Chapter 27: Defense Battle at the Cultivating Centre

Because there are 9 people gone among the 11 people, so currently the Cultivating Centre only has 2 people guarding it. Under the situation of limited combat power, how much time can they buy under the orcs' attack?

Before leaving the Cultivating Centre, I had instructed everyone to dig hole around the surrounding in front of the main door. Due to the moat-like holes, the enemy's' invasion path is restricted.

Even so, there is no time for us to hesitate.

「Arisu, Tamaki, Mia, follow me. The rest of the people will be commanded by Shiki-san.」

The moment I finished, I cast《Physical Up》on my party members, and head towards the Cultivating Centre ignoring Shiki-san's protest, now we cannot even waste a second.

Initially I was quite rejected on giving command to Shiki-san, but now I was quite decisive, ignoring the knots in my heart. That sort of boring thing can wait until the battle ends.

My familiar wolf and I were at the foremost, and the sounds of footsteps from behind is enough to know that Arisu and them have caught up.

I let the wolf head over first, not forgetting to instruct it—— to help the girls who are protecting the Cultivating Centre when they are in danger.

The familiar wolf increased its speed, and its grey shadow immediately disappeared into the forest.

Even though I sent out my familiar, I did not stop running. Not long, I began to hear sounds of swords clashing.

I remembered that the skills of 2 person protecting the Cultivating Centre are Spear Skill 1／Support Magic 1 and Spear Skill 1／Fire Magic 1 respectively. The reason why they chose Spear Skill is because of my recommendation to use weapons with long reach.

I had read a piece of news before, the content is regarding a competition between a girl with a knife and a guy with a sword.

In the martial arts side, the difference in the strength of the male and female is apparent. But girl who was a champion with the knife, is able to fight to a draw with the guy who is a kendo champion, that is how the new report said.

From this, it can be seen that the attack range of the weapons is very crucial.

Arisu had used the attacking range of the spear skillfully yesterday, and made herself one step before the orcs, attaining the edge in the battles.

So even if both of them are level 1, as long as they support each other carefully, they can still handle 2 or 3 orcs…… That is what I had hoped.

After passing through the forest, my vision widened.

20 orcs and above are gathered around the surroundings of the Cultivating Centre.

As there is a big hole in front of the main entrance, hence the orcs split into 2 teams, approaching the main entrance of the Cultivating Centre from the left and right side.

The 2 girls stood at the entrance of the main door, and fought back to back desperately to prevent the orcs from invading.

Luckily the orcs did not have anyone holding a spear. The weapons' attack range is effective, and they managed to prevent the enemies from getting near.

But even that is reaching its limits, one of the girls lost her balance because she could no longer hold on.

Seeing that she is about to fall, the orc which was holding the sword, took the chance to close the distance……

At this moment, my familiar wolf entered the battle.

It crossed the moat with a jump and pushed the orc that is about to attack the girl, the orc and wolf then fell into the hole.

Hmm, well done! I stopped and gave praise.

「Kazu-senpai!」

Hearing Arisu's call, I quickly pat her shoulder as she ran past from behind……

「《Haste》」

Golden light surround Arisu's entire body, and increased her speed. Holding her spear, Arisu thrust at the group of orcs on the left side.

She stabbed at the heart of the orc from its back. Suffering Arisu's blow, the orc fell with a groan. The orc group then realise that there is an attacker from their back, and are in a panic.

「Kazu-senpai, kazu-senpai, help me cast《Haste》too!」

「No, Tamaki you will stay here and wait.」

「Huh——Why!」

「Your role is to protect me and Mia. Mia!」

「Hmm,《Sleeping Song》!」

Rank 1 Wind Magic《Sleeping Song》is a magic that can cause an enemy to fall asleep. But it is also stated that if it is not done well, the target will wake up when it falls on the ground.

Mia cast《Sleeping Song》repeatedly on the group on the right side, and the orcs behind the group collapsed one by one.

Even if the orcs hit the ground with their heads after they suffered the magic, they still gave off the breathing sounds of a sound sleep.

On the other hand, the orcs in front are concentrated on the girls defending, completely did not discovered the abnormality behind.

「Say, isn't this magic super strong?」

I could not help but whispered. Mia shrugged her shoulders.

「Hmm, the orcs are…… then I imagined. 」

「More stupid.」

Since that is so, we do not need guards.

「Tamaki, give the sleeping orcs the final blow.」

「Understood, leave it to me!」

Tamaki ran to the right side where the fallen orcs are, and swing her giant axe down. No matter the target is the body or the head, Tamaki's strike is strong enough to kill the enemies in a blow.

These orcs could only gave a groan and then turned into gems.

On the other end, Arisu, who in among the orcs that are gathered on the left side, is in a tough battle.

Seeing that 6, 7 orcs gathered in Arisu's surround, she is already tied with just restraining them.

Even if it's Arisu, being surrounded is dangerous, I wish to summon another wolf to help her.

After the continuous battles, I don't know if my MP left is enough.

「Mia, how much MP do you have left?」

「Still okay, enough to help Arisu-senpai.」

Mia cast《Heat Metal》.

The orc facing Arisu threw its weapon down. Noticing the moment that they become defenseless, Arisu gave a fierce strike. The vital points like the heart and throat are pierced through, and the orcs died one by one.

The 2 girls who are defending near the main door, regained their spirit because we entered the battle. The girl who know fire magic saw her chances and cast Rank 1 Fire Magic《Fire Bullet》to attack the orc in front of her.

The fire bullet hit the orc's face, burning it, and it fell painfully into the hole.

The girl discovered that the magic is effective, and casted《Fire Bullet》continuously defeating 3 orcs. The orcs behind noticed the situation, and began to retreat a step back.

The girl noticed the chance and decide to cast《Fire Bullet》again……

One of the orcs deliberately fell into the hole, and then climbed up the wall that is closer to the Cultivating Centre, thinking of using the sword to hook onto the leg of the girl.

Shit. I immediately had the crow on my side fly over. The orc with 1 hand on the wall and the other hand holding the sword, is pecked on the head by the crow, and it fell into the hole again with a groan.

「Watch the edge of your foot!」

「Ye.. yes! Thank you, Kazu-senpai!」

Ah, she called me Kazu-senpai. But for names, anything is fine.

Mia even called me「Kazu-chi」.

The leftover orcs, one of them is finished off by another girl with a strong stab. The other orcs are killed by Arisu, Tamaki and my familiar wolf.

The fighting spirit of the orcs finally collapsed, the few surviving 5 or 6 orcs escaped into the forest.

「Tamaki, Arisu, give chase! But do not force yourselves too much!」

Although it changes to a chasing battle, but the opponent escaped into different directions this time. As for my wolf…… I looked into the hole and saw that the 4 legged it, was in a tough situation because it was hard to climb out of the hole.

Ah, this is something that can’t be helped.

One of the orcs was caught up by Arisu when it had just entered the forest, she use the spear to stab at it fiercely. The dying groan echoed through the air, and Tamaki and Mia also leveled up at the same time.

◆ ◆ ◆

We entered discussion in the white room. The result after discussing, Tamaki raised Sword Skill to Rank 3, while Mia raised Earth Magic to Rank 3.

But the important thing is what to do next. There are about 3 orcs which escaped into the forest, should we give chase? I looked at Arisu and Tamak, both of them looked a bit tired. Even if that is so, as long as I give the order, they will still chasing after the orcs until the end of the world.

Then what will be the result? If the 2 of them chased too far in, they could be discovered by other squads of orcs. If they are surrounded, and are unable to escape successfully——

Or what if they meet the underlings of the elite orcs……

Okay. I set my determination and raised my head.

「The 2 of you listen up, do not keep pursuing. If you are too far away from the Cultivating Centre, then give up the pursuit and return.」

「Is this fine? Kazu-senpai?」

「The 2 of your safety is more important.」

I said so and placed my hands on their heads, caressing their hair.

「I believe in the 2 of you. Do not force yourselves.」

「Un..understood, Kazu-senpai.」

Tamaki blushed, raised her head and looked at me, and nodded. Hm, it seems that she will not disobey the order and only cared about chasing the orcs.

Tamaki: Level 4　Sword Skill 2 → 3／Physical 1　Skill Point 4→1

Mia: Level 4　Earth Magic 2 → 3／Wind Magic 1　Skill Point 4→1

We returned from the white room to reality.

Afterwards then I know that Arisu and Tamaki defeated another 2 orcs. They followed my instructions, and gave up pursuit, returning to the Cultivating Centre.

The surviving orcs will inform their companions about our existence. I pretended to be calm and listened to Arisu and their report.

Not long after, Shiki-san and co who are carrying the survivors came over carefully.

「Has it ended……?」

「Hmm, it is finally over. Although it is not the best ending, but everyone worked hard…… but——」

I explained the situation simply. Shiki-san nodded with a stern expression.

「This place will be exposed sooner or later, since that is so, we have to increase our defense.」

The orcs know that the survivors are gathering here.

They will definitely come back, and it will be with a huge army. The next battle will be crucial.

Chapter 28: Confrontation with Shiki

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 28

Chapter 28: Confrontation with Shiki

The girls in the lounge of the Cultivating Centre are panicking.

The orcs already knew that the surviving students are gathering in the Cultivating Centre, this news caused them to be very shocked.

What should I say to them? What sort of strategy should I take next?

Wait, is staying at the Cultivating Centre really the best choice? Wouldn't it be better to escape from this place immediately?

If we are going to escape, are we going to escape altogether?

About half of the girls that we brought back from girls' dormitory are still powerless, the others probably can't run too.

Don't tell me we have to abandon them and escape by ourselves?

Not caring if the others will agree, what shall we do in the future? Liberate another place from the orcs, and use that place as a base? Or avoid the orcs, and camp while moving?

Even if we protect our lives temporarily, what about tomorrow or the day after?

Or shall we abandon everyone?

How about only Arisu, Tamaki, Mia and I escape? But will Arisu and the others agree……

I stood at the entrance where the intense battle had just occur, desperately thinking. Tamaki, Arisu and Mia looked at me with their faces full of worry.

Shiki-san clapped her hands, focusing everyone's attention on herself.

「Anyway let's do what we can do.」

The girls began to move with her instructions. She allowed the survivors who remained weak and lifeless to sleep on the beds on level 3, and lead the girls who came from the girls' dormitory to the showers.

In this timing, I only watched silently at Shiki-san instructing the middle school students.

Actually I am very clear that she is more familiar with such stuff as compared to myself. No matter how she is as a battle commander, she is definitely a leader with ability.

And the conflict between Shiki-san and me, is the greatest instability in this group. Noticing this point, probably is only Arisu who knew everything. But everyone will discover it eventually.

They will discovered my narrow-mindedness, and Shiki-san's good points. Then everyone will……

No, I have battle prowess, and Arisu and Tamaki also obeys me. Since I have the power, the others will not reject me.

But so what? With this problem, can we win against the orcs?

I almost bit my lips with a strength that could cut.

Weak minded, paranoid and timid, I began to hate myself like this.

What should I do?

I decided.

I raised my head and looked at Arisu and the others.

「I wish to temporarily disband the party.」

I used my smile to pacify the 2 of them who are shocked, and walked outside to send the crow out to scout.

Then to Shiki-san who came to the lounge to command, and grabbed her hand.

「Oi, wait, what do you want!」

Shiki-san's face turned green and looked at me with a timid expression. Shit, I forgot that she is scared of touching guys.

I immediately apologised to her, and then entered the main topic.

「Form a party with me.」

「What do you want……」

「I will level up with another orc, I wish to speak with you in the white room.」

Shiki-san looked at me, while confused.

「Only the 2 of us?」

Shiki-san can tell what kind of determination from my expression?

「Understood, I will go with you.」

Even though she is hesitate, she still nodded, and this time my crow returned with the information.

「In the south-east forest, there is an orc patrolling, I will go and defeat that fellow.」

「We cannot leave for too long, so let's set out immediately.」

Shiki-san and I entered the forest quickly.

We only spent 5 min then we discovered the orc patrolling with a spear. I ordered the gray wolf to attack. The familiar wolf lurge at the orc, and the orc used the spear to retaliate.

「Hurry up and end it.」

Shiki-san's voice came over. I surveyed the surroundings but I can't find her figure. Because she used Detection Skill, and began stealth movements.

I was shocked. She can't be thinking of killing me…...

I shook my head to shake off that thinking. How could that be, it is more possible for you, Gaya Kazuhisa. Now to her, killing me has no advantages.

In reality, Shiki-san is currently hiding in a blind spot at the tree, throwing a small knife at the orc which was fighting with the wolf, and that knife embedded deeply in the back of the orc.

The orc was enraged, and turned back, forgetting to defend against the wolf.

The wolf did not miss the chance and lunged at the orc.

The gray wolf pressed down the orc and tore apart its windpipe.

I leveled up.

Shiki-san and I are sent to the white room together, becoming the situation where the 2 of us faced each other.

「I have something to say to you.」

That is how I spoke.

◆ ◆ ◆

In the white room, Shiki-san and I faced each other, the 2 of us are about 1m away from each other.

「The content to discuss has 2 point, which are regarding battles from now and…...」

While saying, I observed Shiki-san's eyes.

「Regarding you and me.」

「I understand.」

Shiki-san grasped her hands in front of her chest, and nodded seriously, she should be understanding the reason why I brought her to this room.

「So, the aim for bringing me here is to torture me to your delight? Just like what you did to Arisu.」

「You are teasing me right?」

「Ermm, yes.」

Shiki-san curved the edge of her mouth sarcastically.

「Sorry, I am the type that will die if I don't act strong. If you are not happy, you can beat up until you are happy.」

「You are actually a masochist right?」

Shiki-san shrugged her shoulders lightly.

「I only believe that you would not do something that Arisu hates.」

「You are really irritating!」

She is completely fooling around with me. After using words to tease me, Shiki-san's expression turned serious, saying:「Okay——」

「Regarding what you are hesitating about, I shall put these words first. You saved my life, saved me from hell. Although I had decided to die from the bottom of my heart then, but now it is different, I have already sworn to survive. Hence your strength is absolutely essential. As for the middle section girls, I will influence them to embrace the idea of worshipping you.」

What is that, it is too scary. Influencing other people's thoughts? Wait, what is this person saying?

「Surprised?」

Shiki-san laughed lightly.

「This isn't something hard. Those kids need a hero who can be their spiritual support. Arisu was saying about you while beaming in front of them, I am just following the flow. If you do not disagree, I will also praise you in front of everyone from now on.」

「Please do not push it too much.」

My expression is probably very bitter. Only seeing Shiki-san using her hand to cover her mouth, and lightly laughing.

「Are you looking down on me?」

「Why would I, I am only laughing at myself for belittling you.」

「The meaning is that your evaluation of me is very low initially?」

Shiki-san used her index finger and supported her chin. After giving a「hmm——」sound, then she looked up at the ceiling.

「How should I say~ you having such a leadership ability, is indeed out of my expectation.」

「I am not suitable to be a leader.」

「After Arisu met you yesterday, roughly about 2 hours later, she is idolising you from the bottom of her heart. Today too, Tamaki and Mia trusted you fully after a few hours.」

「Regarding Arisu, should be good luck or fate…… Tamaki and Mia are due to the presence of Arisu. They only need an older guy, there shouldn't be any difference if he is not me.」

Shiki-san shrugged her shoulders.

「No matter what, you have obtained victory in all your battles until now, I feel that that is something amazing.」

「Regarding that, I can only say it is due to luck.」

In actuality, if the timing was wrong, perhaps we would really have lost a few battles.

The battle at the girls' dormitory is the same, if the level up timing was not timely, it will probably be hard for us to recover. If we are in that situation, we could have been completely wiped out by the elite orc, or let Mia conjure fog with wind magic and escape with our tails behind our back.

「Forget the process, the most important is the ending. You obtained victory continuously in the battles, and everyone knows this.」

「So that is the reason for praising me?」

「To unite everyone, that is a must. You should not complain too much in front of everyone. At most express your weakness in front of me or Arisu, I have already told that to Arisu.」

「The so called told, means……」

「For everyone to respect you, her assistance is necessary. Sorry, I used your lover.」

That was uncalled for—— that is what I thought. But I am also worried if Shiki Yukariko will expose my pitiful side at the high school section…… Am I worrying too much?

「What did Arisu say?」

「As long as it can help you, even if you give off the dirty look, she will also endure it. That's good, she allowed you to flirt around.」

That sentence gave me a shock. I remembered what Arisu said previously——If Tamaki is willing, I wish for you to develop relationships with her. Is that also Shiki-san's idea?

I confirmed with her for a moment, but Shiki-san was stunned.

「I did not plan on doing it until that far?」

「What is going on?」

「Did the students in the middle school section agreed to share their boyfriends……?」

Shiki-san shook her head in doubt, and sunk into thoughts. I glared at her.

「I did not hear of such a thing.」

「Do you have friends which will talk about this with you?」

This blow completely took me out.

I silently looked away, and walked weakly to my computer. I sat at the chair in front of the computer and sighed. Shiki-san quickly came over and apologised profusely.

「Sorry, I am really sorry. This is my bad habit, always saying something unnecessary unknowingly.」

「That sentence was too much!」

I turned and glared at her, my eyes are probably full of tears.

「Mmm, I apologise, no matter how times it is. I am willing to do anything, so please!」

Shiki-san bowed, and clasped her hands, begging. Ah ah, damn, I feel that she didn’t mean it…… Seems that she is naturally foul-mouthed.

「You gave me a scare, I didn't expect that Shiki-san is more evil than I expected.」

「That's right, I am an evil-hearted and twisted woman, a whore who is lousier than scum.」

「There is no need to say it until like that!」

Ah ah, this person is really—— Shiki-san winked at me with a face of innocence.

I really.. want to bash her up…… No, mmm I am currently not holding as much hatred towards her as compared to the past, nor really hating from the bottom of my heart.

I am clear that I have a feeling of closeness towards her, so the「bash her up」that I said, is closer to「I want to tsukkomi her」. I revealed a bitter smile, that sort of feeling is long forgotten by me. I don't know why, but I feel a bit happy.

Ah, thinking about it carefully, Arisu, Tamaki and Mia are all students in the middle school section. To them, I am an older guy, a senpai.

How long was it that I have had a conversation target of my age like Shiki-san? I stood up and shrugged my shoulder, expressing that I no longer mind her misspoken words.

「Back to the topic just now, your meaning is that—— I can order you as much as I want?」

「Yes, even if you used me so much until my soul and body are all torn and tattered like a cloth…… There is nothing sexual in the meaning though?」

「I know.」

「Ah, but if you want to do some sexual assault, I will also keep it a secret. After all I owe you that, I will not resist.」

「I already said I wouldn't assault you.」

Shiki-san laughed and said「I know」.

「Arisu is really adorable.」

「Yes. Serious and honest, and would not disturb others like a certain person.」

Now it is Shiki-san who crumpled.

「You……」

Good, I won a round. I gave a victory pose in my heart

「Then the bickering battle should end here, there is nothing to it if we continue.」

「Indeed…… Anyway, if you don't disagree, I will take charge of the housekeeping and controlling over everyone. Sorry, I actually did an action of testing.」

「You are waiting for me to sort out my feelings right?」

Shiki-san smiled bitterly.

Mmm, that's right, now I can understand. The reason why she gave command to me completely, it is not because of courtesy, nope expecting my capabilities.

She is gambling. Until I discovered my own limits and count on her. Although I feel it is a bit despicable, but I also feel that such a method is very effective.

Although her spirit is still in tension due to the event yesterday, but now she is

looking forward and continuing to fight desperately. Even if she have to work hard and suffer, she also wanted to survive. And she believe letting everyone survive is the best method and hence even deciding to make use of me.

The strong fighting spirit, and the aura of being able to recover over any kind of setbacks, is very shining in the me who is always escaping from bad events.

Perhaps even such an interaction is also her act of trying to resolve the problems between us. Her actions perhaps is trying to form a common topic through ridiculing and mocking each other.

But, doesn't this mean that I have never escaped from her clutches……

But this is fine. She reveal her true thoughts. At least she opened her heart and is honest, just this is enough for me to believe her.

「Then I will be counting on you.」

「Okay.」

I reached out with my hand, and shook hands with Shiki-san.

Chapter 29: The Two Playmakers

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 29

Chapter 29:The Two Playmakers

「I trust you, our party need someone like you who have leadership abilities. For the sake of uniting everyone, I hope you will move accordingly.」

「I understand, I will do my best to work for you. Just wait, I will create an organisation which can give you your needed support, handle the troubles that you may bring and allow everyone to live together.」

Shiki-san continued:

「Hence, you must also attain the strength that can counter whatever that happens successfully.」

We all knew that even if we do not say it out, that all these actions are based on a premise—— that there will not be any support.

If the teachers in the middle school section are safe, they would have contacted us long ago. The worst scenario is that even the high school section are completely wiped out.

Or there is still a possibility, which is that they are not united like us, and end up going against each other, becoming separated.

While we have Shiki-san, the talented girl who is willing to step aside and promote me as leader and unite everyone. Even if it is the high school section, there may not be a student or teacher as talented who survived.

Only a person who leveled to level 1 can survive in such a tough environment; a

person can only improve his strength steadily by forming a group and training others to grow.

The worst is that, the people who can reach level 1 currently, perhaps are the people who are in the Cultivating Centre only.

We have to unite everyone who is level 1 and above, and form an organisation who have the same will, if not we will be annihilated.

No, people whose level are like me and Arisu, will perhaps have the method to continue to escape in a person or 2 team. When my level reaches 50, perhaps my familiar will be able to restrain the rocs. But with just this, it is probably not enough.

Even if it is just assumption, but these orcs are definitely just a vanguard.

Why is there a white room? Why are we transported to another world with the entire mountain? It is strange with just these stupid orcs suddenly appearing in this school.

There is still「something」hiding behind this event.

This is definitely only the beginning.

Even the orcs' attacks is also a preparation period for the real arrival of the disaster. Shiki-san's words are obviously hinting this as a premise.

The organisation created to handle the future, is mainly constituted of the people who supports the elite few with me as leader. Shiki-san also express to me that she will lead the support team, and take the role of the villain to handle the troublesome issue.

Why didn't she say out these words yesterday or in the morning?

That is because I did not trust her then.

She is extremely smart, to the extent that people will hate it. She had such a blueprint from the start, and planned everything to be so. That extremely smart brain is now attempting to move forward.

Honestly speaking, I hate her like this, but at the same time envious of her. But, right now we need people like Shiki Yukariko, after all I can't do something like that.

The magnanimity to accept others—— that is the request she had for me.

Okay, I will become what you desire.

I have people who I want to protect—— Arisu. To protect her, no matter how big the changes, I will show it to everyone. Even if it's the devil, I will also work with him.

Moreover as compared to the devil, her methods are definitely better.

「Then, let us restart the strategy meeting.」

「Hmmm, first is about how many enemies will come and attack……」

「Estimated number will not be low. Hence, regarding companion placement……」

Shiki-san took out a black marker from who knows where, and began drawing the map around the Cultivating Centre on the ground.

「I have long wanted to draw on the ground to see.」

She said with a face of happiness, revealing her naughty smile.

「And it is okay to anyhow draw here, because next time when we return,

everything will be back to normal.」

「Well that is right……」

Reversely speaking, this also means that no matter what we write in this room, we cannot bring it out. What we can bring out from this room, are only memories.

So we discussed to the limits in this room. We did not care about the time and continued to discuss everything.

I finally understood one thing, although it is kinda ironic, but she is quite compatible with me. First she gave the initial concept, then I used it as base to create a concrete plan. When my tactics are not enough, she is able to discover and remedy it. As the plans become more concrete, our thoughts became more aligned.

Finally just with「this」,「that」,「which」,「there」, we can communicate.

「I did not expect that it will become like this.」

Shiki-san crossed eyes with me, and revealed a bitter smile, seemingly as surprised about this.

Other than that, she seem to be a game lover. She seems to want to hide this…… But I discovered it from her words.

「Shiki-san seems to be very familiar with games.」

「There is no such thing.」

「Since that is so, why did you treat support magic as buffs?」

「I.. I didn’t say that.」

Shiki-san's cheeks were dyed red, and she turned her head away. Oi, now it has come to this, is there a need to hide?

「Come come, reveal all your embarrassing past.」

「No, I am only slightly addicted to MMO, and end up not exiting the house for half a year. So my parents send me to this stay-in school with no internet in a fit of anger……」

Shiki-san's past is too unexpected, and surprised me. She who is the vice class rep is actually addicted to net games and neglected real life. Does our classmate know this?

「Since entering this school, I changed my mentality, and concentrate on studying. The reason for entering the Tea Ceremony Society, is also to tell my parents that I changed……」

「All these are just pretending.」

The result need to enter this school for transfer students is very high, for a person who only cared about playing net games to be able to get in, is too amazing. Her usual result must be really good, no wonder this worried her parents. But now, it has become like this……

「After coming to another world, don't even mention internet, there isn't even anything.」

「Yes.」

「Then again, I do not know if I will survive pass today, in fact I am not even sure I will be alive 2 hours later. Ah, don't get it wrong, I will only rant in this place, outside I will still pretend to be a leader who is full of confidence.」

So you have to maintain your confident state—— this is her hidden words.

「But from another point of view, I entered the Tea Ceremony Society because of minding other people's views, that's why I am still alive, this perhaps is also a good thing.」

After experiencing that sort of thing, and still could say「good thing」? Even if it's me, I can't. Shiki-san seems to feel my doubts from my atmosphere, and she maintained the posture of hugging her chest, and lightly shrugged her shoulders.

「As for the high school section having any survivors, I did not have any hopes for it.」

「Is it?」

「Even if there are survivors, I don't even know if there is 1 out of 10 people. And perhaps there are a few being captured by orcs now?」

Hmm, considering the difficulty of raising everyone to level 1, it is indeed so…… My feelings could not help but turn dark. I really wish to send the crows to the high school section to scout as fast as possible, but currently there isn't any leftover energy and time to handle such matters…...

If there is leftover energy, then I wish to send the crow to scout each dorm in the middle school section.

「Right——」

Shiki-san said.

「Can I call you Kazu-kun?」

Meaning she wish to show that she is close with me in front of others? Currently

this group is a group of juniors ruled by me and Shiki-san. The leaders calling each others' close name should bring them a sense of ease. (TL note: in japan, they usually call each other by their surname until they are close enough to call them by their names. So it's a sign of being close.)

「No problem, I don't mind. But I want to call you Shiki-san like as always.」

「Ah, the girls in class also call me so, who told『Yukariko』to be so hard to be spoken.」

That saying, I remember the girls in class did call her Shiki-san.

「Ah, I did not hate my own name. Although I feel it is old fashion, feels super old.」

Isn't that the meaning of hate? I wish to tsukkomi but since it's regarding such a troublesome topic that is names, hence I choose to be silent.

「But as long as you want to, if it's Yukariko, Yukari or Yukarin is fine.」

「Shiki-san is better.」

Right—— Shiki-san smiled.

「That's all, please take care of me, Kazu-kun.」

Shiki-san reached out to me with her hand again, and I took it without any hesitation.

「Ah, there is no need to force yourself to become closer with me at such times. When we are alone, it is fine to call me pathetic orcs' hole.」

「It is about time for your self-sarcasm to stop.」

Shiki-san stick her tongue out and laugh naughty. She can show herself as being so brave, her strong heart can indeed be quite dependable……

Finally—— Shiki-san said.

「In this battle, other than your party, the others will be commanded by me. Other than the elite party, I will accept the authority to order the other members, is that fine?」

What does that mean? I tilted my head in doubt.

「The meaning is, you only need to think about how to protect the lives of Arisu, Tamaki and Mia.」

「It is fine for me…… But why?」

Shiki-san lifted her hair in silence, seeing her sorrowful eyes, I understood immediately.

「Your meaning is that our companions will die? And I will be unable to handle that guilt?」

「Just an assumption only. But if things really happen, you will collapse due to guilt, and I will be troubled by it.」

「So that guilt will be shouldered by you?」

「I will endure it for you to see. As long as I thought about being raped by orcs before, then I feel that throwing away my companions after using them is nothing much.」

Lies—— I stared at her. How can she lie to me with that expression and sight? But Shiki-san showed a warm smile at me.

「Just said it’s in case, I only wish to consider the worst situation first. You and me, if one will die first…… Shouldn’t it be better if it’s me?」

I am unable to retort. From an objective point of view, what she said is the truth.

Kazuhisa: Level 7 Support Magic 3/ Summon Magic 3 Skill Points 2

Chapter 30: The Second Defensive Battle at the Cultivating Center 1

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 30

Chapter 30: The Second Defensive Battle at the Cultivating Center 1

We returned to the original place.

I immediately summoned 3 familiar crows and let them go scout.

Next, Shiki-san and I returned to the Cultivating Centre, with Arisu and others receiving us with faces of worry.

Shiki-san and I tried waving to them with happy expressions as much as possible.

「Everyone, we let you wait, my meeting with Kazu-kun has ended. Next is to explain how to fight, please gather everyone.」

Everyone seem to have discovered that Shiki-san has changed how she called me.

Arisu looked at me with probing eyes. I patted her shoulders to ease her worries, and whispered to her that「we are back to normal」.

「The back to normal, refers to which type of normal?」

I don’t know why, but Arisu stared at me with unhappy eyes. I tilted my head in confusion.

Shiki-san grabbed her wrist in front of her chest and showed a surprised expression.

「Kazu-kun, you are really good.」

「I only heard that you are saying that I am stupid.」

「That is the meaning all right. No worries Arisu, we just got rid of the troubles on the leader.」

Arisu blinked and said「I see」while nodding, as though accepting the answer. Then again, the only person who knew about the complicated relationship between me and Shiki-san, is only Arisu.

「Kazu-san, you worked very hard.」

「It's due to Arisu and everyone's hard work. But the one who worked the hardest is Shiki-san.」

「Yes, but I am really glad.」

Arisu showed her smile to me. I could not help by caress her hair, and she squinted her eyes in happiness. Ah the angel is here.

「Okay okay, stop being affectionate over there, I am beginning.」

Shiki-san clapped her hand, telling us to listen seriously.

◆◆◆

Currently students who are level 1 and above in the Cultivating Centre amounts to 11, including me.

The system rules that a party can have almost 6 people. After discussing with Shiki-san, we created 3 parties of 4, 6 and 1.

The 4 person main force is formed by me, Arisu, Tamaki and Mia. The leftover 7

people formed another support party, excluding Shiki-san. And Shiki-san is a solo party, that is what she suggested.

「This is for just in case, for me to get the time to think about how to fight.」

As a solo party, then you can decide when to level up. Completely utilising the white room—— that sort of thinking is dependable, or should it be scary?

No, usually speaking, you will feel its dependable.

The basic tactic is simple.

「The building of Cultivating Centre is not suitable for defending, if the enemies break in from the side wall, we will be powerless. Although just now the orcs did not do so, but if it is the elite orc then what will happen?」

In the discussion of Shiki-san and me, this is the biggest point.

I have seen that fearful strength of the elite orc close up before. That brute strength wielding the axe, destroyed the stairs of the lobby.

If the wooden walls of the Cultivating Centre suffered that sort of blow, will it be able to withstand it?

Shiki-san expressed that「the structure of the Cultivating Centre is not that weak」, while I replied that no matter what kind of structure, initially we also didn’t expect that the elite orcs will attack.

In the end my opinion was accepted and after Shiki-san agreed, hence proposing this tactic.

「So we can only go out and fight. Luckily there is only a forest route going to the Cultivating Centre, and it is only about 5m wide. The surrounding woods are also very thick, so it will be hard fighting a group battle. Even if there are a lot of orcs,

the width of the road can only handle 3 orcs side by side. So for defending, the most suitable terrain is outside.」

The main fighting force will be the girls who are using spears as weapons. Other than Arisu, there are 3 others who chose to raise Spear Skill. Among them, 2 of them are the girls who stayed behind to contribute to the defense of the Cultivating Centre. Their level also rose to level 2 due to that and raised Spear Skill to Rank 2.

We decided to let them line up and form a wall at the road.

「Before the spear wall, we have to dig a shallow part first. Hurry up and began on this, about 20~30cm will do, Kazu-san please.」

After I answered「understood」, then I left the Cultivating Centre with the shovel, without listening to the explanation.

「As for the orcs coming from the left and right side of the forest……」

Shiki-san continued to explain. As for the content, I also do not have the need to continue listening.

After all this is the strategy that the 2 of us thought up.

◆◆◆

I crossed the plaza in front of the Cultivating Centre, the road in front could barely allow a truck to pass. I walked about 5m on the road before stopping to began digging.

Rather than digging a hole, actually I am only digging a bit. The digging is proceeding very smoothly. The soil on this road is already packed very tightly due to the people walking, so to be able to dig so smoothly, is all due to《Physical Up》.

In the process of digging, the crows came back a few times. According to their report, the orcs seemed to have gathered at the main school building and among them, there are elite orcs, and there are a few of them……

Multiple elite orcs huh……

This battle will be harsh—— I realised. But if it's only to this extent, Shiki-san has already predicted it. Aiya, this is not simple. Initially I had felt that her assumption was too negative……

The points she pointed out, are surprisingly important. Thank goodness, if we moved according to my optimistic prediction, now we will be in a panic.

I sent the crows again, slowly getting hold of the positions of the enemies.

Other than that, I continued digging. Until when I realise it, the entire shallow portion in the road is already done.

「Good work.」

A voice came from the back. I turned and discovered a girl from the middle school section standing behind me, she was one of the girls that stayed to defend the Cultivating Centre.

The girl held a white plate in her hands, with 4 onigiri wrapped with seaweed on it. (TL note: onigiri = japanese rice ball)

「Sorry, there are only canned salmon inside.」

She raised her head shyly and looked at me.

「Ah, your hands are dirty, I will bring a handkerchief for you.」

「No need, it's fine.」

I used my muddy hands to pick up the onigiri, and wolfed them down.

Now it have come to this, I also do not care about this degree of dirtiness, even finding the time that's used to wipe my hands is a waste.

From the report of the crows, those orcs will probably begin their movements soon.

Perhaps they have already began to move.

I don't know if it is due to working too hard, the salty onigiri is very delicious. And because my stomach is very hungry, the 4 onigiri is finished by me in a moment.

Then again, breakfast was before daybreak. And too much things happened in the morning, causing me to forget my hunger.

「Thanks for the treat, it's very delicious.」

「It is just a rough meal, but I made it.」

The girl revealed a innocent smile.

「Thanks for helping me just now, I had thought that I will be dead.」

It was due to luck, being able to make it in time and helping companions is only natural. Moreover bringing out 5 person from the defending of the Cultivating Centre without thinking too much, is originally my mistake……

But there is no need to admit it myself, hence I accepted her thanks directly.

「In the next battle, it will be my turn to protect Kazu-senpai!」

「Argh…… Rather than senpai, I preferred being called san.」

「Okay, Kazu-san! Please do not worry, just relax and wait in the rear!」

I answered「is it」, and looked at the girl's hand. Digging since morning, the skin on her hands are all broken. So she used such hands to make the onigiri, I could not help but felt apologetic.

No, when she is making the onigiri, I am also desperately digging here. But I felt that digging to me is very natural, as though like breathing—— Anyway, it is already natural.

◆◆◆

After that, after 5 minutes.

The 3 girls holding spears, waited for the enemy at trench which is 5m wide, 20~30cm high and 3m deep.

Mia and I stood behind them and a gray wolf familiar was beside me.

The leftover members are spreaded out in the forest or on trees.

Rumblings echoed over, dust clouds began to form from the middle school section building.

The orc army is currently invading here, luckily we have already made ample preparations for them.

Their movements caused the grounds to shake and groan. Woah, it is super majestic.

The orcs' leader turned at the curve around 50m ahead and the other orcs followed closely behind.

Once they saw our figures, they began to roar in anger. The orcs went into a frenzy and edged closer. This oppressive violent group is slowly approaching.

Even though the girls are scared, they managed to steady their legs. From the lesson gotten at the girls' dormitory, this time I cast support magic Rank 1《Clear Mind》on everyone.

Thanks to this magic increasing the will, they did not escape even while staring at the huge orc army. But I also sacrificed a lot of MP, with roughly 30 left……

Next, is for they to execute the strategy calmly.

Then again, there are over 100 orcs. I tried to stay calm, but it is impossible mentally, constantly worrying if I will make a mistake.

Is this instruction really fine? Can I protect Arisu and the others?

No, I can. I clenched my fist. It is not whether I can but rather I have to.

The foremost orc stepped into the trench I dug.

The second orc also stepped in, those orc began to raise their weapons together……

「That's now, Mia!」

「Hmm,《Earth Pit》.」

Mia used a powerless voice to activate the magic. Earth Magic Rank 3《Earth Pit》is a magic that digs a hole in the ground. The effect is a 3m radius, and its depth can reach 5m.

This magic is not able to make a very deep hole immediately, but could only

make the enemy sink slowly. But if it activates along the trench……

At the left side in front of us, the 3 orcs began to shake. Those 3 orcs stepped into the trench while raising their weapons, and then lost their balance.

This moment, the girls who are holding the spears, began to strike repeatedly. The orcs behind tried to stop, but they are pushed by their companions who came from behind at full speed. The orcs stacked up, and fell into the ground, slowly stacking up in the hole that is gradually becoming deeper.

The companions beside them suddenly disappeared, causing to orcs on the right side to stop moving due to confusion.

「《Earth Pit》」

Mia used her move again mercilessly, the second hole slowly spread from under the right side of the orc group. The orcs on this side are also pushed forward due to their companions behind, and they fell into the hole from the foremost guy.

The orcs' cries and sounds of being crushed echoed out, and the sounds of the monster dying spreaded to the surrounding.

Chapter 31: The Second Defensive Battle at the Cultivating Center 2

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 31

Chapter 31: The Second Defensive Battle at the Cultivating Center 2

Mia and I listened to the cries of the orcs being squashed after falling to the hole, and looked at each other.

「These experience will be given to who? If they are given to the orcs who squash them then it will be bad.」

「If they evolve, it will become troublesome.」

If the holes we dug end up allowing the orcs to evolve into elite orcs——

Just thinking about it makes one feel irritated. But actually I do not know how elite orcs came to be.

Among the helpless orcs, a few due to lack of means, began to create a path into the left and right side of the forest. Perhaps it is to go around it to finish us off, but——

Laments from the orcs came through the forest.

That was done by Tamaki and Arisu.

I had them hide in the left and right side of the forest, and wait until the orcs began to cut the grass that was as tall as them to enter, and then finish them off.

Hearing the tragic cries of their companions, the fear in the other orcs caused them to want to turn back, which can be said to be in a pinch.

「Missile team, attack!」

Hearing my command, the girls, who are apt at long range and are hiding on the trees on the left and right side of the forest, began to attack together.

The girls who have the Throwing Skill threw the plastic bags that had kerosene.

The plastic bag split open with a Pa sound when it hit the orcs' head, and the kerosene in it sprayed over the orcs' head and shoulders.

Next the fire magic users release fireballs.

Those fireball hit the orcs' bodies, and sparks scattered.

The kerosene ignited, causing the orcs' bodies to burn. The orcs who are covered in flames, rolled around on the ground in pain, causing even more chaos.

The girls who have throwing skills threw the spears and axes obtained from the orcs, further deepening the chaos midst the orcs.

Actually it will be better with archers, but we do not have the most important bow, hence no one chose the shooting skill.

If we can obtain bows and arrows, it means that the orcs have archers. If there are long distance hitters in the orcs' camp, then our strategy will not hold, so I can only hope that such ranged weapons do not exist here.

That's right, the basis of Shiki-san and my plan is that the orcs will always take melee actions.

Currently we can only confirm that the orcs' weapons are spears, axes and swords.

Actually if we categorise it carefully, there will be more types……

For example spears, there are roughly 5m and shaped sinisterly spears until those that are short enough to be called short spears.

There are various sizes for swords and axes, every one of them have something that is different.

And as for whether they will throw their weapons, the answer is definitely a yes.

The truth is that yesterday at the level 2 of the Cultivating Centre, I was nearly killed by the orc which threw a short axe.

Even so, as long as the basic movement of the orcs are melee combat, our tactics should…… be effective.

Currently there are a few orcs beginning to throw the axes and spears in their hands at the girls in the trees.

But the trees that they are on, are all very sturdy, as long as they hide behind it, they can dodge the majority of the attacks.

We are just trying to stop the enemies' movement, increasing their chaos. I also commanded everyone to not push it too much.

Our real targets are on the ground.

「Mia, you should take the chance to retreat and rest.」

Mia nodded with a「mmm」sound, and retreated to the courtyard in front of the Cultivating Centre.

Okay, we have successfully dampened the enemies' spirit at the beginning, but next is the main show.

Shiki-san who replaced Mia, ran over.

「Can you call out another wolf? I want it to go over to the left and right side of the forest as support.」

I already have a wolf beside me, to ask me to call out another, is to let them enter the 2 sides of the forest separately to support Arisu and Tamaki?

Shiki-san has been using Detection Skill to erase her presence until now, and hiding in the forest scouting. Seems that she confirmed that the orcs will rush into the forest soon.

Because of the continuous battles, my MP is left with only 30, from just now I have been barely hanging on. If I summon another gray wolf, I will use another 9 MP.

But this concerns Arisu and Tamaki's safety.

「Understood, although the MP will be abit tight, but if it's just one, it is still fine.」

「Please,《Mighty Arm》will be enough as buff.」

I followed her instructions and only gave the wolves《Mighty Arm》before ordering them to enter the left and right side of the forest, to support Arisu and Tamaki respectively. The orcs are only repeating this process—— pushed forward due to the pressure from behind, then falling into the hole; or enter the 2 sides of the forest, then killed by Arisu or Tamaki.

In such a smooth situation, I was sent to the white room.

Arisu leveled up.

「Arisu, Tamaki, how many did you 2 kill?」

The 2 of them reported their spoils of war. If what they say is true, then the number of preys to the level up is not enough. The wolves' result is not enough to cover the gap, in other words……

「Mia, the orcs that are squished to death after falling into your《Earth Pit》, seems to be considered your kills.」

「Hmm, such a nice design.」

Mia raised her thumb. After we discussed briefly, then we return back to the original place.

Arisu: Level 7 Spear Skill 3／Healing Magic 3 Skill Point 2

◆◆◆

After returning from the white room, I confirmed the situation.

The intense battle is continuing in the frontline. The 3 girls used their spears and stabbed harshly at the orcs in the holes, and before long, their next prey will deliver themselves.

But they are a 6 person party, to level up to level 2, they have to defeat 13 orcs, to level up to level 3 they have to defeat 18……

As I was thinking of this, the girls' movements suddenly stopped. They leveled up.

「We raised Spear Skill」

The girl who is only level 1 until just now, said so. Hmmm, very good. Their spear skill are all Rank 2, and the skills at finishing of the orcs are becoming more

trained.

With this, the 2 person who are originally level 2 will need to kill 6 more orcs to level up? Okay take it easy. I ask Shiki-san who is beside me:

「Then again, did you discover the traces of elite orcs?」

「There are 3 at the back.」

I bit my lip tightly. Only Arisu and Tamaki can hold back the elite orcs, in a 1 on 1 situation, they could at most buy some time.

If Weapon Skills raised to 4, then it will be easier to score a victory in a 1 on 1. But in the situation in front of us, they still have to rely on Mia's magic as support.

Or perhaps I can use《Reflection》well……

But this skill is not only harsh on the timing, and full of risk, I do not know if I can target correctly in the chaos of the battle.

Indeed I have to depend on Mia. But this is also restricted to the time when there is one opponent, dealing with 2 together is too harsh.

And now there are 3, along with a lot of underlings.

「Wait a moment.」

After Shiki-san finished, then she disappeared from my sight, seems that she used Detection Skill.

The short spear that flew out from the shadows of the tree, hit the stomach of the orc that is about to enter the forest.

The orc disappear like dew.

This moment Shiki-san also returned.

「Now I only need to kill 1 more to level up.」

To be correct, Shiki-san is still level 1, and she defeated an orc when hunting with me, so her current experience is 90, 30 points away from the next level.

「Shall I keep the white room for now?」

「After all there is nothing to think about for now.」

Hmm, that's right. The orc group is clustered together, in confusion. We should take this chance to reduce their numbers as much as possible.

There's hope. Before the elite orcs appear, Arisu and Tamaki's weapon skill may raise to Rank 4.

Luckily, there are many prey orcs for us to get experiences, but……

At the frontlines, the 3 person who are using spears are staring down as the orcs who are separated by the trap.

The orcs who decided to go around the forest are also picked out one by one by Arisu, Tamaki and the familiar wolves, giving out dying cries. The orcs are all very stupid, hence there will definitely be ways to settle it, but if this carries on……

When I realised it, I have already gone to the white room.

「Mia and I leveled up!」

Tamaki said so. Ah I see, they rose to level 5.

But the 2 of them currently only have 3 Skill Points, they need to raise their level by another before they can raise their main skill to Rank 4. According to calculations, Arisu will reach level 8 around the same time, and then Spear Skill will be Rank 4.

「We have to defeat 24 orcs more.」

「Then, Arisu and I will *dash and rush over, then* bang to defeat a lot of orcs! Ah, Arisu, let's go!」(TL note: * indicates sounds said by Tamaki)

With a face of excitement, Tamaki kept dancing around, and her golden-coloured ponytail jumped around like whips.

「Argh—— Kazu-san……」

Arisu revealed a troubled look at me. Hmm, Tamaki has already lost herself to excitement, this fellow will probably fall due to gambling or something in the future.

「Tamaki's suggestion is currently rejected.」

「Eeee—— Why!」

「According to Shiki-san's report, there are 3 elite orcs.」

Tamaki's face turned blue.

「I...if that so! Then isn't it more important to level up faster?」

「If we forced our way deep into the enemy's camp to defeat the small fries, then when we meet the elite orcs, we will not only be in an exhausted state, we could be surrounded. I feel that dealing with the small fries and fighting with the elite orcs together is too difficult.」

Don’t get it wrong, even if weapon skill is Rank 4, we could at most go toe to toe with the elite orc.

I wish to let Arisu and Tamaki battle in the best state. For this fellow who disregard people’s good will, I have to give her a bit of punishment.

「Tamaki, next time you leak, I will make you wear diapers to battle.」

「W..wait a moment, that’s too much.」

I looked at Arisu.

「You should say something to her too.」

「Ah, erm, this okay! Argh Tamaki, not going to the toilet properly is not good?」

I feel that the place to tsukkomi is not there.

For the sake of not letting Tamaki lose control, how should I advise her? Hmm —— I am glad that her spirits are high.

But regarding this…… Although it is only a prediction, I always have the feeling that because she had failure, hence she had the mentality of「needing to make some achievements」.

In the battle at the girls’ dormitory, Tamaki did not help and hence her mental wounds opened again. Perhaps because of this, she felt that she gave us some trouble.

She must be afraid that if she did not give a brilliant performance this time, then she will be abandoned by me and Arisu.

Perhaps she herself did not realise this.

If it is like this, no matter how we try to convince her, it will be hard to change her thinking.

What she needs now is confidence, hence I decided to change my thinking.

「Mia, how many MP do you have left?」

「About 20.」

I see, it is about the same as me? Should save the MP needed for casting Rank 2 Earth Magic《Heat Metal》thrice, for the sake of dealing with the elite orcs…… Hmmm, this method should be fine.

「Please cast《Earth Pit》and《Rampage Plant》twice each.」

「Are you sure? This is a trump card?」

「As long as we defeat 14 orcs, I can level up. Arisu, Tamaki, follow my instruction. You two should bring the wolf and temporary leave the forest and return to my side.」

I have already ordered the familiar wolves for them to listen to Arisu and Tamaki's instructions. How much of their words can the gray wolves understand? Even though I felt some unease, but they have been cooperating well with the wolves for now. They should be able to pass the instruction to the wolves successfully this time.

「Regarding the next battle…..」

I immediately continue to instruct everyone, according to what Shiki-san said, express myself with confidence, as though「everything is in my predictions」.

「Arisu, Tamaki, wait until I leveled up, then I will use the remaining MP to strengthen you. Then I will leave the rest to you.」

「Okay, Kazu-san!」

「Mmm, leave it to me, Kazu-san!」

I nodded to the 2 of them, expressing「very good」..... And after discussing the details with Mia, we left the white room.

Tamaki: Level 5　Sword Skill 3／Physical 1　Skill Point 3
Mia: Level 5　Earth Magic 3／Wind Magic 1　Skill Point 3

Chapter 32: The Second Defensive Battle at the Cultivating Center 3

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 32

Chapter 32: The Second Defensive Battle at the Cultivating Center 3

Returning to the original place, Mia who left earlier came back immediately.

「Hehe.」

I carried Mia onto my shoulder and let her step on my shoulder to climb up the tree. Mia who does not seem to be good at sports, depended on《Physical Up》and climbed up the tree easily.

After Mia's hand touched a seemingly sturdy branch, then she stopped and looked down at me who is below her.

「As compared to a butt with bloomers, isn't it better to see the panties from under the skirt?」

「Enough, hurry and get up.」

There really isn't any sense of urgency. Ah, just take it that she is steady. But behaving like that, is also considered as pushing herself to a certain extent. Initially she went weak in the legs from just hearing the roar of the elite orc, how could she have not been afraid.

Even so, she still continued to fool around. I decided that her actions are sort of her way of putting up a front.

「Kazu-san, sorry for letting you wait.」

「We reached——!」

Arisu and Tamaki brought the wolves back respectively, and with this, the preparations are done.

Mia stood up on the sturdy branch and looked at the group of orcs.

「Where should I cast it on?」

「In the middle.」

「Hmm,《Earth Pit》, and another《Earth Pit》.」

Mia's hole digging magic caused the group near the centre of the orc group to sink in continuously.

The orcs frantically escaped into the left and right side of the forest.

「《Rampage Plant》」

Just at this moment, Mia used the Rank 3 Earth Magic《Rampage Plant》at the left side of the forest

The woods around the orcs spreaded widely, the branches became as sharp as knife, stabbing deeply into the orcs' faces or bellies, spraying blue blood around. The falling leaves are like swords, slashing the orcs' body as they fall.

「Again,《Rampage Plant》.」

The forest on the right also started to cause the orcs to cry. The magic《Rampage Plant》is able to make the plants go crazy, becoming a vicious carnivore, attacking its surroundings indiscriminately.

《Rampage Plant》can only show its worth in a place with trees, hence it is able

to demonstrate unmatchable power in this forest.

Just that the effective area is too big, causing other problems—— that is our companions will also get attacked. This is different from a game, friendly fire is very possible, so I had Arisu and Tamaki return temporarily to avoid it.

And this magic will still cause accidents. In total about 3 orcs got out of the attack of the forest on the left and right side, covered in blood. Their frenzy actions, confirmed that I am the leader of the attack, and attacked here……

「Arisu, Tamaki!」

The 2 person who acted as my bodyguards began moving, the sharp stab of the spear and the blow from the giant axe ended the lives of the 2 orc quickly, but the leftover one kept edging closer to me……

A spear thrown from the shadow of the nearby tree pierced through the orc's heart, causing it to die immediately.

「Ah I leveled up.」

Shiki-san walked out of the forest, the one who threw the spear just now was her.

「Because Kazu-kun got targeted, so I could only act just in case.」

「Hmm, I got saved. Forget it, currently there is no need to save the white room, this should be fine right?」

「Indeed, raising my level is also ideal. But I did not plan on standing out.」

Even if she did not invoke the attack, the wolves will probably become my shield. Even so, Shiki-san still showed herself to protect me. Seems that she is a girl who usually worries and likes to take care of others.

「You seem to have something to say?」

Shiki-san seems to have read some of my thoughts from my attitude, and her eyes showed some sign of displease. Just as I was about to refute her……

The level up message rang in my mind.

「Forget it, this represents that our relationship is to the extent that we can talk crap about each other.」

As long as she is around, the burden on me will be reduced by half, and I could also use more daring tactics.

In the white room.

I shrugged my shoulders at Arisu and the others.

「Arisu, Tamaki, the rest will be dependent on you.」

「Yes, I will attempt to answer to your expectations.」

「Umm, um, I will do my best.」

「..... Tamaki, you have just begin to feel afraid? Going to leak?」

「Really—— why do you have to say such words! Kazu-san, you really do not have any tact! 」

Facing Tamaki who is blushing red with anger, I revealed a smile.

「Tamaki, the meaning of these words is that I believe in you.」

「Ah, argh, emm! I know, this time I will show you my good performance.」

Tamaki clenched her fist with a lot of strength, and then looked at me with a desiring look.

「What?」

「Th..that, I want touch touch.」

「Touch touch?」

「Argh, which is caressing my hair…… Is it possible?」

I nodded, and placed my hand on Tamaki's golden hair, caressing it roughly. She who usually have a noble aura, shrugged her shoulder lightly, and look up at me, then smiled with an embarrassed look.

「Got your spirit back?」

「Hmph, leave it to me. I will return in victory!」

I nodded, expressing「good」.....

After confirming the strategy, I raised Support Magic to Rank 4.

Kazuhisa: Level 8 Support Magic 3→4/ Summon Magic 3 Skill Points 4→0

Raising Support Magic to Rank 4 is one of my aims. Because with ample time, I can achieve my target. After yesterday's earthquake, we have gained the power known as Skills, becoming able to go toe to toe with the orcs, and even achieve victory.

Just like in a RPG, with more battles, the stronger we will become.

But, the items that are naturally available in a single player game are not

available to us.

That is weapons and armour that comes together with levels.

《Hard Weapon》,《Hard Armour》.

The effects of these 2 magic in Rank 4 Support magic, can let both weapons and armours obtain similar power up as the Skill Rank.

In other words, the spear that Arisu is using now will become『Iron Spear +1』.

It is fine for the weapons. Although I do not know what kind of changes will『Iron Spear +1』bring. Asking the computer also only gave me vague replies like how the sharpness will increase.

The important point is regarding defensive gears. Arisu and the others are currently wearing gym clothes and bloomers, and from a game's point of view, the defense is nearly 0, at most at 1. Anyway, it is a gear with no defensive power.

Hence, I tried asking the computer in the white room on the increase in defensive power after gym clothes are casted with《Hard Armour》.

Q: Gym clothes with《Hard Armour》will have how much defensive power?

A: No definite number.

Q: Arisu's chest suffered an attack from a rusty spear by an orc, and she is wearing gym clothes that are casted with Support Magic Rank 4《Hard Armour》, then how serious will her injuries be?

A: The orc's spear will not be able to penetrate the gym clothes, and the impact power will be reduced by a portion. Depending on the situation, it may cause bruise.

When the computer replied, I could not help but tsukkomi—— wouldn't there be fractures! After repeating the questioning a few times, I understood that it will feel like the magic absorbed the damage. This is really like the defensive ability in games.

Honestly speaking, as compared to Rank 3 Summon Magic, I wish to obtain Rank 4 Support Magic even more. After all as long as it is cast on my clothes, there will be some guarantees on my life.

But the hiccups that occurred in the battle at the girls' dormitory, caused me to prioritise summoning magic……

Anyway the magic《Hard Armour》can allow me to get a defensive equipment that I can trust. Moreover once it is casted, the effect will stay forever.

After returning to the original place from the white room. I immediately called Arisu and Tamaki, and cast《Hard Armour》on their gym clothes and《Hard Weapon》on their weapons.

Actually I also want to cast《Hard Armour》on their bloomers, but after exhausting 16 MP at once, my MP is nearly empty. The leftover amount is only enough to cast《Reflection》once, which I want to use it as my trump card.

「This time we will not use《Haste》, and try to defeat the small fries orcs first.」

For the sake of letting Arisu and Tamaki level up, we need to defeat 10 more orcs first. With another level, their weapon skill will be raised to Rank 4.

With the power of《Hard Weapon》and《Hard Armour》, then they will be able to go toe to toe with the elite orcs and even surpass them…… that will be good if it is so.

No, I cannot cower. I tried to act confident as much as possible, and told them「I

will depend on the 2 of you, but don’t push yourself」, and they nodded energetically.

「Go!」

I touched Tamaki’s head and Arisu’s butt, and sent them to the battlefield. Your hand—— Arisu raised her head and looked at me with a troubled face, while I smiled to cover it up.

「Really—— I will have a nice talk with Kazu-san later!」

「Kazu-san is really pervertic.」

Arisu puffed her cheeks in anger while Tamaki smirked, and then they disappeared into the left and right side of the forest respectively.

「Pervert.」

Not knowing when she climbed down, Mia stood beside with her eyes in slits, staring at me.

Okay, with this I did what can be done. I will depend on everyone for the rest and leave it to fate.

「Mia, the effect of《Rampage Plant》.....」

「It has ended, do I have to increase the support?」

「No, you should keep the MP for casting 3《Heat Metal》.」

Mia answered with a「mmm」, and then suddenly stretched out her hands.

「What?」

「The view here is indeed very bad. I want to climb up a tree, help me.」

「Since that is so, then don't deliberately climb down.」

I lent my shoulder again, and let her climb up the tree in front of us.

「You can take the chance to touch my butt as much as possible, it is fine.」

「Okay okay okay.」

「If it is just the meat, I will not lose to Arisu.」

「Yours are fats!」

Moreover Arisu's butt is very bouncy, with a smooth skin, and when you touch it, it will give out a very nice sound……

「Ah.」

While Mia is climbing, she unconsciously looked in the direction of the orcs and stopped. I was wondering what happened, and looked over as well…… Then I realised that the orc group became more chaotic and kept on giving out shrieks periodically.

「The 2 of them rushed into the centre.」

「Oi, is that real? I already told them not to be reckless……」

I maintained the posture of supporting Mia's butt with both of my hands, and frowned.

「Okay, you better climb up faster.」

「Now it is just exciting, Tamaki-senpai did a big spin with the giant axe. Wah, it's

damn cool.」

Ah, oi, damn, don't give such a vivid announcement. I quickly pushed Mia up the tree, and climbed up a nearby tree myself.

I looked down from the tree, seeing the orc group in a state of chaos, not knowing what to do.

Arisu and Tamaki surrounded the orcs from 2 sides, killing them when they see them, their battle forms felt as though they were like Ashura. As for the frontline, the orcs in front are still being pushed into the hole by the orcs behind, and the 3 girls with the spear are giving them the fatal blow when they saw a chance.

Other than that, that the rear of the orc group, due to the confusion, the orcs that are planning to escape are all kicked away by the bronze coloured orc. The panicking orcs could only head towards the direction where Arisu and Tamaki are at.

「I see, I had wanted to say that since they had suffered such a great loss, so why aren't they retreating—— so the elite orcs are acting like the Soviet army huh?」

「Eh, Leader, what is going on?」

The girl on the tree beside me, heard my mumbling and asked. I explained it to her that I read a passage in a certain book in simple terms, the content is regarding Soviet and Chinese Army——the commander team will point their rifles at their troops, forcing them to charge forward. In short, it is very brutal.

「I felt that these orcs are really pitiful.」

「Even so, if we gave them mercy, the ones to die would be us.」

「That…… is right.」

The girl laughed bitterly. Forget it, it is not that I can’t understand her feelings.

But on a hand she is saying「they are really pitiful」, on the other hand, she is casting fireball magic mercilessly, burning the orcs in the middle to her desire. The girl’s magic became the best support and as the surrounding orcs sunk into chaos, Arisu killed them one by one.

「Okay.」

Mia lightly said. I see, so it has already reached 10.

As expected, I was sent to the white room in the next second.

Chapter 33: The Second Defensive Battle at the Cultivating Center 4

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 33

Chapter 33: The Second Defensive Battle at the Cultivating Center 4

Arisu, Tamaki and Mia, the 3 of them leveled up together. They each raise their own Skill Rank, for Arisu, it's Spear Skill, Tamaki is Sword Skill, and Mia is Earth Magic.

As a whole, the result is as such:

Arisu: Level 8 Spear Skill 3→4／Healing Magic 3 Skill Point 4→0
Tamaki: Level 6　Sword Skill 3→4／Physical 1　Skill Point 5→1
Mia: Level 6　Earth Magic 3→4／Wind Magic 1　Skill Point 5→1

Even though Mia can choose to raise Wind Magic, but I feel that she should prioritise Earth Magic. Her MP like mine, nearly depleted, hence even though she can only raise the effect of《Heat Metal》by a bit, I judged that it is the best way to bet the chance of victory.

Considering the future, having the convenient Wind Magic is indeed attractive…… But now we have to concentrate our power and survive the next few minutes.

「Although your Weapon Skill are now Rank 4, but this time I do not have the power to cast《Haste》.」

I made a final confirmation with Arisu and Tamaki who are in front of me.

「The battle this time will perhaps be even more intense than the past. Until now, did you suffer any injuries?」

「Yes, I am fine.」

「No problem, thanks to Kazu-san's《Hard Armour》.」

After asking, I realise that gym clothes with『+1』will reflect all the attacks that has caused injuries. Even if the orcs ram them, it seems that they will not suffer any sort of impact.

The 2 of them expressed in a bit of excitement that the sharpness of『Iron Spear +1』and『Giant Axe +1』are incomparable to the past.

The strike from the spear pierces through the orc's body easily, and the axe's strike split the orc's body easily into halves, the feeling is as though they have become completely different weapons.

「Actually, it is probably not the same item.」

I had considered it in same game terms. Weapon and Armour + 1 is just my way of calling them, perhaps the changes between them could have been from「rod」to「iron sword」, or it could have been Rank changes like「leather armour」to「holy armour」.

And according to the Q & A I had with the computer——

If my support magic's rank rises, the weapon and armour effects caused by the magic will also increase. Hence, every time my support magic raises its rank, there is a need to re cast them for Arisu and Tamaki.

Forget it, these are all in the future. The most important thing now, is to instruct them on how to face the current threat.

「This time the opponent is 3 elite orcs, do not fight with them at the same time. Follow what I taught you, separate the opponents and finish them off 1 by 1.」

「Kazu-san worries too much!」

I glared at Tamaki while squinting my eyes, she gave a「mmm」sound, and backed off as long she was pushed by my aura. Really, what kind of words are this girl, who had just leaked just a while ago, saying.

「I do not wish to bring out someone's failure as discussion repeatedly, but since they concerns your life, I could only deliberately remind you again.」

「Ah, wait, I know, I know! I will obey orders carefully!」

Tamaki panickedly waved her hands around, and her pigtail also moved around. Really, what should I do with her.

「As for Arisu…… Although I am not worried for you, but please do not force yourself.」

「Yes!」

Arisu nodded with a face of seriousness. Ah, Arisu is so honest and cute, such a good girl.

「Mia.」

Finally I turn towards the most petite girl.

「Follow the plan, your role is only to cast《Heat Metal》..... But if you feel that the 2 of them is in danger, then do not save your MP, and cast magic to help them, do as the situation calls for.」

「Mmm!」

Mia expressed a strong nodding in her own way. I said「okay」, and then looked at everyone……

「Then please rank up.」

We returned to the original place, and head towards the final battle place.

◆◆◆

When I returned to the tree from the white room, the situation at the orcs seemed to have changes at the same time.

The orcs finally gave up, beginning to ignore the elite orcs' instructions, escaping all around.

Some escaped into the forest; some tried to pass the elite orcs, but they are cut into shreds; some gave up and tried to pass the frontline, only to get stab through.

In the hell like scene of shrieks and cries, Arisu and Tamaki calmly continue to observe the prey before their eyes.

This is fine, get rid of the small fries first, then open a path to the elite orcs.

Their Weapon Skills are raised to Rank 4, and they are getting familiar with their weapons, and their movements are more agile.

This is good, if it's like this, even if they meet with the elite orcs……

At this moment, a roar that could freeze a person's body came from deep inside the enemy's camp.

It's the elite orcs' roar.

And it is a roar by the 3 of them at the same time.

Luckily none of them are scared by it, not wasting the MP that I had spent to cast《Clear Mind》on everyone except for Arisu.

Judging from our level, Arisu and I should be able to handle it……

Just as I expected, the elite orcs' roar rang in my ears, and I could only feel it as being noisy.

As for Arisu, she is mercilessly attacking the orcs who had stopped due to the roar, concentrating on killing. Arisu has become a merciless killing machine, her growth is indeed excellent.

Some fellow suddenly got closer to Arisu.

Because the orcs are escaping, the group became less dense, creating a route between Arisu and the elite orcs.

An elite orc is rushing toward Arisu.

「Arisu, it's coming!」

I shouted out. But before my voice could reach, she had already turned and dashed into the forest. Very good, she is able to notice the situation around her.

The elite orc chased Arisu into the forest, everything was just as I had planned.

The other elite orc indeed also entered the forest to chase after Tamaki.

Arisu and Tamaki killed too many orcs, and hence became too obvious. In the orcs' eyes, they would have felt that they should take actions to defeat the 2 of them first.

The strategy was effective.

「Mia, Shiki-san, I will count on you.」

「Mmmm.」

「Understood, leave it to me.」

Mia jumped down from the tree, and ran out with Shiki-san.

Our strategy is—— Shiki-san will find Arisu and Tamaki in the forest, and Mia will cast《Heat Metal》to make the elite orcs drop their weapons.

Okay, the problem is now about the last elite orc that is roaming around freely……

The road forward is blocked by the escaping orcs.

But it could still pass through the left and right side of the forest.

Will this fellow go after Arisu or Tamaki? I must decide the next strategy based on its decision……

Just as I was thinking about it, that elite orc rush directly forward.

Huh? It is using its giant axe to kill the escaping orcs, shortening the distance between it and my camp. Argh, even if it kills its companions, it also wants to proceed forward!

Shit. A chill went down my spine, this forceful tactic was out of my expectations. No, they have already did something like this, I should have expected that the situation will become like this.

To these fellows, the lives of their companions are just pawns to be thrown away.

This matter should be incorporated into the planning as well. Shiki-san and I did not expect them to be so crazy, we are too naive.

「Hurry up and escape!」

I shouted to the 3 girls who are ready with their spears across the trap.

Once they escape, me who is nearby on the tree will be in danger. But I still shouted out in reflex.

After shouting, then I realised this, but it's too late. But……

The girls who are ready with their spears did not escape, and remained firmly on the spot, waiting for the elite orc who was nearing the hole.

Their Spear Skill Rank is only 2, even Arisu who has Rank 3 Skill could barely handle it. Just Rank 2, even if there are 3 of them……

「We will protect you!」

One of them called out, she is the one who delivered the onigiri.

「We will protect Kazu-san! Please take the chance to escape!」

Huh? I was shocked. Protect? They want to protect me?

Why? As long as Arisu, Tamaki and Mia is around, then there is a way to defeat this elite orc. Other than me, there is still Shiki-san who can communicate and command.

「Didn't Kazu-san save us yesterday? So this time it's time for us to help Kazu-

san!」

Ah, I suddenly realised.

They felt that I was a hero, and believed in me. Thanks to Arisu and Shiki-san's hidden movement, their valuation of me is extremely high.

Such a stupid group of girls, how can I be such a noble person. I am only a failure, an outsider who cannot fit into the high school.

Anyway, I can't stay on the tree, there is no room to escape.

I jumped down from the tree, landing a few steps away from the girls. The impact from the landing, caused me to roll on the ground. I quickly got up, and discovered that the elite orc had already arrived at the hole, preparing to jump.

The bronze-coloured orc jump high up, and raise its axe in mid-air. The gigantic axe is aimed at the girl's head who said that she will protect me, and it was swung down.

I want to use the last reminder amount of MP to cast《Reflection》.....

But I can't, because this magic could only be used on one's party, so it can't be used to save her.

The girl did not retreat at all, and gave a strong stab. The sharp end of the spear stabbed into the abdomen of the elite orc, but the bronze-coloured orc did not gave a flinch. It used the momentum of the jump and swung its gigantic axe.

The girl's body became halves.

Blood gushed out like a fountain, what was once the girl's body fell left and right. The hands which once made onigiri for me, reached out powerlessly towards the sky, before falling on the ground.

The blood sprayed over the vicious face of the elite orc.

I stared blankly at that scene. The tragedy that happened before me, left me immobilized, only feeling numb in my brain.

The elite orc burst in the laughter brutally.

Chapter 34: The Second Defensive Battle at the Cultivating Center 5

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 34

Chapter 34: The Second Defensive Battle at the Cultivating Center 5

The girl who listened to my command, died in front of me.

It’s my mistake.

I have subconsciously, used a game’s thinking to consider things.

I had felt that, as long as the orcs remain in chaos and caused a jam, the elite orcs will not be able to come forward.

I forgot how violent and brutal the elite orcs are.

Because of this mistake, my companion died.

And the elite orc is currently in a state whereby it could move freely.

Arisu and Tamaki are currently at a faraway place fighting with the other elite orcs, and Mia is busy supporting them.

The bronze-coloured orc who cut the girl into halves, is currently kneeling down at a place which is a few steps from me.

It stood up, and looked at the girls at its sides.

「How dare you!」

The 2 girls left kept stabbing in rage. No, that sort of weak attack can’t even

harm that thick skin of the elite orc.

Just exactly how strong is the orc that Arisu and Tamaki have been facing? The truth is clearly shown before me now.

I felt that the flow of time have become slow.

Attacking randomly is too dangerous, the opponent will take the chance to retaliate in the time frame after they attacked. If their heads are chopped off, then everything will end.

But I can perhaps escape from the time that they bought. If I turn and escape now, perhaps I can survive.

There are still 2 familiar wolves by my side, if I use the 2 of them as shields for a few seconds, they could also buy me a bit of time.

And while I am moving, Arisu, Tamaki and Mia should return after defeating the elite orc. Then they can defeat this guy after that.

But in that interval, the girls fighting now could be killed……

But we can survive. Me, Arisu, Tamaki and Mia, and even Shiki-san can survive.

Thinking of the big picture, this is the best method.

If I calculate the risks and benefits, this method is the most suitable.

So, I ordered the 2 wolves.

「Go! Protect them carefully!」

The wolves indeed followed my orders and moved……

They rammed the girls' bodies.

The 2 wolves used their bodies to press on the 2 girls who are holding the spears.

「Ah……w……why?」

The 2 girls with spears looked speechlessly at me.

This moment, the elite orc's gigantic axe swept past their heads.

If they are not pushed down by the wolves, the girls would have lost their lives. The 2 of them will be cut into halves from their middle of their bodies.

I relaxed.

While I relaxed, I thought in my heart—— why?

Why didn't I take the chance to run? Why did I save them?

I actually knew the answer clearly. I raised my head and glared at the elite orc, staring straight into that evil red pupils.

That's right, I have already developed feelings for them.

I felt sorrow for the girl who died, and strongly blamed myself for not protecting her well, because I felt that I have the responsibility for protecting their lives.

Now then I realise the meaning in the words that Shiki-san had said. She advised me to not treat my companion's death as my responsibility, and that she will take on all these burden, so all I need to do is to treat them as pawns.

If I did not do so, my mind will perhaps collapse.

Thank you, Shiki-san.

Eat shit.

I stood up and glared at the elite orc.

This beast—— I glared at this violent murderer.

「Come at me, you damn pig!」

I don't know if the elite orc could understand my shouting, but it seem to have at least taken it as a challenge. Only seeing it roar in anger, getting closer to me.

Fireball and knives flew out from trees, attacking this elite orc.

The support from my companions are useless. Even if the elite orc is hit by fireballs in the stomach, its footsteps did not even stagger; the small knives that are thrown at his shoulders are also deflected off easily by its skin.

「That's right, come here!」

I dashed out while back facing the elite orc. Luckily I had casted《Physical Up》on my legs first. Anyway I need to buy as much time as possible.

At this moment——

I turned my sight to the entrance of the Cultivating Centre, and noticed that the door is opened. Someone walked out from inside, it's one of the girls that we have saved from the girls' dormitory.

The girl saw me and the elite orc that was chasing me, and was so scared until she stood at the spot.

Shit, if I ran over like this, I will involve her. I quickly stopped my steps, and jumped a few steps forward.

Then, a chill suddenly went down my back.

I quickly turned, and witnessed the moment that the elite orc threw its giant axe at me.

「《Reflection》!」

I immediately called out.

The giant axe that was approaching my face, met with an unseeable wall.

The axe was reflected by that wall, flying back at the one who threw it.

The giant axe cut into the elite orc's face, hitting its left eye, and blue blood gushed out like a spring. Did it succeed……?

The elite orc gave out an angry howl.

It pulled out the axe, and swung it strongly.

Just the wind pressure is enough to blow me away. No, that did not cause any lethal injuries to it.

This fellow is too strong, the difference in our power is too big. Other than Arisu and Tamaki, what other methods could be used to handle this monster?

And the elite orc got closer to me, only mindlessly swinging its axe. This fellow……can't see in its right eye?

Looking at it carefully, I noticed that its right eye is closed. Did it get contaminated with the blood that sprayed out? But what should I do? How should I attack this crazy axe swinging fellow……

Suddenly the randomly swinging axe coincidentally swung past a location near me, causing me to take a step back……

Hearing the sound of me stepping on the grass, the elite orc turned over suddenly.

Shit—— cold sweat covered my back, it had indeed captured my location.

The elite orc raised its giant axe, preparing to swing it and……

A chain flew out from the forest nearby, entangling the elite orc's legs. Looking at it carefully, Shiki-san showed her face slightly from the shadows of the tree.

「Great, this move is also considered as within the Throwing Skill.」

Shiki-san pulled at the chain strongly, causing the elite orc to lose its balance and fall. I stood there blankly, feeling completely dumb-folded……

「Kazu-kun! Steady yourself!」

Hearing Shiki-san's scolding, I regain my sanity. I gave the 2 gray wolves commands and they lurge at the elite orc together.

「Attack the hand that is holding the axe! If it's possible, bring the axe over!」

One of the wolves bit apart the struggling orc's finger, and the other used its mouth to bite on the handle of the giant axe, and dragged the axe over to me.

Because of the need when digging holes just now, so I had cast《Mighty Arm》on my body, and the time has yet to reach an hour.

After I looked at the giant axe for a while…… I picked with great determination.

「Wait, Kazu-kun! Let me……」

「Don’t come here, Shiki-san.」

It’s heavy, but if it is just swinging it, I can still manage it.

「This will be done by me, please let me do it.」

「Kazu……kun……」

Hearing Shiki-san’s voice, I understood—— she probably knows what had happened in the frontline.

Did she see it? Or did she deduced it?

Anyway is fine, she felt that I was in danger and came to save me. Even now she is struggling to salvage my mistake, that is what I can’t do.

Thank you, but this is my job.

The revenge must be done by me, if not I will not be able to forgive myself.

No, even if I did such a thing, I also do not feel that I will be forgiven. But I still have to do it.

1 step, 2 step, I walked closer to the elite orc that was still struggling.

The distance is just right. I gave a roar and swung my axe down.

The strength I displayed was extremely weak, it was simply shitty. But thanks to the weight of the axe, it still managed to become a strong blow.

And my luck was good, this blow happened to land on the neck of the elite orc.

The bronze coloured head flew up like a round ball, and then landed on the

ground, rolling on the grass.

「Defeated…… it.」

I sat blankly on the ground, feeling that my strength is gradually seeping out from my body.

The cheers entered my ears, looking at them carefully, the girls on the trees are cheering for me.

「Well done.」

Shiki-san came to my side and said to me in a small voice.

Chapter 35: Aftermath

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 35

Chapter 35: Aftermath

Seeing the elite orc who was the leader being defeated, the other orcs escaped in the confusion. The girls in the support party also chased closely behind, defeating them one by one for their companion's revenge. This is a big chance for leveling up, hence I also let them kill the orcs on the premise that they will not chase them too deeply in.

Arisu and Tamaki should have also successfully defeated the elite orcs. With Mia's support, I feel that there should not be any problem……

At this moment, Tamaki and Mia suddenly poke their head of the forest.

「It has ended over here. Kazu-san, we will go over to Arisu next……」

The moment the 2 of them looked at my face, they were so shocked that they could not say anything. Ah, is the expression on my face that bad? No, like this I could not qualified to be a commander.

「I will understand what happened here first, the 2 of you should go and support Arisu first.」

「Mmm, mmm, Shiki-san we understand.」

Tamaki and Mia looked worriedly, before turning away and moving out. Luckily, they don not seemed to have noticed the tragic scene near the trap. Mmm, it is better to not look at it. No matter if it is sorrow or condolences, they have to wait until the battle has ended.

「Kazu-kun, you should take a break.」

「That isn't good.」

「Listen.」

I was glared at by Shiki-san. Ah, damn, I am really useless. I signed and lowered my shoulders. At this timing, the sound of leveling up sounded.

I see, it was smooth on Arisu's side.

In the white room, Arisu and the others looked at me with faces of worry.

「Kazu-san, what happened?」

Arisu asked, so I told her the news of the death of our companion.

The 3 girls swallow their saliva, and looked at me.

「Is that so……Akane-chan……」

Tamaki said.

「Her name is called Akane?」

「Mmm, Shimoyamada Akane-chan. She is from the cooking society, and had once made a bento beside me and Arisu, saying it's for her boyfriend, and she did it with vigor……」

Is that so—— I nodded.

Until now, I noticed that I do not even know her name.

What kind of feeling did she have when she was making the onigiri? She must be

worried about the situation that her lover is in. In the situation of despair, she still had traces of hope, thinking that we could perhaps save her lover?

But, wouldn't dying as a shield be defeating that purpose? Because she would not be able to see her boyfriend anymore.

I sat on the floor of the white room, powerlessly.

I lifted my thighs, lowered my head and sighed.

Ah, what am I doing.

I had to encourage everyone, and why am I showing my depressed state in front of the 3 of them? Didn't I promise to Shiki-san that I will be strong?

That's right, Shiki-san had said so that time—— even if our companions die, it is all her responsibility, and that I do not have to feel responsible for that.

How can that be.

I will definitely mind it, after all I was the one who caused her death. I bit my lips tightly, to the extent that blood flowed, and the taste of iron was felt in my mouth.

If I gave my body more pain, will I feel better? I thought so.

I clenched my fist. What am I saying? What am I doing.

This moment, I was hugged tightly by someone.

And it's not only one but 3. They came from the front and my sides and hugged me tightly.

I can feel that warmth of their bodies, as well as their sweat, and their breaths

are blowing on me, even their heartbeat were transmitted.

Raising my head, I discovered Arisu's face was in the middle and the left and right were Mia and Tamaki. (TL note: the author finally placed Mia's name first!!!!)

「Kazu-san is not alone.」

Arisu said so.

「Yes, Kazu-san, did you comfort me that like too? So now it is our turn to comfort you.」

「Mmm.」

They revealed a smile with enough warmth to encompass me, and a serious expression.

「To go through both happiness and pain, that is a companion.」

「Mia……」

「A certain manga said so.」

A good atmosphere was spoilt by this fellow.

「Kazu-chi, a guy do not have work so hard, occasionally revealing a weak side is cool.」

「Oi.」

I glared at Mia, this petite girl answered with a「mmm」like a proper lady, and nodded…… then lightly kissed my forehead.

「Mmm.」

「.....Argh.」

「This is a kiss to console a desolated guy.」

Mia blushed, and looked at me straight. Her eyes are very serious, she is really worried about me.

I stole a glance at Arisu. Arisu used both her hands to hold my face, and locked my head in place. Then she came forward and our lips overlapped with each other. A short kiss, and Arisu revealed a grin.

「Come, Tamaki too.」

「Eh, but Arisu——」

「This is just everyone consoling Kazu-san only.」

I looked at Tamaki. Tamaki played with her golden hair strands and lowered her head shyly. Then she locked eyes with me as though she had some sort of determination.

「..... I am going console you.」

「Oh, okay.」

Tamaki kissed my cheek.

「Ah, such a boring kiss.」

Mia smirked to taunt at Tamaki, causing her to shout out while blushing:「I..it's fine! The lips are for Arisu!」. That look was really cute, I could not help but laugh.

「Mmm, finally smiled.」

「Yes, it was all of you who made me smile, thanks.」

「Mmm.」

Without a sense of urgency, fatigue came in, The warmth from their bodies, made me feel very peaceful.

I caressed Mia and Tamaki's hair, and both squinted their eyes, as though it is very comfortable.

「Arisu, I also want to thank you.」

「Yes….. This, ah, but……」

「Huh?」

Arisu hesitated for a while and looked at me before speaking:

「Kazu-san, you...your survival is the most happy thing for me.」

「Ah, mm, I will do my best.」

「Please do not die.」

「Well, I also do not wish to die.」

Is it because she saw that I was depressed so she is worried? No, the feeling is a bit different. I quietly looked at Arisu's obsidian-like pupils, and her sights are swaying, as though she can't calm down.

「Please remember this, as long as Kazu-san is alive, then I will feel very fortunate.」

Kazuhisa: Level 9 Support Magic 4 / Summon Magic 3 Skill Points 3

◆ ◆ ◆

Returning back to the original place, I left the role of exterminating the leftover orcs to my other companions and looked at the person who came out from the Cultivating Centre.

It's the girl who had a pony tail. Ah, then the girl who spoke to me at the girls' dormitory is also her.

「Sorry, I had interfered with your battle just now.」

The girl lowered her head, it seems she isn't afraid, but yet I am unable to feel other strong emotions from her. But her looks does not seem to have shown that she had let it go.

The girl raised her head.

「I wish to see the looks of orcs being killed. They made us go through such a scary experience, so I wish to see the looks of these fellows dying.」

The girl lightly mentioned it, and her clenched fist is shaking.

「Thanks to all of you, I saw a very happy scene.」

「I.. I see.」

「But I wish to see more orcs die.」

The girl used an emotionless tone to say that, and that pair of black eyes that contains a deep darkness penetrated me.

「Please let me level up.」

Mmm, this wish is just as what I had wanted. If it's now, it should be easy to restrain the escaping orcs.

「If there are others like you and can move immediately……」

The pony-tailed girl turned back and waved to the other girls hiding inside the inner side of the main door at the Cultivating Centre.

Including her, there are 4 person.

「I understand, all of you should take the bamboo spears—— do you know what is that? It is that which is beside the main door, then come with me. If you can lift the iron spears, then you can take those too. Argh, it is better to have Arisu too……」

At this moment, I am transferred to the white room again, so it was Tamaki and Mia who leveled up.

「It came at the right time!」

Seeing the happy emotion that was different from a few minutes ago, Arisu and the others looked at each other while puzzled.

「Nothing. Erm, Arisu, Tamaki and Mia, I have something I want you to help with.」

Hence I asked Arisu to help the girls whom we have rescued from the girls' dormitory to level up. And to let Mia raise Wind Magic to Rank 2.

「Increasing the variety of our tactics is better.」

She expressed so and I also agreed with that thinking.

Tamaki: Level 7　Sword Skill 4／Physical 1　Skill Point 3
Mia: Level 7　Earth Magic 4／Wind Magic 1 → 2　Skill Point 3 → 1

◆ ◆ ◆

Leveling up the girls who just came to the Cultivating Centre was easier than I had expected.

After all they have extreme hatred towards the orcs, hence when using the bamboo spear to stab at the enemies, they showed no signs of hesitation.

When the extermination battle ended, the 4 of them are raised to level 1.

◆ ◆ ◆

The battle ended. The orcs are all escaping, and there is no signs of any enemies near the surroundings of the Cultivating Centre. Suffering such a brutal defeat, will they gather their companions again to attack?

Even if they will come again, I feel that it will not be today, although this is merely a wishful thinking of mine.

Shiki-san judged that there should not be any orcs going to report.

「Reporting such a tragic ending to the commander, will they still be alive? I guess they will pretend that they don’t know, and then escape to a place where the commanders cannot find them.」

From how the elite orcs commanded, perhaps the result is like how she mentioned. Even though their ruling is not like an army, but from the actions of those orcs until now, it indeed has that possibility.

No matter what, even if the enemies come now, we are unable to battle.

Everyone is extremely tired, and I am also too exhausted, wanting to just collapse and rest.

But before that, I have something I need to finish.

「I wish to make a grave for Shimoyamada Akane-san.」

Everyone expressed their will to help.

But I rejected.

「If there are others who died in the future, I will depend on you all, but this time, just let me do it.」

Shiki-san stared at me as though wanting to say something, and finally just said「I understand」, and then turned away.

「Then just do it until you are happy.」

I went to the back of the Cultivating Centre and dug the grave alone. Arisu, Tamaki and Mia placed the pieces of the corpse in a bucket and brought it over.

「Shiki-senpai called us 3 to come and help.」

「I see.」

I could understand her thinking, she wants to use my emotions as a way to strengthen the relationship of this elite party.

Damn. But at the same time, I also felt that this plan is really good.

I am angry at her actions but at the same time I admired her leadership.

The contradiction in my heart, caused me to groan out.

Then the 3 girl placed their hands on mine.

「Let me say this again, Kazu-san you are not alone.」

Arisu said so on behalf of all 3 of them, and my tears could not help but flow out.

Chapter 36: Main School Building of the Middle School Section

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 36

Chapter 36: Main School Building of the Middle School Section

The time is now at noon.

We decided to rest a while, although an afternoon nap sounds very relaxing, but everyone is actually too tired.

After the two Year 1 students returned to the Cultivating Centre, they collapsed in the lounge.

The 2 surviving frontliners brought a change of gym clothings and panties and entered the toilet quickly.

Everyone treated it as though they did not see it, it is really heart-warming.

But Mia still happily told me about this. This girl seemed to be more energetic than the others, I don't know if it is because of the level up so her endurance also got increased. But after all she had been brought around, so she is still a bit unstable when walking.

「So smelly, the 2 of them are so scared until they shitted.」

This girl is really a rascal.

I felt that the situation when the elite orc is approaching and that a companion, who has been fight alongside you, is splitted into 2, just being able to maintain conscious is already pretty impressive. Is this the effect of《Clear Mind》? If that is so, then it has not been a waste of my MP to cast them.

One of our companions died.

But everyone is quieter than I had expected. Even though they are sad, but the only one minding our companion's death is only me.

Thinking about it carefully, this is natural. The people who went to the girls' dormitory have all seen the tragic deaths of their friends, even if they didn't see them, they also went through a lot yesterday.

Have their tears dried? Or is it simply that they have gotten used to people dying? No matter what, the feelings that are gradually being numbed is also a fortunate thing.

I feel that it is a good thing that everyone is not shocked by a person's death. If they mind it too much, they will fall sick mentally soon.

Afterall, we are surrounded by too many deaths.

◆ ◆ ◆

I am also exhausted. Actually now we should be concentrating on scouting or being alert, but I no longer have the strength to mind such things.

「During this timing, we will be staying guard, please rest well.」

The pony-tailed girl called Nagatsuki Sakura said so.

「But, all of you should be tired?」

「When we are being raped by the orcs, we are all half-awake.」

When she said these words, her emotions did not change, causing me to not know if it is true, or just a low level joke. But I chose to accept their kind

intentions now.

After all the members of the support party are all first-timers in the battle, and they should have long passed their limits. The girls are lying in the lounge not caring about their image, that is what I thought as I looked down from the balcony on level 2.

The person who exhausted them to this state is me, and there is someone who is sacrificed.

Shimoyamada-san, her death is my responsibility, and I will gladly accept all these.

From now on, there could others who will die and those are all my responsibility.

But I am not alone, there is Arisu, Tamaki and Mia, and Shiki-san will also split the responsibility with me.

I must endure, and learn to split responsibility and live with everyone, then I will be able to repay Shimoyamada-san who died for me.

I must go and do what I can do.

Luckily, I got a strong magic from the battle just now—— Rank 4 Support Magic《Hard Weapon》and《Hard Armour》, I am going use them to strengthen everyone's weapon and defensive equipment.

If possible, I wish to strengthen everyone's gym clothes and bloomers. Other than that, I also wish to strengthen some hats.

I raised it up to Shiki-san and was retorted immediately.

She brought me to a room on level 3 and then locked the door.

We are alone in the room. Shiki-san wanted me to sit on the bed while she herself sat on the chair and crossed her legs, then arrogantly raised her chin.

「You actually thought of casting magic on everyone, how long do you think it will take? Including the 4 who just level up to level 1, there is a total of 8 vanguards. Among them, you just have to enhance Arisu and Tamaki's set of clothes and hats, even gloves too. The others just enhance the gym clothes, for the rearguard there is no need to enhance anything, except for you and Mia.」

But—— I protested, and Shiki-san shook her head.

「Listen carefully, Kazu-kun. We are not equal, among the members, there are some who can die and some who definitely cannot die. The 4 persons in the elite party cannot die, especially you. You are everyone's hope, there is no one that can replace you.」

「You mean that Shimoyamada-san is replaceable?」

「Mmm, that's right.」

Shiki-san said it in a calm tone and then gave a cold laugh. She has expressed herself as though she is the antagonist, even though she is not well-versed in acting, she still tried to be like a demon queen.

But the fist that she is clenching is still shaking. That pair of eye stared at me, the feeling is sorrowful yet lonely. This person is not suitable as an actress.

「Even though it's a pity, but both you and I are special. We are different from Shimoyamada-san, we cannot die to escape from all these. If anyone of us dies, we will be leaderless. Using other people as bait, struggle to survive, even if disabled, we must also survive—— this is what a leader should do.」

She loved to talk to me about such irritating and horrifying stuff. Such depressing stories to make my heart timid.

But now I understand, this is her sincerity. I am not alone. Shiki-san also means that she, too holds the preparation to take on the deaths of her companions.

This is really stupid, she likes to push herself even more as compared to me.

「Kazu-kun, if Arisu is necessary to you, then to let her survive, you must do your utmost to invest in her, even if it decrease the resources that are given to us.」

「Do you feel that this is fine?」

「I am fine with anything.」

Shiki-san smiled.

「I have already decided not to run. No matter what kind of difficulty, I will do my best to resist. Even if I am hated.」

「Even if I disagree?」

「I will convince you.」

「Even if I guard against Shiki-san, will you be able to convince me?」

「Well, if it is difficult face to face, then I will link up with Arisu first. If that does not work, then I will cry to Tamaki. Mia is smart, so I think that she will agree with my thinking……」

My instincts tells me—— that this person is dangerous. No, I knew this since the beginning.

She is a bad girl. If I want to escape from her, perhaps I can only end her life.

Shiki Yukariko this girl knows that as long as Arisu is around, I will not take such

reckless actions. Because there is the safety called Arisu, she is able to be honest with me on all these stuff.

「Mmm, anyway that will be like this.」

Shiki-san stood up after finishing, and looked at me rebelliously.

「You are not allowed to die, Kazu-kun. You cannot break down too. If you feel upset, then rely on Arisu or me. No matter how ridiculous, it is fine. As long as you feel there is a need, just tell me. I will think of something.」

If there is a need…… I revealed a bitter smile.

If I say I need a woman, she will definitely offer me her body. Maybe she will even add in a sentence:「Do you think that I do not have this level of awareness?」

Even if I expressed that I want a companion's body, no matter who, she will go and convince the other party. Ah ah, this girl is really……

Eat shit.

Mmm, how should I say it—— I finally found a word that is very suited for her.

「You are really manly.」

Shiki-san revealed a bitter expression as though she ate something bitter.

Good, I got back at her. I clenched my fist.

◆◆◆

My current level is 9, 9 MP will be recovered for every 10 minutes, to fully recover, I will need 1 hour and 40

minutes.

In the time while waiting for MP to recover, I sent the crow out to scout, while I lie in the room on level 3. Shiki-san is sitting on the chair nearby, with both her hands around her chest, looking at me like that.

《Summon Raven》requires 1 MP, 《Remote Viewing》 need 3 MP. With all these calculated inside, I cast 《Remote Viewing》 on the crow that flew off.

First is the main building of the Middle School Section. I had verified with my eyes that this is our real aim—— the place where the orcs are gathered. Just now the orc army that marched to the Cultivating Centre also came from the direction of the main building. We should have decreased quite a bit of their fighting force, but……

The premise of the school building has about 30 orcs currently, and there is a campfire in the middle of the schoolyard.

The ones burning inside are humans. The orcs seem have used the corpses as firewood, then cheered around the surrounding, as though they are doing some ceremony.

I bit my lips tightly when I am surveying the scene. The crow will not hesitate because of my emotions, it flew around in the air and then entered the main school building to scout.

The building has a total of 3 floors. The windows at the level 1 classrooms are all broken, and it was done from the outside. The orcs seems to have broke the glass windows and entered from there.

Although that time school had ended, many students seemed to have stayed in the school. I saw many corpses of the teachers which had their head splitted apart by axes, and there are still naked bodies of the girls being raped by the orcs. They are completely powerless, not even moving.

The crows surveyed on the level 2 and 3, including the interior. Occasionally I can see bronze colored orcs mixed within the small fry orcs. In the main school building, there are perhaps 7, 8 elite orcs.

From the situation, there could be close to 10. This number is too many, enough to make me despair.

Then its level 3, the deepest part on this level is the music classroom, the sturdy door of the classroom is opened.

The crow sneakily peeked into the classroom, inside there is only an exceptionally big black colored orc. In its hand is a shiny silver sword and it's covered with a golden cape, sitting firmly on the piano, looking lazily at its subordinates that are servicing him.

General orc—— such a word floated in my mind. Even if it is not called this name, it should not be too far away. That orc indeed have the air of having been through hundreds of battles.

Beside the general orc, there is a black coloured animal with a lot of fur. What is that? That thing hid under the shadow of the piano, so I can't see its figure clearly.

That animal is bigger than my familiar gray wolf and its eyes gave off a red glow.

At this timing, the sight of that animal came over. No, it locked eyes with the crow.

That look sends shiver down my spine, a feeling of being seen through surged through my body.

The next second, that animal raised it head and looked at the general orc.

The general orc’s right hand moved. It is throwing, it threw something sharp at the crow.

I shutted my eyes unconsciously……

The connection broke and the crow has been killed.

Chapter 37: Aerial Investigation

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 37

Chapter 37: Aerial Investigation

I sighed, and climbed up from the bed and sat opposite to the chair, giving a simple explanation to Shiki-san who has been looking at me.

「Is that so?」

Shiki-san's color turned bad. Is it because there is a higher existence than the elite orc, so she felt uneasy? Or is it the presence of another fellow other than orcs, causing her to feel the sense of danger?

「How strong is it?」

「You are referring to?」

「The general orc.」

「I am not sure, but the oppressing feeling….. it is so high that the elite orc cannot even compare with it.」

「If the whole elite party move out, what are the chances of victory?」

「With our current strength, I guess even if it's a 4 against 1, it will be hard.」

I said my feelings honestly. If the elite orc's level is 5 and the Skill is Pigman Rank 4……

Then the general orc is at least Pigman Rank 6, or perhaps even Pigman Rank 7.

Pigman Rank 7, which means if it concentrate on raising 1 skill, the level will be 14 if counted in the same way as us. From its oppressive aura, having such a level of strength is not surprising.

No, in actuality we are not sure if the other party only leveled 1 skill, it could have a secret weapon. Anyway, Arisu and Tamaki's weapon skill Ranks are only 4. From the current state, the chance of us obtaining victory is very low. I told Shiki-san of this opinion.

「Can I say out my views honestly, Kazu-kun?」

「Please.」

「You naming the skill as Pigman, it gives off a bad feeling.」

「Mmm, I think so too.」

Shiki-san shrugged her shoulders.

「In other words, Arisu and Tamaki's weapon skill needs to reach Rank 5, if not there is no way to even compete.」

「Ah—— it should be so, without Rank 5, it will be hard, even if I use buffing magic to raise their ability, there is still a limit to it.」

And we have to consider its underlings, even if Skill Rank is 5, it will be harsh. If the aim is to reach Rank 6……

Their weapon skills took a bit of effort to get to Rank 4.

「Arisu's level need to raise by 6 while it is 4 for Tamaki.」

「To attack the main school building within today, seems like an impossible mission?」

I said so in low spirits. But Shiki-san hugged her arms, and said in a lower tone in a reluctant way:

「If it is possible, I hope that we can do something by today.」

「Why?」

「If tomorrow comes, those captured girls could all die.」

I see—— I nodded, I understand her worries.

Those girls are captured by the orcs for nearly an entire day. If during this period, they have been continuously used by the orcs…… enduring until this time, it is already a miracle.

「Other than that, there is something that is troubling me, can I say it?」

「What is it?」

「In the girls' dormitory, the girls alive plus the corpses in each room, there are roughly about 80 people. According to what you said, even if we count the corpse in the campfire, the total number of boys and girls are at most 150 people right? If the situation is the same at the boys' dormitory, and you count in the students that participated in the societies…… don't you think that the number is a bit too little?」

Argh—— 80 plus 80 plus 150, means there are around 300? But the middle school section should have at least 700 people…...

「Eh, that's right. Don't tell me more than half of the students…… all went to participate in clubs and societies?」

「Our school's societies are not that flourishing, and there are also no other

places to play at.」

We looked at each other.

「I will go and ask the juniors who are keeping watch.」

The 10 girls that we saved from the girls' dormitory, 4 of them have already raised to level 1, and they are currently standing guard at the main entrance in turns, for us who are already exhausted.

Shiki-san wanted to stand up quickly……

But she tripped.

I quickly got up from the bed and supported her shoulders.

Soap smell permeated from her body. Yes, they had just taken a shower. Later I should go wash up too, now the smell of sweat on my body should be very strong.

My thoughts only lasted for an instant. Shiki-san pushed away my hands, as though she is very afraid. She panted as though she is out of breath, and kept shaking her head strongly.

「So..sorry, I……」

Is she still afraid of being touched by guys? This is also natural.

「Don't tell me that you didn't let Arisu cast《Cure Mind》on you?」

「Because I do not want to lose this pain.」

Shiki-san shook her head with a sorrowful face.

「This pain is necessary. The hatred towards the orcs, and the regrets for the kids who died in front of me, these 2 emotions supports the current me.」

Such a troublesome girl—— I thought so. I did not have any meaning of belittling her, because I do not plan on denying her way of fighting.

But facing her stubbornness and fool-headedness, I still not suppress the emotions that surprised me. Shiki-san seemed to have understood my feeling and revealed a bitter smile.

「This is fine, I do not have the value for gaining your pity. The past me, the me who abandoned you, is without a doubt also part of me.」

「You are tired.」

「Perhaps.」

Shiki-san laughed lonelily.

◆ ◆ ◆

Shiki-san expressed that she is going to ask the people whom we rescued from the girls' dormitory and left. While I summoned another crow and cast《Remote Viewing》on it.

There is no need for the main school building, I intend to let it scout out another area. The me from the crow's viewpoint, flew out from the window on the Cultivating Centre level 3, and follow the airflow into the blue sky, then glide in the air, flying past the main school building, with the front as target.

First I head to the staff office. Even if there are a few, it's fine, if there are adult survivors……

But that false hope was broken very easily.

No, the staff office is originally beside the main school building, even if there are survivors, knowing that the orcs are gathering nearby, they will also not stay there.

If there are survivors, they should have already escaped to the places where the orcs can't reach. That is what I had thought……

But, the staff office no longer existed. More correctly, the building that was once the staff office had collapsed, becoming a pile of broken bricks.

My instincts tells me that it should have collapsed during the earthquake. I remembered what Arisu said yesterday, the staff office is the oldest building in the middle school section, and it was decided to be renovated recently.

From this scenario, it will be hard for the teachers and staffs to survive the earthquake. Because of this, the students in the middle school section had to fight with the orcs without any help from adults.

No, even if there are adults, how much can it change……

Even so, the ending could have been a bit better. If there are adults leading, the students could have gone to escape.

But the reality is not so. The students have to face the threat of the orcs alone, and nearly all of them failed to escape successfully.

According to Tamaki's words, Mia is a survivor from the students who escaped by themselves. It was Tamaki who saved Mia and another companion who have escaped from the main school building. Will the good fortune that Mia have, also be given to the other students? I feel that the chances is quite small.
Ah, forget it, it is better to scout first.

The crow followed my instructions that was given earlier, and flew past the staff

office, toward the next destination—— the boys' dormitory.

Honestly speaking, I desperately need guy companions. In mangas or animes, a guy who stays alone with a group of girls, will hence cheer because of the harem situation, but to me who is realistic, I could not cheer up.

Whether it is being concerned about others, or being concerned, all these made me feel uneasy.

And even if I use support magic to raise my muscle strength, digging holes is still a very energy consuming work, and currently there are no girls whose speed is even ⅕ of mine.

Argh~ perhaps it is partly due to me being used to digging, but if it is a guy's muscle, the situation should be better, that is what I hope.

Because of this, I placed my hope on the guy survivors…… Only that the truth is not as I wished.

The boys' dormitory has been burnt.

I don't know the ones who set the fire are the orcs or the students who sunk into confusion.

A word of notice, there are many corpses of the students stacked in a pile at the tragic scene, all of them are boys, there could be roughly around 200 people.

After that, I had the crow to survey every building in the middle school section.

None of the buildings are safe. Other than the Cultivating Centre, the other buildings are all occupied by the orcs.

A few thinkings have already surfaced in my numbed heart.

Like「like this huh」,「the situation is now in despair」etc.

No one will come and help us, we have to fight with our own abilities. The ones who can resist are only the few of us in this Cultivating Centre.

The crow returned to my side.

There is still a lot of time for《Remote Viewing》, hence I sent a few more orders to the crow.

The crow flew to the sky again.

Chapter 38: High School Section

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 38

Chapter 38: High School Section

The crow flew through the forest, towards the east direction, to the high school section.

Until now, I have completely disregarded the high school section. There are 2 routes linking the middle school section to the high school section, and one of them is already destroyed, while the other has become a route for the orcs to move.

With this, it is obvious that nobody will come and assist from the high school section. Since that is so, it is better to search for survivors in the middle school section.

That is what I have felt until now.

The majority of the middle section has been investigated, hence there is a need to get a hold of the situation in the high school section.

Honestly, I do not have any good memories of the people in the high school section, and I even felt that those people should all be killed by the orcs. Before yesterday that is what I had thought, but now, I still agree to about 80%.

But no matter how much I hate them, the orc threat is the most urgent problem.

If there are more helpers, if there are more companions, perhaps Shimoyamada Akane will not have to die.

Once I had thought about her death, I had to change my thinking. The people at

the high school section indeed ridicule and regarded me with contempt, pushing me physically and mentally to the limits. I had once been beaten, kicked, trampled upon on my head, forced to obey humiliating commands and ridiculed.

But they did not take away my life.

While the orcs will chop off my head with their axes.

Hence if Shiki-san judged that this method will work, then I will attempt to consider if we will join hands with the high school section.

No matter how much I hated it. But if those fellows at the high school section mentioned my past situation until yesterday to Tamaki, Mia and the others….. Once I thought about this, cold sweat permeated my body.

Although even if this really happens, Arisu and Shiki-san will still be my companions. Tamaki and Mia will definitely not mind these, and continue to defend me.

But the others…… what about them?

Even though it's an accident, but I feel that everyone will stand on my side. We had once faced the orcs in battle before, facing a strong enemy that was very imposing, and endured to the limits, forming feelings of companionship, although that could be my one-sided feelings…...

While I am considering such matters, the crow finally reached the distance where we can clearly see the high school buildings. First is the most noticeable main school building. That is a 4 storey building, because it was newly built 5 years ago, the outside and inside are all very beautiful. As a side note, the toilets inside are all bidet toilets. (TL note: who is reminded of Gunota ga Mahou Sekai ni Tensei Shitara, Gendai Heiki de Guntai Harem o Tsukucchaimashita!?)

The windows in the main school building are all broken and I can see shadows of

the orcs moving inside. I could only shout out with an「ah」.

「Even that side?」

I could not help but murmured. The crow kept on diving through different buildings in the high school section.

Then I saw it.

There are humans there, living humans that are walking around. Near the 2nd boys' dormitory of the high school section, there are a few guys and girls fighting with the orcs.

It's the survivors, survivors other than us. They are using swords and magic to fight with the orcs.

Then, I discovered a guy inside that party.

That person have slender eyes like cats, a thin but hunchback figure, an aquiline nose coupled with a unique malicious smile. I will definitely not see wrongly, that guy is——

Saso Shiba.

The guy who is in the same class, the one who bullied me to the utmost.

Shiba proudly ordered the people around, while he stood behind them, with a hunting rifle from who knows where, in his hands.

That's right, it's a real gun. There is such a thing in the school? Or is it hidden by someone before?

I am not sure about the answer. But anyway, Shiba is holding the hunting rifle in his hands.

One of the girls holding the sword is pressed down by the orc and is screaming, trembling. Shiba, once he saw that scene, a grin appeared on the edge of his mouth, and after pointing the muzzle at the orc who is pressing on the girl, and pulled the trigger. The orc's head is blown away, collapsing on the girl.

My whole body stiffened, and my throat is dry, and I clenched my fist involuntarily.

What is this? What is that fellow doing? Oi Shiba, what are you……

The crow flew past the place of gathering, and returned.

◆◆◆

「Kazu-kun?」

Shiki-san's voice entered my ears, I cut《Remote Viewing》and raised my head.

I don't know when did Shiki-san come to beside, causing to be so shocked until I inched back.

「Ah, I am fine, sorry Shiki-san」

「Then that is good…… You sweated a lot.」

「Because, it is too hot.」

「Hand.」

Shiki-san pointed to my right hand. I opened my hand, and noticed that my palm is bleeding due my clenching.

「Noticed that? You are trembling.」

Is it—— I nodded. Mmm, I know that I am afraid. Even though it is nonsensical, but once I saw him, I will still be very afraid. A certain something have craved itself deep within my soul, and the past wounds are tormenting me. Once I saw that face, I will have breathing difficulties.

「What happened?」

I judged that such things should not be hidden, hence I said out what I saw honestly. I spoke everything in bits and pieces, without hiding anything. Shiki-san listened while maintaining the silence.

「I will sit here.」

Shiki-san took off her shoes and climbed onto the small king-size bed, sitting beside me. Our distance is so close until our shoulders could nearly touch each other. Her shoulders are slightly slanted, it should be that she is still a bit afraid of guys.

「What do you want?」

「Just like you are not good with Saso-kun, I am also afraid of guys. But I believe this can be overcome. No matter how tough it is, I will fight for you to see, and not seek assistance from magic.」

Shiki-san said to her side. She laughed ironically, while leaning her body to a side, placing her shoulders on my body, like she is fooling around with me. Through her shirt, I can feel her warmth and her trembling….. No, it's fear.

「But it must be painful.」

「Mmm, sorry.」

「What do you want to say?」

「You are not alone, only this, you must not forget about it.」

「I know.」

「If you met Saso-kun on the battlefield, then depend on Arisu, Tamaki and Mia. If he has any intention of talking, then let me do it. If something really happens, no matter how ugly your actions are, it is fine. But, even so, please believe in our support to you, and not escape from facing Saso-kun.」

Ah, right. I had just remembered, I have something very important that I have yet to tell her. It should be, I completely forgot. I only told this to Arisu.

「That, are you willing to hear my confession?」

「Mmm, tell me.」

「Yesterday I could defeated an orc initially, and leveled up to level 1 successfully, do you know why?」

「Now that you mentioned it, I never asked.」

「Do you know why I am so good at digging?」

「Don’t know, why?」

Shiki-san blanked out for a while. So she will also give such an expression? I could only snicker in secret.

「Wait, what is it?」

「Sorry, I should not smile. I did not have any meaning of ridiculing you.」

「Continue just now that topic. Why are you so good at digging?」

「Yesterday before the earthquake, I had intended on luring that guy, Saso Shiba to the forest and let him drop into the hole I dug, and pour gasoline over him, then stab him to death with the bamboo spear.」

「I see.」

「You are not shocked at all.」

「The feeling is like a puzzle being pieced back, I finally knew why Arisu tried to wiggle her way out. In the end, that murder plan failed. 」

「At the crucial moment, the earthquake happened and that guy ran back to the high school section in shock.」

「Then the orc walked over and drop into the hole?」

「That's right.」

Shiki-san shrugged her shoulders in a dramatic way.

「Lucky.」

「Indeed.」

「I am saying about us. Thanks to your intention to kill Saso-kun, after a few complicated times, then we could survive like now. If not. I am probably tortured to death by the orcs.」

「Well that is one way of saying.」

「So, thank you.」

Shiki-san said so, and smiled after turning towards me.

「Thanks for the preparation that you made for killing Saso-kun.」

「That is a crime.」

「Currently there is no law in this place, so we are the only ones who can decide if this is a crime. I will support your actions, no matter what I will defend you. So this is not a crime, you are justice itself.」

「What warped reasoning.」

「Yeah. But morals will change according to era, it is not absolute.」

So—— Shiki-san continued:

「You must maintain your confidence and lead everyone.」

I hesitated for a while, and nodded.

「Meaning I am law.」

「Mmm, that's right. As long as you are willing, I can make every girl in the Cultivating Centre yours.」

「Arisu will get angry.」

「That's right, Arisu is your law.」

Shiki-san snickered, and then her expression turned serious again.

「Kazu-kun, there is only a thing that you must have a certain realisation.」

「Realisation?」

「The realisation to kill someone. Meaning or perhaps in the future, you may have to kill others beside Saso-kun」

I frowned, while Shiki-san just shook her head slowly.

「Of course, that time do remember to tell me first, I will give you the instructions.『please kill this person』, you must follow my orders and kill your past classmates and senpais.」

「You……」

Shiki-san used her hand to press on her chest and smiled, that smile is so bewitching that it sends shivers down my spine.

「Let me be the villain. Your…… no, all your filth will be beared by me 」

Shiki-san’s heroic words, caused me to hold my breath.

Chapter 39: Shiki-san’s Repentance

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 39

Chapter 39: Shiki-san’s Repentance

Before 2pm, I spent all my time on enhancing gym clothes and weapons.

With this, my MP is completely empty, and it will need about 100 minutes before they are completely recovered.

「When your MP recovers, we should also move out to fight.」

Shiki-san decisively announced. When I finished casting all the magic, she enter my room on level 3.

I sat on the bed and Shiki-san sat on the only chair in the room, facing me.

「While I said that, the ones responsible for the battle are the 4 of you.」

「After all it is better to concentrate the experience on us.」

Shiki-san’s plan is very simple, which is to use a certain magic as basis, and for the 4 of us to attack the main school building.

「Wouldn’t the orcs be separated in various classrooms in the main building? I feel that it will be fine as long as we use《Silent Field》to enter from the window, then attack them from various points.」

《Silent Field》is a skill in Rank 2 Wind Magic. Mia raised the Rank of Wind Magic in the previous battle and gotten this magic.

This magic can create something like a barrier to prevent sound from reach, and

it can be cast on humans or objects. If the target that was cast with magic was to move, the space will also move along. The range is made with the target as the center, with a radius of around 3 meters. When Wind Magic is Rank 2, it can last around 2 to 3 minutes.

As long as the entire party is inside the space, then we can move without making a slightest sound. When we fight in the space, we can also erase the sounds of battle. Even if we entered the classroom and wipe out those orcs, the neighbouring classrooms will also never discover it —— as long as we have this magic, even such tricks can be realised.

Of course, this is the result if everything proceeds smoothly. But I don't think that we can always fight in an ideal situation.

Even so, if its Arisu and Tamaki now……

「If there is an elite orc, then we should be able to handle it?」

「Well, if we enter combat in a situation where the enemy does not discover us, then it should be fine.」

According to Arisu and Tamaki's feedback, after their Weapon Skill raised to Rank 4, they can go toe to toe with the elite orc, and even attain the advantage.

Although a part of this is attributed to the effect of my support magic, but according to their strength, they do not need to fear the elite orc too much.

「The problem is how many orcs do we need to defeat for Arisu and Tamaki's Weapon Skill is raise to Rank 6.」

I briefly calculated it. In the previous battle, after Tamaki and Mia leveled up, for the sake of raising the levels of the girls from the dormitory to level 1, they kept running around. So after they leveled up, we shouldn't have defeated anymore orcs.

We can discuss the exact details later, but we should calculate like this first. Same as previously, the experience of 1 orc is 60, argh……

Hmm, Tamaki's experience value is the same as a new level 7, which is 1680. Arisu needs to add 900 more, so it is 2580 of level 8.

Tamaki's skill points has 3, while it is 0 for Arisu. If it is like this, for weapon skill to be rise up to 2 more Ranks……

Tamaki's level need to reach 11, then her sword skill can be rise to Rank 6. To raise to level 11, she need 3960 experience, which is to say she needs 2280 more, and has to defeat 152 small fry orcs.

For Arisu, if she does not reach level 14, then her Spear Skill cannot reach Rank 6. To reach level 14, she needs 6300 experience, and she is missing 3720 currently, so she needs to defeat 248 small fry orcs.

「Like this even if we kill all the orcs and elite orcs in the middle school section, it does not seem to have enough?」

I said out my feelings directly.

「Yes, the number of orcs are exhausted.」

Shiki-san acted like she is joking…… Even if we can defeat a few elite orcs in between, but it is still tough to find over 100 orcs.

「But, we should at least let Tamaki's skill rank reach 6. If not, it will be tough in the battle against the general orc.」

「Must we fight today?」

「Do you feel that those girls would still be alive after today?」

I remembered those girls that we saved from the girls' dormitory, until Arisu casted healing magic, they all looked very miserable. And they still have to continue to suffer the brutal treatment from the orcs, and survive a night…...

Mmm, not possible. Today is probably the limit.

「Just a mention, by measuring from the degree of violence that I suffered…...」

「Please still stop being masochistic.」

Shiki-san laughed sarcastically again. Ah really, this person's masochistic jokes are not comfortable to listen to!

「Other than that, there is still 1 more thing I have to tell you.」

Once Shiki-san got to that, her expression turned serious. Yes, she went to ask the girls' that we saved from the girls' dormitory.

「Did you understand what happened?」

「Regarding the number of girls not tallying, it is because a portion of the orcs seemed to have brought the girls to another place.」

「From the girls' dormitory?」

「Mmm, those orcs are dressed in purple robes and small sized, which is a bit different from the other orcs. Although we cannot judge what they are, but they selected some girls that can be brought away.」

Orcs wearing purple robes? What is going on? Can they use magic?

Why did they kidnapped the girls? Just raping them in the girls' dormitory isn't enough?

No no no, wait a moment. I had never thought about this problem before…… No, it is because there is no value in thinking about this question, hence I had ignored it.

「Then again, why did the orcs attack us?」

「Well, perhaps they need sacrifices for a ritual?」

Hearing Shiki-san's guess, I suddenly came to a realisation. The 2 of us looked at each other.

◆ ◆ ◆

「The orc came from the north side of the mountain, which is from the peak.」

「It seems so. If that is so, then they are probably brought there. But it could also be possible that they are locked up somewhere in the main school building.」

「To confirm this, there is a need to sneak into the main school building.」

Regarding the reason as for why the orcs attack the school, I had initially thought because there are girls here, so the orcs came to rape them.

After the feeling they gave off is rather simple, and they are pigs, and in actuality they are also stupid, so they are not suitable for group movements.

I had thought they are straightforward monsters, hence I did not notice other areas.

But if there are certain organisms leading the orcs, and they have matters for the orcs to do.

Using the things that they can use until its limits, then the rest of the students are useless to it. So——

「Then the rest is up to you to play with.」

「Indeed Ozu-sama, you understand it!」(Tl note: these lines are from Tactics ogre. According to the chinese translation, it is about Ozu discussing on how to treat a female with his subordinates. I don't play it so yeah.)

I guess the orcs had a conversation like above. Then again who is Ozu!

「Yes, Kazu-kun. After I thought about it, I felt that the place that those orcs stayed before, there are sure be general orcs, or even someone who is of a higher position, so……」

「So, we have to take the time now to gather the power that can oppose those fellows, right?」

Shiki-san nodded.

「I don't think that the orcs in the main school building is the main force. According to Kazu-kun's investigation, the high school section and the middle school section have similar number of orcs, hence I guess that the possibility of the main force being deep in the a certain part of the forest is quite high.」

「Should we attack there today?」

「I guess so.」

Hmm, I also felt that there is no choice. But I agree with killing as many orcs as possible, so as to increase the strength of our side. And, I also agree with saving the girls who are trapped in the main school building. As for the reason……

「Let me guess what you are thinking about?」

Shiki-san revealed an evil grin as I expected.

「To face off against the high school section, it is better to have as many pieces as possible.」

「That's right, I am thinking of treating the people we rescued as pawns, using them to resist the high school section. Your opinion?」

「Agreed completely. At least from what you have said, I feel that I will not work well with Saso-kun and the gang that he leads. Didn't he use other students as shields? What is the difference between imitating the elite orcs and that.」

「That is afterall an image I saw, moreover I could also lie due to hatred for Shiba.」

「From your looks just now, I don't think that you are lying. You are not some actor so your skills can't be so trained until you can act out fear so realistically.」

Stop babbling and mind your own business. Shiki-san smiled.

「The worst situation is to wipe him and those who follows him out.」

「Your decision is pretty fast.」

「Ah, that is the conclusion after I thought about it for a long time.」

When did you get the time to consider about it for so long?

「When I leveled up to level 2.」

Ah, is it? In the battle before, she was fighting alone, so she raise to level 2. During that time, she considered these?

In other words, regarding the situation in the high school section, she already had some sort of prediction?

「Nope. I only constructed a few possible scenarios, within a certain situation, and considered.」

I see, I do not completely understand. No, I understand the motive, but I can't imitate it.

「I feel that you are a person who get stronger in adversity, the type that can make the best decision in a sudden situation. I am different. I will think deeply, and make preparations and choose the best methods depending on the situations, so I am not good at making sudden changes.」

「Well I can't see that.」

「That is because I hid it quite well usually. But not yesterday, a sudden attack by mythical beings like orcs, I was so shocked that I stopped, and could only stay on the spot, unable to move.」

Shiki-san said so, lowered her head, and hesitantly fell silent.

After thinking about it, she raised her head and looked directly at me.

「If that is only like that, it is still okay. Kazu-kun, you know…… I, that time held onto my friend's clothes, causing her to be unable to escape as well.」

Ah, so that is the reason—— I had thought so. Seeing Shiki-san crying and yet forcing smiles, all the questions are finally explained.

This is her regret that she never confessed to anyone before. Because of her selfish behavior, she caused her friend to miss the timing to escape, and unfortunately lose her life.

This is a result from a stupid action, which is she herself, surviving alone.

So that is why she is like a martyr, suffering this pain alone. The reason for excessive mentioning being raped by orcs, this perhaps is a punishment that she gave for herself.

Not letting Arisu cast《Cure Mind》on her, is probably to view her pain as a punishment for her crime.

Boring—— To laugh at her is a very simple thing.

But I can't laugh. A person who facing the burdens from her failures, and yet continued to struggle to move forward, I am unable to laugh at such a person, telling her that this is nothing but self-torture.

Because this is the same mistake that I made yesterday.

In the time after meeting the elite orc, saving Shiki-san, I did not confess my relationship with her to Arisu, so that is why Arisu stopped to save Shiki-san.

I nearly lost Arisu.

Luckily everything ended smoothly and thanks to that, Shiki-san and I can face each other. My gamble won, and my reward is great. That is a battle that is worth risking.

But all of this originated from my mistake, and it just happened to have gone well. Because I know this, that is why I can't laugh at her.

If I lost Arisu then, can I still stand back up? Can I still smile like this?

If this became true in the future, can I still smile——

No matter if it is using a time machine or what, anyway I will use all sorts of

methods to beat up such a me.

That is a very fatal mistake, it's a mistake that cannot be tolerated.

So I will not laugh at Shiki-san.

But even so, I will not console her. She probably will not wish for me to do so.

She only wish to suffer quietly, and then use that as a motivation to work for everyone.

That's right, no matter what her motive is, she still helped us. Without her, we will not be able to continue like in the past.

And, the most important is……

「So Kazu-kun——」

Shiki-san laughed with sarcasm again.

「I will say it again, give me more burdens. Give me a burden that is so heavy that I will roll around in pain and I will accept it for you to see. What you need, even if I were to die, I will also prepare it.」

If her sacrifice can save all of us, then what is the problem with it.

Chapter 40: Middle School Suppression Operation 1

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 40

Chapter 40: Middle School Suppression Operation 1

After Shiki-san left, I took a nap. Without MP, there is nothing I can do. If that is so, resting when there is time is also very important.

Thinking about it carefully, we have been having intensive battles since early in the morning.

Losing to the sleep demon is also a matter of time, so my conscious sunk into darkness just like that.

◆◆◆

I was shook awake by someone. I opened my eye and saw Arisu's face.

「What time is it now?」

「3.30pm.」

3.30pm, theoretically my MP should be completely full.

「Shiki-senpai want me to wake u up. And also that……」

After Arisu mumbled a while, she kissed the me who is still groggy from sleep.

She stuck her tongue into my mouth and we kept exchanging saliva, until we are unable to breathe.

After our lips separated, Arisu is flushed due to a lack of oxygen, and her breathing is also very fast.

「She also said to help Kazu-san get his spirit up.」

Mmm, some other place also became very energetic. Even though I was nearly overwhelmed with desires, I still desperately endured and got up.

Even if I have only a moment of happiness with Arisu for a short while, the people waiting will probably only use warm expression to look at us, then laughed while saying「there is nothing we can do about you two」.

But my MP is already full, wasting time here is too wasteful. If I want to do happy things with Arisu, it is better to wait until my MP is empty.

「Where should I go?」

「Shiki-senpai want you to go down to the lobby.」

I followed behind Arisu out of the room. In front there is a group of girls moving, they are the girls who fought side by side with us just now.

One of them gave regards to me stiffly, and I also answered stupidly.

I know I should express myself more naturally, but Shimoyamada Akane's face will keep appearing. This gave me some hesitation, on whether if I should shorten my distance with them.

「Please do your best Kazu-san. We will maintain the state where we can head out anytime.」

That girl clenched her first while saying it. It seems that the reason why she is so

stiff, was only due to her opinion of me being too exaggerated.

In their hearts, just how noble a hero was I?

Also, Shiki-san should have also told everyone on the matter of attacking the main school building. Although she did it without informing me, but this also saved me a lot of trouble so I will forget about this matter.

And in actuality the ones battling are Arisu, Mia and Tamaki, including my familiars.

All I had to do, is to act confident and give out orders, which I felt that it is similar to what Shiba is doing. But I am not that arrogant like that guy, and I also do not want to be like that. If it is possible, I do not wish to let any of my companions get injured.

I do not know when a few tables and chairs are placed in the lobby.

Part of the area became a place to place stuff, and there are a few bags filled with alot of things.

Shiki-san crossed her hands in front of the bags, and raised her head to look at me, and Tamaki and Mia are also beside her.

I don’t know why, but they gave out smirky smiles.

「Morning, until which step did you have Arisu do for you?」

「I only had her wake me up.」

Arisu lowered her head, blushing. With this, didn’t my calm reply lose its meaning? Forget it, after all Arisu’s shy look is also very cute.

I walked down the stairs from the balcony, and looked at what is inside the bags

unconsciously.

Other than water bottles, CalorieMate and torchlights, there are still things like toolbox, tapes and medicines.

「I think there are some stuff which requires Arisu's healing magic, but there will also be a need to save MP. If you feel that they are too heavy, you can freely choose some to take out.」

「There is no need, with《Mighty Arm》, these stuff should be easily carried, thanks.」

I thanked Shiki-san and turned to the other 3. Okay——

「I believe you have already heard from Shiki-san.」

I announced to the 3 of them.

「Next I wish to attack the main school building.」

Arisu and the others nodded with nervous faces

◆◆◆

The elite party's gym clothes and bloomers are already casted with《Hard Armour》.

I had Arisu and Tamaki wear working gloves and hats and cast《Hard Armour》on them.

I continue to add on other support magic. With me included, I casted《Physical Up》,《Mighty Arm》and《Clear Mind》, while for Arisu and Tamaki's weapons, I add an extra《Keen Weapon》.

After casting so much magic, it only cost my 14 MP, which will be recovered in 20 minutes. Because my support magic is now Rank 4, so the effective time of the magic has changed from 80 to 120 minutes.

「I wish to reduce the enemy force in the main school building, that will be the priority. We must turn it into a situation whereby they will be unable to make a move on the Cultivating Centre.」

I reported the information I have gotten from the investigation by the crow. But I hid the matter on the high school section temporarily, because that has nothing to do with the current situation.

That's right, it is just because of that. I hope that they will focus their mind on attacking the main school building of the middle school section, just that only……

Mmm, I can't lie to myself, I better admit it.

I am scared of the high school section.

No, the person that I am scared of is Shiba. I fear that once that guy forms a strong force, they will bring danger to us.

Of course, things may not become like that, the survivors may work together too.

But Shiki-san told me that we have to imagine the worst situation. She also ordered me not to make any optimistic prediction. And even expressed that we should be gathering power now. I do not have objection to that.

Hence, I had thought about attacking the main school building.

Hearing about the existence of the general orc, the expressions of Arisu and the other tightened.

Other than that, beside the general orc, the existence of an unknown beast, made them their expression even more complicated.

Arisu and Tamaki looked at each other, as if thinking on what should they do to obtain victory……

「Basically we will not fight with the general orc.」

I told it to them directly.

「It should be that there is no need to fight. In the battles until now, the general orc have never appeared before, hence I judged that its character is not one that heads an attack. According to the situation on our side, if there is only 1 general orc, there should be methods to handle it, such as luring it into a trap etc.」

「Kazu-san, you really like traps.」

Tamaki said dumbfounded. So rude, our battles until now have mainly depended on traps to succeed.

People who laughs at traps will also cry because of traps. This is a common logic, and also a basic law of life. Okay, I shall put this aside for now.

「The objective of this battle is to decrease the number of small fry orcs and elite orcs as much as possible. Luckily the orcs in the main school building does not seem to be gathering in a location, but separated all around in the classrooms. So we will attack each classroom. As for the method……」

「We will use my《Silent Field》.」

Mia said.

「That's right, Shiki-san explained it?」

「Mmm.」

Good, since it has already been explained then the discussion will be fast.

「But, Kazu-chi, that beast's nose maybe very keen.」

「That is a monster that just looks similar to a beast, and it is in the most deep room on level 3 with the general orc. Anyway, just avoid standing in the upwind direction. At least when fight on storey 2 and below, there should not be any chance of revealing ourselves due to smell.」

I see—— Mia nodded.

「Once things get dangerous, then run away immediately. After all the matter of us being at the Cultivating Centre is already exposed, there is no need to care about it too much. During retreating, we will borrow the power of Shiki-san's party.」

This time, Shiki-san will lead 3 girls as support.

They have 2 main roles, one is to provide assistance when the main force is retreating; the other is to bring the survivors out when we discover them.

「Then, regarding traps……」

I looked at Mia.

「Mmm, just now Shiki-senpai asked me, I have already dug the holes, which arer in the forest that is about 5 minutes away from the main school building.」

With Mia's《Earth Pit》, then we do not need to take the risk to dig holes near enemies. We just have to use magic to dig, then carefully hide them. Theoretically, we can finish in minutes.

「I remembered the positions of the holes properly. There are a few, so we can lure the enemies according to the situations.」

Shiki-san said so. I nodded.

「As for how to contact……」

Shiki-san took out a wireless transceiver, it is an old model which is bigger than the palm and uses batteries.

「This is found by chance when a student was searching deep inside the basement of the Cultivating Centre. Because there are 2, so one of them will be kept by Kazu-kun and the other by me.」

I see, then this will be different from using the crow, we can communicate anytime. I really hoped that we could have found this earlier…… But from the situations, we can't expect too much.

「Then we will proceed like this. Is there any questions?」

Nobody asked. We carried the bags and left the Cultivating Centre.

「Arisu, Tamaki, if you feel that the stuff you are carrying is heavy……」

「We will throw them away during battle, no worries.」

「That' right, that's right, there is no need for Kazu-san to worry, just relax and see us in action.」

Hearing Tamaki say it, I felt even more uneasy……

No, I had intended on giving it to them. After all I do not have any fighting capabilities, physical fights can only be left to Arisu, Tamaki and the wolves.

I casted《Summon Gray Wolf》, and called out another gray wolf, maintaining the state of 2 wolves. Basically we are taking stealth actions, so I do not want to increase the number of the familiars too much.

I also cast《Keen Weapon》,《Physical Up》and《Mighty Arm》on this wolf.

I only summoned 1 crow that is used for investigation, since there is a transceiver, this should be enough.

My MP has already recovered during discussing, with the highest value at 71. This time we intend to end it fast, hence according to our needs, it should be enough with《Haste》, but……

I don't know if any unexpected situation will occur in this battle, so it is better to save MP.

Shiki-san and the 3 girls followed behind us, 2 of them with spears and the last is with a sword. One of the girls holding a spear, is the pony-tailed girl who talked to me before.

Argh, I remembered she is a girl that we saved from the girls' dormitory. Even if it is just for a short period, she had stood guard for us, is her strength okay?

Noticing my glance, the girl said in a monotonous tone:「Please take care of me.」

「Ermm, mmm, me too.」

「After all I couldn't sleep and my body is also cured by magic, so I hope to be of help, even if it is just a little bit.」

「Is that so? Don't force yourself.」

「Yes, please kill many orcs for us.」

That…… I did have such an intention.

She said it lightly, with no change in her expression, making me feel a bit scared. Argh, from how she had suffered, I can understand the hatred that she had for the orcs.

As for my awkward state, I don't know what Tamaki is thinking, and actually jumped in, saying:

「Sakura-chan has always given off such a feeling. Although her attitude is cold, but she is not a bad kid.」

「Ah—— you knew each other?」

「Well no, Sakura-chan may not know me.」

The girl named Sakura nodded, saying:「That's right, I do not know senpai.」Since she addressed Tamaki as senpai, she should be a Year 2 or Year 1 student?

「She is famous. Year 2 Nagatsuki Sakura, from the track club, her running speed is very fast, and she has even entered nationals before.」

Ah—— I see, she is the type that is good at something.

Even for such a powerful person, danger will reach her equally. She, being able to survive, is also because of luck.

No, is it really luck? This perhaps is only prolonging her pain. Working hard to ensure that the situation did not become that, is our responsibility…...

I always felt that such things does not concern me. Actually in such times, all I need to say is「let me pave the path to your futures」or something like that.

But this is not my style.

I just want to finish everything that can be done for now.

「Anything that needs speed can be left to me. I raised Spear Skill and Physical, I will do my best as bait.」

「I understand, then I will depend on you.」

Her skills are Spear Skill 1 / Physical 1. With this, the battle in the forest will perhaps be easier. I used《Physical Up》on all the support members including her.

After we reached near the main building, we had the supporting members hide in the nearby woods.

And quickly killed the 2 orcs that are patrolling.

Though I said patrol, they only seem like they are just walking around the school building. Anyway Arisu and Tamaki finished them off in a second.

We quietly got closer to the broken window of a certain classroom, and sent the crow in to see the current situation in it.

「3 orcs.」

Okay. I gave Mia a secret sign, and had her cast《Silent Field》towards Arisu and Tamaki.

In this timeframe, I had the crow to fly to the window side again.

I ordered the crow to wait until all the orcs are back-facing the windows, then raise one of its wings.

About 10 second passed.

The crow raised one of its wings.

The battle has began.

Chapter 41: Middle School Suppression Operation 2

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 41

Chapter 41: Middle School Suppression Operation 2

I cast《Haste》on Arisu and Tamaki.

Arisu rushed out, followed by Tamaki, through the broken window and invaded inside.

Mia and I got closer to the window and peek in.

So it is the Art Classroom. The plaster statue at the wall is broken, the canvas is torn and the tools are all scattered around.

There are 3 guys at the corner of the room, they are lying there with their heads in weird directions.

And near the centre of the classroom, there are 3 orcs currently raping 3 naked girls.

Arisu and Tamaki attacked the orcs that are back-facing us.

One used the spear to stab through the body, another used the axe to cut of the

head.

The orcs gave out dying groans…… No, although they opened their mouths, with movements like they are going to cry out, but they fall silently.

。

In the effective area of《Silent Field》, all the sounds are isolated. No matter sounds or movements, all of them are silent.

The remaining orc turned over frantically, and opened its mouth as though it wanted to say something, and tried to stand up. It is probably swearing.

It is just that I completely cannot hear its voice.

The next second, Tamaki's axe cut the orc's body horizontally. The orc is splited into 2 on the spot, and blue blood sprayed out like a spring and it died like that.

All these happened in a soundless environment. The battle ended.

I waved as a signal to Shiki-san and the others who are hiding in the shade of the trees, the 4 of them immediately ran over.

We entered the Art Classroom. Among the 3 girls, 2 of them have already stopped breathing. Arisu cast《Heal》and《Cure Mind》to the girl who is still breathing.

These 4 MP is a necessary expenditure, we cannot not help the victims.

If it is just concerning the battle this time, the priority is of course eliminating the orcs. But Shiki-san and I factored in the possibility of the survivors entering the battle force into considerations. After all we are not sure if we can rescue more companions in the future.

The people we saved may not be willing to join in the fight, but if a person like Nagatsuki Sakura is among that few, then tomorrow it will be slightly easier for us, and it will be even easier in the day after tomorrow.

Considering the situation in the high school section, this is probably a good method. At least, we are unable to believe in the people who survived in the high school section, and I am unable to tolerate Shiba's methods.

Being only able to recruit from the middle school section, that is what Shiki-san and I have thought.

Shiki-san is approaching the door of the Preparation Room beside the Arts Classroom alone, and silently placed her ear on the door.

The position she is at is not within the《Silent Field》of Arisu and the other. Shiki-san turned her head over here, and raised a finger, meaning there is at least 1 orc inside. Although I do not know how many orcs are there, but no matter what, the matter of defeating them will not change.

I used a movement to give Arisu and the others the permission, and Arisu and Tamaki stood in front of the door.

Shiki-san opened the door.

Inside there are orcs. From my position, I can only see 1. When the other party showed a surprised expression, Arisu rushed in.

Arisu rush towards the orc, and stabbed out. The orc had its throat pierced, and stopped breathing immediately.

Tamaki followed Arisu and rush deep inside, this means there are orcs on that side too. Shiki-san peeked inside and showed 3 fingers.

3 orcs? I see.

There are corpses in the preparation room too. 1 naked female school teacher's corpse, 2 boy's corpse and a girl's corpse. After the females are dead, the orcs still continued to rape them.

Even though it is painful to see, but expressing our feelings here will not have any benefits. What we can do now, is to do our best at killing all the orcs in this school building. Then saving those who are still alive, even if there is only 1 person.

I sent the crow out to investigate again. Although《Silent Field》may lose its

effect during the investigation, but this is something that cannot be helped.

According to the information from Arisu and the others, the next room beside us is the Home Economics Room, then it is the Science Classroom. The special classrooms that need to use fire are seemingly placed together. Following the corridor, the next classrooms are the Year 3 Classrooms.

In the building for Middle school section, the Year 1 Classrooms are on level 3, Year 2 Classrooms are on level 2, while the Year 3 Classrooms are on level 1. There are 8 classes in a Year, including the special classrooms, each level has about 12-14 classrooms.

There is a difference in the number of classrooms on each level, because there are big classroom like the Music Classroom, and there are small rooms like the preparation room. And within them, there are south facing classrooms that faces the courtyard, and the north-facing classrooms that we entered from. Other than that, there are a few empty classrooms.

After the crow returns, it reported that there are no orcs in the classrooms opposite and beside of us, while in the classroom diagonal of us, there are 4 orcs.

Among the orcs, there is one with blue skin. Is it an elite orc?

「Are there orcs in the corridor?」

The crow answered that currently there is none. Good, then we can only do it

now.

「Arisu go and defeat the small fry orcs first, Tamaki will aim for the elite orc.」

There are many obstacles like tables and chairs in the classroom of the main school building, and the ceiling isn't that tall. To Arisu who uses an iron spear, perhaps there will be the danger of being unable to use her full strength.

But the one who have 1 more day of experience of facing an elite orc is Arisu, it is hard to say which is the right choice……

「Leave it to me, Kazu-san. I will properly show it to you!」

Tamaki seems to have alot of push behind her, well I will leave it. After the 2 of them got the assistance of《Haste》and《Silent Field》, they immediately rushed out. After Mia and I confirmed that there are no more orcs along the corridor, we followed closely behind them.

Shiki-san and the others one of them was carrying the girl survivor, followed slightly further away from us.

I lean over as though I am peeking in the classroom diagonal of us which Arisu and Tamaki ran in.

The orcs near the entrance reacted quickly to the invaders, and used its large sword to block Tamaki's giant axe.

There should have been a sharp sound from the collusion of the weapons, but the classroom remained silent. The elite orc hence showed a shocked expression.

Arisu used a stab to pierce the head of the orc that is currently raping the girl, and killed it. The other 2 orcs are also stabbed to death as they were turning back. Her skills are superb, killing 3 orcs in a blink of an eye.

Tamaki's axe and the elite orc's sword clashed again and again. If《Silent Field》was not casted, it would have given out quite a shocking amount of sound.

Their attack and defense exchange was very impressive, I completely could not follow their moves.

Arisu who finished off the small fry orcs, went to support Tamaki. Arisu and Tamaki's weapon skills are all risen to Rank 4, even if it's the elite orc, facing off against 2 of them is unadvantagous to it.

The 2 of them crossed arms a few rounds, then the elite orcs lost its balance due to Arisu's strike, and Tamaki's giant axe swung towards it at that moment.

The attack that swept pass, cut the thick neck of the elite orc in a blow, its head flew up into the air.

Arisu leveled up.

◆◆◆

In the white room.

「Did it, we did it! We can finally defeat the elite orc easily!」

Tamaki kept jumping around, seemingly very happy, her golden ponytails jumped around like a dog's tail.

「That is because there are 2 of you and there is still support from《Haste》, don't let your guard down.」

「I of course know that this is due to Arisu and Kazu-san's efforts.」

「I do not mean that. There is no need to thank me, I just wanted you to keep your guard up. Please.」

Tamaki blanked out for a moment, seemingly understanding that I am worried about her from the bottom of my heart, and「Mmm!」, nodded with a lot of strength.

「Then again, ha—— not speaking, seems to let me feel so stuffy until even breathing is hard!」

「It is fine to shout out. Actually, Arisu has been shouting while she is stabbing.」

I turned to Arisu, she replied shyly:「Y..you saw it?」

「If shouting out can increase your strength, then feel free to shout. After all in the《Silent Field》, the surrounding people cannot hear anything.」

「Th...that is true.」

Arisu placed her hand on her chest, and relaxed. While Tamaki opened her mouth in shock saying:「Is it?」, I always feel that this is a combination that will make one worry for their future…… Erm—— forget it, it is fine.

「The 2 of you are so interesting, Arisu-chi and Tamaki-chi are a *bumpy* combination.」(TL note: でこぼこコンビ)

Mia said. Although it is indeed so, but you actually dare to say it.

「Yeah, Mia, didn’t you still call them senpai in the morning?」

「We have discussed it and not use that sort of formal titles.」

Tamaki was explaining at a corner. I see, after all we are companions.

「But, Arisu-chi and Tamaki-chi is a bit……」

「If I simplify it more, it will be Tamakin.」(TL note: its a pun but i don understand it. but i am guessing Tamakin is a flipped “kin tama” which means testes. The chinese translation tells me it has the same sounds as balls)

I silently stared at Mia.

「What an embarrassing name.」

「Then don’t say it like that.」

「Mmm—— it is fine, I don’t mind it.」

Tamaki said so with loud laughter. What an amazing person, I am respecting you for the first time.

「Okay, anyway, everyone should rest as how you want. At this timing, it is best to relax your mood.」

Although I only slightly glanced, but the classroom that we are in, also have corpses. There are a few naked bodies of the girls on the ground, there are also corpses from the boys. They probably suffered the orc attack while they are participating in some group activity.

Did anyone escape? The windows are all shutted tightly, so I am afraid……

No, better not think anymore. Just now I had thought about resting, and now I am moping.

「Kazu-chi, Kazu-chi.」

Mia pulled a corner of my shirt.

「If you want to do some unspeakable game with Arisu-chi, Tamaki-chi and I can face the other side……」

「You don’t have to worry about that sort of boring thing.」

I shook my head and rejected her suggestion firmly.

「Mmm, so you are the type who gets more excited when you are being watched?」

I used my fist to knock on Mia’s head, she showed a shy smile. She probably feels happy fooling around with everyone. Well I can’t do much about her—— I shrugged my shoulders.

Arisu revealed a shy smile and Tamaki also laughed loudly.

◆◆◆

After resting, we left the white room.

Arisu: Level 9 Spear Skill 4／Healing Magic 3 Skill Point 2

Chapter 42: Middle School Suppression Operation 3

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 42

Chapter 42: Middle School Suppression Operation 3

While invading, Arisu and Tamaki's classroom is also liberated from the orcs. Even though they saw their classmates' bodies, the 2 of them only clasped their hands together and prayed for a while.

「Now there is no time for us to cry.」

Tamaki said in a low tone, and hugged Arisu who is a bit down.

「Let's take revenge together, Arisu.」

「Okay.」

From the classroom at the south, you can see the courtyard from the railing. Although the campfire has extinguished, but beside the small mountain made from corpse, there are still about 20 orcs which are in tip top condition lazing around.

Tamaki is right, we cannot waste time here.

Luckily at this time, because of the influence from the light, the courtyard should not be able to see what is in the classroom clearly.

Even so, if we continue staying around, there is no telling what may happen. Before the orcs notice us, we left the classroom.

After that, we spent roughly 20 minutes suppressing the level 1 and basement of the main school building.

We saved 3 girls on level 1 and another in the basement, a total of 4 person.

Until now, we killed a total of 18 small fry orcs and 2 elite orcs.

「I want to ask you all to bring the girls we saved back to the Cultivating Centre first.」

I instructed Shiki-san.

「If there are more survivors, we should also consider how we can move them.」

Even if the girls we saved took Arisu's treatment, they are still very tired, and unable to even stand up.

This also can't be helped, they had spent a whole day under the violence of the orcs.

「I understand, all of you should be careful.」

Shiki-san and the others carried the powerless girls and left through the broken window.

Okay—— I turned to face Arisu and everyone. From their colours of the faces, they do not seem to be tired.

「By the way, if you want to go to the toilet, you should do it now.」

「I will not pee in my pants!」

Tamaki growled out like a wild dog.

「Roar~ Kazu-san really have no tact, right, Arisu.」

「Argh……」

Arisu looked at me with some hesitation. What is it, my little angel, feel free to praise me.

「Kazu-san, yo..you only wanted to see Tamaki's perplexed expression right? 」

Thank you for giving me sentence that was harsher than I have expected.

I shrugged my shoulders, like changing the topic to the nearby stairs and said:
「Go, to the second storey.」

There are stairs at the 2 ends of the school building that can lead from level 1 to level 2, we are currently near the stairs on the left side.

The crow that went to investigate the stairs to level 2 had already came back.

According to the crow's report, there are a few orcs gathering along the corridor on level 2.

This is a bad news, as we will be discovered once we walked up the stairs.

I thought while I was biting the CalorieMate that I took from the bag.

Or we could go outside first, then climb the railings up to level 2. Our arm strength has risen due to《Mighty Arm》, so this method should succeed. And with《Silent Field》, we will not make any noise.

But this method is based on a premise—— which is that our hands must be empty.

Arisu's iron spear and Tamaki's giant axe are big and heavy, it would be tough bringing these 2 weapons to climb up to level 2.

Of course we could let someone climb up first then throw a rope down…… But in such a situation, that person is akin to being completely defenseless in an enemy territory, which I feel that the risk is too big.

「Mia, how about《Path Wall》?」

Rank 4 Earth Magic《Path Wall》is like how it is said, it is a magic that can open a hole on a wall. In other words, it can allow one to sneak past a wall without being discovered, most suited for a bank robbery.

As for the hole that was created with magic, it seems that it will disappear after a certain period of time.

「It is fine using《Path Wall》on the ceiling, but without a ladder, we can't climb up.」

「If we use《High Jump》, can we reach?」

Rank 2 Wind Magic《High Jump》can greatly increase jumping power, as long as there is no weight on the body, it can let a person jump up to a tree branch.

「It should be possible, but we have to reach level 2 in a try.」

「Right, if the classroom above has orcs, then it will be dangerous when the landing fails.」

If they are just small fry orcs, they it is fine, but if we fall in front of an elite orc…… Even if Tamaki's skill rank is 5, I feel that it will be dangerous.

「To find ladders, there is no need to get back to the Cultivating Centre…… There should be some ladders that are commonly used somewhere in the campus?」

「That, Kazu-san. Things that take up a lot of space like ladders, in the middle school section, we always put them in the storeroom in front of the courtyard..」

Arisu said it with a face of apology. I see, currently it is filled with orcs at the courtyard, even if we have raised a few levels, facing 20 at once is still very tough.

And if we make trouble in the courtyard, the orcs on level 2 and 3 will discover our presence. Then the covert actions that we made painstakingly, will be wasted.

Okay, what should we do, I crossed my hands and thought.

「Right, there is a magic in Wind Magic that can make a person invisible.」

「《Invisibility》 is a Rank 3 Wind Magic, I can't use it yet.」

Indeed, but Tamaki and Mia has only 30 exp to next level, which means that we only have to defeat 2 more ordinary orcs.

Mia has 1 skill point left, so as long as she level up, then she can raise Wind Magic to Rank 3. Though we have to take a longer route…… should we go and gain some exp?

I felt that this seems like an single player RPG. Hmm, but it is better to gain some exp. I let the crow fly outside and search for some orcs that are alone and near the school building.

Before long, the crow came back to report. Situated behind the shoe cabinets on the right side side of the school building, there are 2 orcs. From the courtyard, it seemed to be a blind spot. This building has 2 entrances. From our position, the crow is talking about the shoe cabinets that are within that entrance which is the furthest away from us.

「I understand, I will finish them off now!」

Tamaki finished with a happy tone, and rushed out with her giant axe. Mia chased after, and casted《Silent Field》for her.

After roughly about 2 minutes, we came to the white room and listen to the report that Tamaki and Mia leveled up.

◆◆◆

We gathered in the white room. With this, the 2 of their levels is now 8.

「Ah, and, Kazu-san, I found a surviving girl.」

「With the orcs?」

There are also girls captured in that sort of place? Although it is a bit regretful, but my heart seemed to be numbed, As long as she survived then she should be thankful—— I had already thought like that, separating my emotions and thoughts.

If it is possible, I hope that the survivors will become our power in the battlefield.

I hope that the person will began from tomorrow, to fight for the sake of surviving. Even if it is just one more person, gathering more companions, is also one of the aims of attacking the main school building. But Tamaki shook her head.

「No, that girl was hiding in the cabinet that stored the cleaning tools near the shoe cabinet. And Arisu, she is Sumire.」

「Oh~Sumire-chan is still alive? That’s great!」

Arisu revealed a smile that was a vibrant as a flower blooming. Ah, they are friends?

「Ah—— in other words, that girl called Sumire is fine…… am I right?」

「Mmm! She is very afraid, so she has been quietly hiding there since yesterday.」

Tamaki happily reported.

「Then, because she could not come out the whole of yesterday, so she peed her pants!」

「Why are you so happy about reporting that someone has peed her pants……」

「Eh~ didn't Kazu-san like girls peeing in their pants?」

I looked at Arisu and Mia while speechless, and the 2 of them kept nodding their heads.

「I do not have that sort of interest.」

「Eh—— there is nothing wrong with this. Kazu-san is a guy, having one or two perverted interest is also natural! I don't mind it at all!」

Oi oi, why is it only on this matter, that you seems like a very understanding girl? Arisu blushed, and glanced at me without a word.

No, you are mistaken. I am perfectly normal, that is nothing but Tamaki's delusion.

「Arisu, believe me.」

「Is it better for me to leak as well?」

Arisu held her breath while blushing, filling her abdomen with strength. What are you saying and doing?

Mia lightly patted Arisu's shoulders, and shook her head gently.

「No, not like that. It must be like desperately enduring but yet『no I can't, I am going to pee, don't look——』, then shuu and peed out.」

「You don't need to say those excessive stuff.」

I pulled Mia away from Arisu. Really, this girl has a bad influence on Arisu's education.

No, Arisu is older than her.

「Back to topic, that girl called Sumire, can she walk?」

「Probably so. Ah, but at that time I was very nervous, so I did not speak with Sumire-chan, so I do not know the exact details.」

「Why?」

「Because there is《Silent Field》.」

Ah right—— I face-palmed. The area around Tamaki, is under the effect of the silent field.

「If that is so, how do you know she has been hiding there since yesterday?」

「That part is by charading.」

That is what we called linked by hearts—— Tamaki said it jokingly. I see, they have a good relationship.

「Then, it is better to let her hide a bit longer…… No, that should be pretty hard.」

I do not wish to spent too much time attacking the main school building. From

my view, decrease the number of the enemies moderately, at least confirm that the Cultivating Centre will be safe until tomorrow morning, and that will be fine.

I hope that we can retreat before the general orc and that beast-like monster appears.

Although I thought so, but asking the girl who was saved to endure a bit more is kind of cruel.

「Anyway, can you bring her over first?」

「Mmm, I understand. Then again, which one do you want?」

「Which?」

「Should I bring her to the toilet to change then come over, or just bring her directly over in her soaked pants?」

I squinted, staring at Tamaki unhappily.

「Let her change her clothes first.」

「Yes yes——」

I sighed.

「I will use the transceiver to contact with Shiki-san.」

Okay, the direction has been confirmed, next is regarding the use of the skill points……

「Mia is of course raising her Wind Magic to Rank 3. As for Tamaki…… Since your Sword Skill can be raised to Rank 5, then we will do that?」

「Mmm, I feel that it’s very good. Great—— my skill rank is finally above Arisu’s, I am number 1!」

「Congrats, Tamaki.」

Arisu congrated Tamaki directly. Aiya, Arisu is really a good kid, she is an angel.

Then again, Tamaki is really...

「Wh..what, why did Kazu-san show that sort of expression? It is as though I am an idiot who don’t know how to see the situation……」

「You knew?」

Tamaki pouted, showing her displease.

「Kazu-san is too much! Hey, Arisu, do you feel so too?」

Arisu revealed a troubled smile and looked at me.

「Reprimanding is also an expression of friendship.」

「Argh, well, but I will not be angry at Tamaki……」

「Yes yes yes, it is fine, Kazu-san. I am best friends with Arisu!」

「Mmm—— forget it, just don’t be too carried away.」

「I wouldn’t be like that, my character is one that is very cautious, right—— Arisu!」

「Argh, this……」

My eyes met with Arisu’s, then she slowly turned away.

「Only good friends will understand each other well.」

「Oh~ what, I am obviously cautious okay? Even during exams I would not forget to write my name.」

「Such a thing like forgetting to write your name is something that will not happen even in a lifetime?」

「Tamaki will have such a time every year……」

Argh, mmm——

Tamaki: Level 8　Sword Skill 4 → 5／Physical 1　Skill Point 5 → 0

Mia: Level 8　Earth Magic 4／Wind Magic 2 → 3　Skill Point 3 → 0

Even though there is some unease, we still left the white room.

◆◆◆

After returning back to the original place from the white room, I opened the transceiver, but Shiki-san did not reply. Ah—— that's right, with the forest in between, they should not be able to receive radio waves.

Other than that, distance is another problem, this transceiver is really useless.

As I was considering such matters, Tamaki brought a girl back.

Chapter 43: Middle School Suppression Operation 4

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 43

Chapter 43: Middle School Suppression Operation 4

The name of the girl is Suginomiya Sumire, a friend of Arisu and Tamaki. She had 2 braids, and a frameless glasses, her body is on the slightly plump side.

I see, she is like a literature girl

The girl is wearing her uniform on the top but she is wearing a bloomer on her bottom. That bloomer should be Tamaki's back up clothes.

She did not wear any socks so she is bare-footed. Mmm, because they are wet, well that can't be helped.

After Sumire and Arisu hugged, she kept lowering her head and bowing to me. Her body seems to be larger than Arisu and Tamaki by a size, but her attitude is very timid, making one link her to that of a frightened mouse.

According to Tamaki, when she passed the cabinets, because the cleaning tools inside moved, she nearly raised her axe and hack at the cabinet.

Mmm, Tamaki is indeed……a absent-minded fool.

But if the cabinet suddenly shook, it is natural to be frightened by it.

Sumire expressed when the sounds in the surrounding suddenly disappeared, that is why she panicked. I had a lot of questions to ask her, but…...

Just as I was about to speak, Sumire's stomach gave a cute growl. Sumire pressed on her stomach and her face blushed.

「Sh——Do you want to eat CalorieMate? I can also give you my waterbottle.」

After all if I have the will, I can summon as much food and water as I want. Moreover from this situation, Mia's MP will probably finish first.

Sumire happily bit on the CalorieMate. I told her that it is fine to answer while eating, then I asked:

「Did you see the animal that those orcs brought?」

Sumire blanked for a while and then shook her head.

I see, she did not know…… I thought I could get some intel from her.

「Ah, I seemed to have hear sounds of barking…… I feel that that bark is like a dog.」

「You weren't discovered?」

「Yes, the sound seemed to have echoed over from a distance away.」

That's right, if she was discovered, then she would not have been safe like this.

I recalled the map of the main school building that we confirmed in the Cultivating Centre. Just mentioning, the map was drawn by Arisu and the others.

According to the map, even if we did not pass through the area that she hid in, there are also a few routes to the school, such as the stairs outside. That animal probably did not pass by anyway near the cabinet that Sumire hid in.

Sumire is very lucky, but because of her luck, hence we are unable to get new intel.

After I explained a simple overview of the situation to Sumire, I had her hide in a toilet.

Before we separated from Sumire, I gave all my CalorieMate to her, and she seemed to be very happy. Having a good appetite is a good thing.

◆ ◆ ◆

Talking about Rank 3 Wind Magic《Invisibility》, it is a magic that can turn a person inside an invisible man.

From vision, it will be easier to understand it as a optical camouflage in some sci-fi animation movie.

Although it is same as other magic, I completely do not understand the principles behind this.

At Rank 3, this magic can last 3-4minutes. The clothes and objects that the person is wearing and holding will also become invisible.

The point about becoming invisible, will make someone think that this magic is very strong…… but it has a weak point—— that is once a vigorous motion is done, or contact with other living things happens, the invisibility effect will be gone.

We had gone through a Q & A in the white room just now.

We got to know that「other living things」does not include small creatures like mosquitoes and houseflies; other than that running, but moving your limbs and normal speaking also fulfils the condition of「vigorous motion」.

As for walking and talking slowly, it is still permissible.

As for using magic, since we have to do actions that makes sounds, hence using

magic is also considered as a「vigorous motion」.

In the end the only things that we can do in the invisible state, is only walking slowly.

But that is good enough. Getting closer to the target while the enemy does not notice, is already an unnatural advantage. As long as we use it with《Silent Field》, this magic can become the best combination for stealth.

We can become an assassin that is completely silent and invisible, and sneak beside the enemy. Of course, if the enemy entered the《Silent Field》's area, they will be unable to hear any sounds, and discover the abnormality.

To Arisu and Tamaki, the distance of 3 meters is already enough. When the opponent notices the abnormality, it is already too late. Because of the rule of slow movement, the inability to cast《Haste》becomes an obstruction, but its other benefits can cover up this.

Regarding if we are able to use magic in the effective area of《Silent Field》, in the past I asked the computer about it before. The computer replied that the actions of making the sound is necessary but the sound itself is not that important.

Meaning if we did not make any sound, it will be fine. I conducted an experiment afterwards and confirmed it.

「The orcs in the corridor on level 2 are only standing near the middle of the corridor. Ignore them, and take care of the orcs inside the room first, start from the left side.」

Afterall we should kill as much orcs as possible on level 2, so we should take the most efficient method.

Mia cast《Invisibility》and《Silent Field》on Arisu and Mia. The sounds in the

surrounding disappeared immediately.

I gave the permission to go ahead. Even though I can't see them, but since the sounds in the surrounding appeared again, hence I know that the 2 of them are moving.

「Mia, let's follow.」

「Mmm.」

After we, the 2 rearguards, also casted《Invisibility》and《Silent Field》, we followed up to level 2.

The 2 orcs are standing in the middle of the corridor, seemingly very bored. Although they did not look towards our side, but I think they are planning to patrol.

I see, although the orcs knew the importance of being alert, but yet their attitude remains so lax?

In order not to let《Invisibility》lose its effect, we walked slowly forward, and peek at the interior of the room that Arisu and Tamaki went in.

There are only 1 elite orc and 1 ordinary orc in the room, and there are a few boys' corpse lying on the ground. The 2 orc used the corpse's head as a ball to play around.

Arisu and Tamaki revealed themselves and attacked the 2 orcs. Tamaki used her axe to dish out a slash, chopping down the elite orc's head. While Arisu gave a strike with her spear, piercing through the small fry orc's neck.

The level up sound rang. Ah, I leveled up.

◆◆◆

The look of the white room is different from the past.

There is something like a coin vending machine installed in the middle of the room, and there are LCD screen on the machine, showing some words.

The place that was supposed to be used to insert coins, had a funnel shape in place of it, meaning it is for us to put something inside. What are we supposed to put? The 4 of us looked at each other.

「What is this——」

「What is this……」

Facing Arisu and Tamaki who tilted their head in doubt, I asked these words to console them.

Next…… I looked at this coin vending machine-like thing again.

I got 2 questions—— what is this? Why did it appear here?

「Kazu-chi, you rose to level 10 right?」

「Mmm, that's right.」

「Is it an award for raising to level 10?」

I hadn't thought about that. Indeed she is Mia, the perfect example of a hikikomori.

「Before we touch it, it is better to ask the computer first.」

Hence the usual questioning time begins, and everyone began to ask questions on their computer.

Most of them are targeting the question on the coin vending machine-like object, and these are what we have understood:

This dispensing machine-like object is my reward for leveling up. As long as there is someone in the party who is level 10 and above, this machine will appear in the white room.

As for the name of the machine, the computer told us coldly to name it ourselves.

This dispensing machine-like object is a machine to convert tokens into tools. The so-called tools not only includes solid objects, but also includes skills and special abilities like magic *etc.*

Or rather, skills and special abilities like magic are the main things.

The so-called tokens, seems to be referring to the red and blue gems that were dropped by the orcs when they die. Then from now these gems will be called red token and blue tokens.
Red tokens represents 1 point, while blue token represents 10 points.

I see, the value of the tokens that the elite orcs dropped are worth 10 times more? Although the exp is only 5 times more. But, I did feel that its strength is above 10 times.

Once we place the tokens into the machine then we cannot take it back. The tokens that we used in this room will also disappear once we return to the original place.

From a system's viewpoint, this is only natural. But until now, when we return to the original place, everything will be reverted back to the moment when we entered the white room. In other words, is this token system the only exception?

「Anyway, regarding the name of this machine, should we just call it Vending Machine?」

「Kazu-chi, you do not have the talent for naming.」

「Huh? Then please let us hear how Mia-sensei, who has a lot of taste, is going to name it.」

Mia gave a「ugh」sound, and lean back in fear.

「Argh, that…… Item Vendor(アイテムベンダー)?」(TL note: Mia just said it in english instead of japanese)

「You are just changing it to English.」

「From a chunibi's viewpoint, this is correct.」

Mia showed a triumph expression and gave me a V sign. She is only a Year 1, what exactly is she talking about. I looked at Arisu and Tamaki, wanting to hear about their opinion.

「Anything is fine.」

「Yes, we will leave it to you.」

Mmm, that is true—— Name what so ever, anything is fine.

「Then let's call it Item Vendor(アイテムベンダー).」

No, wait, I suddenly have a certain idea, and hence entered it into the computer.

Q: Regarding the machine mentioned, can the other students who reached level 10 use it?
A: YES

Q: Even the students that we have yet to have contact with, are they included in the「other students」?
A: YES

「Can this be used to transmit messages?」

I looked at the 3 of them. To be able to transmit information to people who we have yet to contact with, I feel that this suggestion is quite attractive……

Ah, but, this also means that it will be transmitted to those people? Which is Shiba and the people from high school section.

「Kazu-chi, there is a very important question.」

Mia lifted her index finger while saying

「The first one to reach level 10, is it Kazu-chi?」

「Ah—— it is possible.」

I tried asking the computer but I did not get any reply. From the impressions until now, the controller of this computer, have a neutral attitude towards all of us.

Even though we did not get any confirmation, but Mia's prediction is probably correct. If not, the computer would not have asked us to name it.

Okay, then how shall we use this little privilege……

「For instance, if we name this machine as『Gather at the Cultivating Centre』, then we can let the others know that we are using the Cultivating Centre as a base.」

「We can't do that.」

Mia refuted the suggestion.

「We still do not know if the survivors that leveled up to level 10 are going to be our friends.」

She who wanted to go to the high school section for the sake of helping her elder brother, had actually said such words decisively, causing me to go into shock. Mia is indeed……

「Oi, Kazu-chi, you should listen carefully.」

「Mmm, mmm.」

「The ending of a zombie movie often makes one feel that humans are scarier than zombies.」

In the end she is talking about movies?

……No… I see. The things that she had wanted to say, is surprising close to what I had imagined, and also regarding the scene that I saw during the investigation of the high school section.

Which is—— this girl is actually quite keen. She knew the situation clearly. Because she loved to play jokes daily, so I did not notice it.

Mia raised her head and looked at me, with no changes to her usual expressions. But that pair of eyes made me feel a bit sorrowful and a bit lonely.

Did she notice that I have investigated the high school section? That I did not trust them completely, making her disappointed? But currently it is not suitable to raise the matter on the high school section, that is the conclusion that Shiki-san and I have come to after discussion.

Making everyone concentrate on the middle school section, if we tell them too much extra information, it may make them confused.

I also agreed with Shiki-san's considerations, hence I am moving with her instructions.

「Your thinking is right.」

In reality, I never had the thoughts of naming the machine as『Gather at the Cultivating Centre』. If that guy have his eyes on us, then I will not be able to take it. But how should we use this naming privilege effectively…...

「That, I wish to name it. Can you give that privilege to me?」

「I am fine with it, what do you want to do?」

「I wish to pass a message to my brother, of course that is if he is still alive. I want to tell him that I am still alive.」

「I see…… Mmm, then you can use it.」

This to us, indeed has no benefits; but to her, it is very important.

But there is just a problem, if her brother becomes an enemy, then what will happen? But Mia did not wish to expose where she is, so there shouldn't be any problem. After all the moment we used the naming power, we would have exposed that there was someone who had already reached level 10.

「What name are you going to give it?」

Mia lowered her head and thought about it for a while, then she raised her head.

「Just call it『Mia Vendor』.」

「Is it good to use your name to name it?」

「Because my brother is stupid, so I have to use a name that can accurately convey the message.」

Eh, she had also passed her absolute trust in her brother to me. But the possibility that her brother is still alive…… is rather small. The name Mia is rarely seen, so as long as her brother is still alive and that he has reached level 10, he would understand the meaning from Mia.

I will take it as understanding her wish to tell her relatives that she is still alive. Since this matter is important to her, then I will forget about it. I thought also while typing the words into the computer.

「Now back to the question, what should we do with this Mia Vendor?」

「Mmm, now that I think about it carefully, this sounds like I am actually a merchandise.」

「You never thought about this?」

I could not help but tsukkomi.

Chapter 44: Item Vendor

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 44

Chapter 44: Item Vendor

Okay, regarding this machine that looks like a coin vending machine, which is Mia Vendor——

According to Q&A, this is a machine that can turn tokens into abilities or tools. The ones who can use this, are the people who are in this white room.

「What are your thoughts, Mia?」

「It seems like a remedy, but it is extremely suspicious.」

Indeed—— the 2 of us who are more familiar with games, looked at each other and sighed. While Arisu and Tamaki's faces are in baffled expression.

「Kazu-san, what does that mean?」

「First of all, if it is a remedy, then there shouldn't be a need for tokens to exchange things. And the owner of this white room—— let's assume that it is the person who controlled the computer—— he is a person who will not answer when it reaches a crucial point.」

「Hmm, he is fair, yet very evil.」

Hearing our opinions, Arisu thought about it slightly……

「But, the owner of this room gave us skills.」

「Including this, all of the happenings are unable to let us understand the

meaning behind the other party's intentions, hence Mia and I are troubled. Because if we don't use skills, we would be unable to survive, so until now I am unable to refute this.」

But this Mia Vendor, it has a different feeling. I am unable to say what is different, but I feel that the other party seemed to have other intentions.

「For instance, how would Mia explain the meaning behind this action?」

「Something like all of these are for the sake of reclaiming the tokens.」

「The all of these, is referring to……」

「Which is summoning this mountain into this world, then letting the orcs attack here, until us getting the skills—— all of these.」

This is something that is not impossible……

Then isn't it okay if the owner of the white room goes and directly defeat these orcs? Since he is able to do things in a roundabout way, then such a task like defeating orcs shall be easy……

「Or perhaps it is a setting like this—— this world has a certain existence like a god, but he is unable to make a move, so he needs other people to do these stuff.」

「What anime is this?」

「Games, animes, light novels and mangas.」

I see, so this is a common setting in stories? The higher existences in most of the works, are unable to act by themselves, or have certain inconveniences in some areas.

Of course, those are for the sake of the story's development, if not the main characters will lose the meaning of their existence.

So from a viewpoint of reality, so what's about it? If a higher existence really exist, then what is his aim……

A presence that can demonstrate power on their behalf—— that point is definitely confirmed.

If not, the skill system will not exist. It is obvious that there is an unnatural force at work, and it is playing around with us.

Perhaps there is someone laughing at us as we roll around on the ground. If that is so, then from the start……

No—— I shook my head. If there is true, then it is also some small issue, it has nothing to do with their intentions.

What we have to mind now, is only one thing——

If this unknown fellow enters the fray, will he be on our side or against us from now on?

「Regarding if we should use this Mia Vendor actively, what do you think of it Mia?」

「Rather than discussing if we should use this machine actively, I think we have to try it first.」

I see, Mia is right. But…… I could not help but sigh when I saw the required token amount one the LCD screen.

「So expensive……」

Surprisingly, the cheapest things are actually magic. Like Rank 1 Magic《Read Language》, needs 100 tokens.

Rank 2 Magic, needs 400 tokens; Special Skill Shield, need 200; Special items, items replication set: Class A needs 200, Class B need 2000.

Other than that, there are also weird things like notebooks which needs 250 tokens. The Q&A shows that if we write the words in it while we are in the white room, then we can bring it outside. Hmm—— it is indeed convenient, but that is like charging too much.

As the magic products only showed until level 2, hence I tried asking the computer. The answer I gotten was that as the person's level grows, the types of product will also increase.

The tokens we have currently are only 8 blue and 30 red, the rest of them are left in the Cultivating Centre. Argh, because none of us had thought that we will know the use of such things at such a timing.

「We only have enough for Rank 1 Magic.」

「Which is to say—— what do we do with it after buying?」

I asked again regarding this portion, that the below is what I have understood:

After inserting the necessary number of tokens and choosing the item into the Mia Vendor, the computer will choose the selection screen, then we just have to follow the instructions on the computer.

Then why not just let all the procedure be done on the computer…… why do you say it is for reclaiming the tokens, and are these procedures necessary?

Regarding the part about magic, we have to choose one of the same Ranked magic that we have learnt currently and give up on it, then we can replace it with

the new magic.

Taking myself as an example, it means I have to give up 1 of the Rank 1 magic in Summon Magic or Support Magic. if it was me, I will replace magic like《Summon Cauldron》.

Regarding the part about special Skills, we have to use Skill points to learn them.

In other words, to get the Rank 1 Skill Shield, we have to use 1 Skill Point. If we use 2 Skill point then we can raise it to Rank 2. Hmm—— other than 200 tokens, we still have to add in Skill points.

We just have to place a tool into the items replication set, then we can obtain another similar good tool.

What kind of Skill is that? No, even if I tsukkomi magic, it is useless.

Just a mention, Class A items replication set is a square box, it seems like it can put in something around the size of a soccer ball. The Class B items replication set seems to have a length of a metre on a side.

The items replication set can only be used in this white room, and it can only be used once. if we can shove it inside the box, then we can replicate a few things at one time. But there are also things that cannot be replicated, which is like tokens, but that is also natural——

I tried asking a question:「If we fill it with bullets, then can we replicate all of it at once」, and the answer is YES. Oh is it~~

Okay, forget it. What I should be considering now, is not something about others.

「According to our current tokens on hand, we can only buy Rank 1 magic.」

There are over 20 Rank 1 magic. Although it is troublesome, but I still ask the computer one by one.

According to my rough investigation, the Rank 1 Magic that we can buy, is roughly split into 2 types.

One type are those magics that are slightly weaker than normal Rank 1 magic. Even if we rank up the magic to Rank 2, the effect after using it is also equivalent to normal Rank 1 magic. Among them, we can obtain similar effects in normal low-ranked magic.

Ah, since that is so, no wonder we can buy it. So in the end we have to use the magic Skills that we got from Skill points as our main, and these are just for support?

「Like Kazu-chi buying them for self-defense since he has no attack magic, is that how it works?」

Like Mia said, these magic are only complementary abilities for people or parties with Skills that are unbalanced.

The other type is convenient magic. For instance《Read Language》can make the user read all the text, a magic that can make the user understand meanings. If we are going to live in a foreign civilization, then we will need this magic.

Foreign culture? If this is another world, then there are probably other humans living in these lands. When I had a Q&A on the orcs, the computer's reply was「monsters called as orcs by the natives」.

In other words, there are other humans who called them「orcs」?

「If we really have to buy, then we should choose one from《Read Language》, 《Magic Hand》or《Ghost Tired》.」

《Magic Hand》can create a slow moving invisible hand, and allow the user to freely wield it. Objectively speaking, this magic can lift other people's skirt secretly, but it can't hold a sword and it can't do intensive movements like throwing. According to its uses, it shouldn't be a very effective magic.

《Ghost Tired》is a magic that can only be used when you are touching the other party, and it can make the other party tired. Although it is not very striking to the eye but it seems quite useful. The problem is the requirement to touch the other party…… This magic is probably very suitable for Arisu.

Other than that, the magic that can directly attack is probably《Tinder》which light things up. Regarding《Tinder》, even though Arisu and Tamaki said that it is convenient, but…...

「Mmm, just use a lighter or something to light it.」

Mia's intelligent sentence settled everything. That's right, if the magic can be replaced by a simple tool of civilisation, so we do not need it. In the list of 20 Rank 1 Magic, about half of them are magic like that.

「I vote for《Read Language》.」

Mia said. This magic indeed does not make one feel that it is useless. After everyone agreed, I deposited 20 red tokens, 7 blue tokens into the Mia Vendor, and selected《Read Language》on the LCD screen.

A melody came from the computer behind, as though like the sound when you received an email. I looked at my computer and discovered content on it—— to get the new magic《Read Language》, you have to select a magic that you have currently to exchange for it.

I controlled the cursor and chose《Summon Cauldron》. Good bye, cauldron.

《Summon Cauldron》this magic, is indeed useful if you want to discuss. But if we

want a cauldron, we can go to the cooking classroom in the Cultivating Centre or dig in the kitchen in the dormitories.

And even though I got《Read Language》, this magic did not disappear from the screen on Mia Vendor. Very good, the worry that「every tool would be first come, first served」disappears.

Hence, there is no need to worry about things in the future. If it is possible, I hope to discuss with everyone—— at least with Shiki-san——, and get the necessary stuff.

Anyways I got the new magic《Read Language》, then we left the white room.

Returning to the original place.

Kazuhisa: Level 10 Support Magic 4 / Summon Magic 3 Skill Points 4

Chapter 45: Middle School Suppression Operation 5

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 45

Chapter 45: Middle School Suppression Operation 5

At the nearest classroom near the stairs on level 2, their battle has just ended, and Mia and I also entered.

Because of the battle, Arisu and Tamaki's《Invisibility》lose their effect but the effect of《Silent Field》remains.

When casting this magic, Mia's wind magic's rank is 3, so the effective time is 3 minutes to 4minutes 30 seconds. As long as we cast《Invisibility》immediately, there should be enough time to attack another classroom.

Actually, if Mia help them to cast magic, her own《Invisibility》will also lose its effect. If we have to add all of them back, it will waste quite alot of MP.

But stealth is the key of this battle plan so we cannot be stingy with MP, we have to do all that we can—— these have already been discussed in the white room.

Mia showed herself and cast《Invisibility》towards Arisu and Tamaki.

We can feel that Arisu and Tamaki have already left the room. Although we cannot see them, and can't hear them, but we felt a slight scent blow past…… No, that perhaps that is just in my mind.

Actually, Rank 3 Support Magic has a magic called《See Invisibility》.

That is a magic that can see through invisibility. As long as I cast this magic, I will be able to see Arisu and Tamaki now, but…...

This time, it is to let the other 2 get used to the state of invisibility, so I did not cast it on them. But I myself also wish to confirm that everyone has disappeared, hence I also did not cast it on myself.

If we are used to it in the future, perhaps there will be a day where we will add《See Invisibility》into our plans.

Next, I sent the crow towards the corridor to check the situation. The crow raised one of its wings, expressing that the plan is successful.

When we looked in the corridor, the 3 orcs that are guarding the corridor are already lying on the ground.

Arisu and Tamaki are already gone.

Perhaps they have already entered the nearby classroom.

They are really smart, the next action is a race against time. Once the orcs in the classroom sees the corridor, they will discover the existence of intruders……

Then at this moment, we are delivered to the white room. Arisu leveled up.

◆◆◆

Mia Vendor is in the middle of the white room, seemingly the same as just now, without any change.

Arisu and Tamaki defeated another 3 orcs in the next room and there are 3 more orcs left in the next room. Which is to say that they level up in the middle of a battle?

「And there are girls who are still alive.」

Tamaki mentioned. From her dark expression, the situation that those girls are in, must be very bad, perhaps it is until the extent that they are barely alive.

Maybe they will feel that being alive is already a blessing? Or regret that they are still alive? That we will not know.

What we can do—— is to save their lives. If they are willing, then we will use them as soldiers.

I also felt that I am too much.

But considering the future, this strategy is the best. At least, Shiki-san and I will bear the responsibility for such a cruel strategy, and our decisions are quite firm.

「How many?」

「At least 2…… Probably 3.」

That is really a lot. But, it is natural to be happy that there are survivors.

「Arisu, after returning, you should cast《Heal》and《Cure Mind》on them first, then immediately head for the next classroom.」

「I understand, we must finish it before《Silent Field》ends right?」

「Yes, we will deal with the rest of the stuff.」

「Okay. Th...that, but……」

Arisu glared at me while squinting.

「You cannot stare at a girl’s naked body.」

「I will do my best to respect your wishes.」

I lowered my head. I will definitely see them, there is nothing I can do about it.

But Arisu's jealous look is also very cute, so even if she gets angry at me, I am fine with it.

I seem to be too easy-going.

Yes, if this sort of situation continues, I will probably become numbed to it. Even so, as compared to being down and worried, I feel that laughing casually is better.

The girls who are harmed can be replaced, but we are irreplaceable. In this world, humans are not equal. Even so, Arisu is still a bit unhappy.

「Kazu-san, there is one more thing.」

Tamaki said with some difficulties.

「The window frame in the classroom is burnt.」

「What is going on?」

「Mmm—— I am also not very clear about it, anyway it just feels that it is completely burnt. Other than that, there is a charred body…… I feel that it should be that of a teacher's.」

Charred? Was it burnt by the orcs for fun?

I remembered the low-class campfire in the school grounds. Hmm—— I am confused. No matter what, we should take a look first.

Luckily, the orcs in the corridor has been finished off by Arisu and the others, so there will not be any danger of us being discovered by orcs immediately.

Even though Arisu leveled up, this time I want her to keep her skill points, because I wish to raise her Spear Skill to Rank 5 as fast as possible.

Arisu: Level 10 Spear Skill 4／Healing Magic 3 Skill Point 4

◆◆◆

We returned to the original place.

I quickly picked up the red gems on the corridor, and Mia also helped to pick them up. Just as we finish picking up all the gems, Arisu and Tamaki walked out from the neighbouring classroom. It seems that they have already defeated all the orcs inside, and done treatment for all the girls who were saved.

Because the effect of《Silent Field》is still effective, so we could only nod to each other. Mia and I switched place with Arisu and Tamaki, and entered the neighbouring classroom.

The curtain in the classroom is indeed burnt, and there is still some burnt smell lingering in the air. But there is a stronger scent of odour, so I can't smell the charred smell too much.

There is a charred male body in a corner of the classroom.

Beside it, there are 4 more bodies of male students who had their head chopped off.

In another corner, we discovered 3 powerless and naked girls. Their bodies are stained with the fluids of the orcs, there seems to be no external injuries, it should be because Arisu used magic to heal them.

Arisu should have also casted《Cure Mind》on them too, but when these girls saw me, they also did not try to cover up their bodies.

Facing these girls, we are indeed helpless. Before Shiki-san return, we could only let them endure first.

But everyone is still able with their limbs intact, that is really great. If their hands or legs are chopped off, then it will be hard for them to fight.

Basically if we use《Cure Deficit》of Rank 4 Healing Magic, there is the chance of recovering lost parts.

But Arisu's healing magic is currently only Rank 3, so she is unable to use this magic.

I called the 2 summoned gray wolves into this room to wait, and have them as bodyguards. When the girls saw the wolves, they are all shocked.

Ah—— it is natural to be scared. But if they scream, we will also be troubled. Due to the effect of《Silent Field》still being effective, hence I moved my hands around to signal to them that the 2 wolves are safe.

But they are completely unable to understand.

And feel that I am like an idiot.

I looked to the side and discovered that Mia is laughing until she was on the ground. Damn fellow.

There is no other way, I could only wait for《Silent Field》to lose its effect and then use language to convey that the gray wolves are our comrades. Really, see these 2 little dogs with their adorable eyes, what is there to be afraid of?

No, they will indeed cause others to feel afraid. Mmm, sorry.

While I was thinking, the naked girls shook their heads.

「I thought it was that weird dog that those pigs brought along…..」

「Wait, that——」

When I had wanted to get closer to ask questions, I was caught by Mia by the sleeve.

「Kazu-chi, this is not a gentleman's behaviour, you have to turn back.」

「No, I was thinking——」

Just now when I was doing a mime, you are still laughing until you fell onto the ground.

「Arisu-chi is glaring at you?」

I quickly turned my head, and save Arisu standing at the door with a sad face, I could not help but feel a bit upset.

「Kazu-san, we have looked through all the classrooms. We defeated a total of 2 elites, 9 small fries. The survivor is only this girl.」

Tamaki used her shoulder to support a naked girl. I see, she is the last survivor on level 2?

「Also, Kazu-san's behaviour made Arisu's mood turn bad.」

I know.

Ah ah enough. As compared to this, the「monster dog」from their words is the most important thing currently. That is perhaps the「fellow」that I saw using《Remote Viewing》.

The animal that was bigger than the gray wolves, beside the general orc.

「What does that dog look like?」

I maintain the stance of back facing the naked girls to question them.

Even though I can't see the girls, but I feel that they are laughing bitterly. Mmm, being able to laugh is also a good thing.

「It is a black dog, and it can spew flames from its mouth. Then the teacher began to burn……」

Spew flames from its mouth? In game terms, it means a breath attack?

Aiya, since there are already monsters like orcs, even if enemies that seems like monsters from RPG appears, it is also not that surprising. I thought about it momentarily that perhaps one day such a fellow may appear.

As for the reason to why I had thought that such enemies will appear, there is another point supporting it.

In Rank 4 Supporting Magic, there is a magic called《Resist All》. This magic can target one of the attributes in Earth, Water, Fire and Wind, and create a strong resistance against that attribute attacks.

What is attribute attacks? Damn, just how similar to RPG do you want to make the system into? So—— this means that those sort of attack exist. After seeing the explanations, I had cursed at the computer for a while.

Just a mention, this is something that happened yesterday. That time Arisu who was beside me who is raging, revealed a bothered smile.

「Hellhound ..... or Cerberus?」

Mia spoke in a whisper. Ah, then again, RPG have such a monster inside. Since it is a black dog, then we can just call it Hellhound.

Hmm, I feel that Cerberus sounds super strong, so I wish to put it in the range of Hellhounds. Although we gave it a weaker sounding name, but the strength of the enemy will not change.

「Anyway, let's call it Hellhound.」

「Hmm, it feels that it will be difficult. Kazu-chi, what should we do?」

I thought about it for a while. If we linger here too long, there could be danger.

Honestly speaking, once we meet the hellhound and the general orc together, I feel that things will turn bad.

But the 2 seems to be at the same place, so there is no way to separate and deal with them, then……

「Guess we could only retreat?」

I whispered, and looked at Mia. Mia gave a「mmm」, and nodded. Which means she agrees?

Then is Arisu and Tamaki……

At this moment, the wireless transceiver sent Shiki-san's voice, it seems that they have already returned back to somewhere near the school building.

「The timing is just right.」

I said in a small voice.

Chapter 46: Middle School Suppression Operation 6

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 46

Chapter 46: Middle School Suppression Operation 6

I used the wireless transceiver to contact with Shiki-san, and told her about the girl who is hiding in level 1—— which is about Sumire.

Other than that I also explained about the matter with the level 2 survivors, and told her the information about the black dog that they saw.

「Has level 2 been cleared?」

「It is mostly done, next is only level 3.」

「It ends here huh, I feel that your decision to retreat is correct.」

Shiki-san's judgement is quite fast.

When it is time to retreat, we should retreat.

We still have some strength, hence we have to retreat.

As long as we can return safely, we can come back again.

It seems that a certain military man had said something like that. Now that we have entered a real battlefield before, the meaning of these words has really got to me.

I looked at the ceiling.

Perhaps there are surviving girls on level 3. Maybe they are suffering under the

abuse of the orcs right now, even though they are about to die, they are still hanging on, hoping for our rescue.

If we retreat here, they will probably never be able to see tomorrow's sun.

About this, Shiki-san had mentioned it before.

It is because the time limit is approaching, that is why we attacked the dangerous main school building.

But now, that's the limit, we cannot take anymore risks. The girls who are on still awaiting rescue on level 3, are abandoned by us just like that.

「Mmm, from my MP, doing it like this is correct.」

「Mia, but then——」

Tamaki looked at Mia with a protesting expression, but Mia just slowly shook her head.

「We cannot fail, not even 1 mistake can be made.」

Hearing that, Tamaki kept quiet. These words are very apt. Tamaki lowered her head with unsatisfied expression on her face.

「This is also something that cannot be helped, Kazu-senpai?」

Arisu seems to be unsatisfied with my decision too, but she who believes in me, swallowed back her words.

「Mmm, just until here. Until now, everything has been proceeding smoothly, but once we reach level 3, it may not be so. Moreover there are unknown enemies up there, the risk is too great.」

「B..but, Kazu-san——」

Tamaki raised her head, still unwilling to give up. I looked at her.

「Th..that, Kazu-san, perhaps there are survivors up there.」

「I know, but we still have to retreat.」

Tamaki looked at me with an almost crying expression on her face, Arisu placed her hand on her shoulder.

「Believe in Kazu-san, okay?」

Tamaki closed her mouth as though she is desperately enduring something. Her teeth are clenched tightly while she kept on shaking her head, and her ponytails shook vigorously up and down.

「Sorry, I actually made such a selfish request, that was too pathetic of me.」

「Don't say that.」

I placed my hand on Tamaki's head, and caress it gently.

I can understand her feelings. But before that, choosing a path that everyone can survive is my responsibility.

Okay since we are going to leave, then follow the plan. I asked the girls that we saved「if they could move」, the girls then attempted to stand up even though their steps are unstable.

But in the midst they became unstable, thankful Arisu and Tamaki helped to support them. It seems that wishing for them to move by themselves….. is a bit hard. Forget it, this is something that can't be helped.

「I understand, I will call Shiki-san and the others over.」

I used the transceiver to get the support party up to level 2. In the meanwhile, I had Arisu and Tamaki keep a lookout at the corridor. Shiki-san and the others with Sumire, walked up the stairs nervously.

「Kazu-san, Sumire-chan and these girls, are they the only 4?」

「Mmm.」

We cannot drag it any longer. The 3 in the classroom, and the one that Tamaki brought over—— I handed the 4 of them to Shiki-san and the others.

「Okay, now we just follow the order and go down the stairs……」

Just everyone came out to the corridor——

We just happen to bump into 3 orcs that are walking down from level 3.

Maybe it is time for a change of shift, or maybe they wanted to come and rape the girls that are here.

The orcs got a shock and stayed motionless on the spot……

Anyway the timing is really bad.

I immediately shouted out:

「Arisu, Tamaki!」

「Yes!」

「Understood!」

Arisu and Tamaki closed in to the orcs quickly. Even though they are in a panic, they still gave a warning cry upwards, and made a pose for engaging.

But it is too late.

Tamaki closed the distance between them in a moment.

Then she used her giant axe to split one of the orcs into halves.

At this timing, Tamaki and Mia leveled up, and we are sent to the white room.

◆◆◆

In the white room, we looked at each other. This is bad—— everyone gave a troubled expression.
」
「Level 3 should have noticed the situation just now…… right?」

「They should have noticed.」

I do not know how many orcs are on level 3, but they will probably gather first then come and attack us.

Even if it is just a little bit, until Shiki-san and the others leave, we have to buy as much time as possible.

「Arisu and Tamaki will take charge of blocking the stairs, as for the space inbetween——」

「There is only this method. But they were to use the stairs on the other side……」

I am very clear on what Arisu is worried about. There are stairs on the left and right side of the main school building, and both route can access level 1 to 3 and even the rooftop.

If the orcs were to come down from both stairs, there will be a team that will reach level 1. Then Shiki-san and the others will be in danger.

What should I do? I crossed my arms and think, and without noticing, I looked towards Mia.

「Yes, how about using《Path Wall》?」

「Hmm, are we opening a hole in the ceiling? Or on the ground?」

「No, we will open it on the wall. If we open a hole in the external wall of the classroom at the south side , then we will be seen clearly by the courtyard side. But if we open it at the the classroom of the north side, then it will lead us to inside of the building. If we just down directly, we will be able to escape into the forest.」

「Oh oh.」

Mia clapped her hands with a「pat」, seemingly very impressed with my idea. Okay, the strategy is decided.

Tamaki: Level 9　Sword Skill 5／Physical 1　Skill Point 2
Mia: Level 9　Earth Magic 4／Wind Magic 3　Skill Point 2

◆◆◆

After returning to the original place, I called Shiki-san who was lending her shoulder to the girls.

「To the classroom at the north side! We will open a hole in the wall, all of you will jump down!」

Just these few words, Shiki-san seemed to have understood everything, she

turned and called out to the others.

In this timing, Mia rushed into the classroom at the north side.

She opened her hand towards the wall inside that was facing outside and casted《Path Wall》, causing the wall to change shape.

I don’t know if the windows will be affected, hence I had Mia used her magic on the place where there are no windows.

In the end, a big hole that was big enough for 2 person to stand side by side was opened on the wall.

On the other side of the hole, we could see the inside of the school and the forest is nearby it.

We also rush into the same classroom together.

I ran to the hole there and kick away the surrounding tables and chairs, opening a path for Shiki-san and the others.

Since the situation has become like this, there is no need to worry about the ones above. I created the noise without any hesitation.

「Come quickly!」

「Understood.」

Shiki-san supported the girl that she is helping, and jumped down first.

But she didn’t expect her landing to fail and both of them fell on the ground.

But she climbed up immediately and look upwards here.

Good, she seems fine.

「Th..that, it's so high……」

「Sumire-chi, do your best.」

Mia slapped the butt of Sumire who is still hesitating.

「Hurry, while we could still hold on.」

With Sumire as the first, the girls who were rebuked nodded their heads frantically, and jumped off one by one. As a side note, Mia is younger than them. Forget it, since things have progressed to this, age is no longer important.

On the other hand, Arisu and Tamaki are fighting at the entrance of the classroom. They have defeated the initial few orcs, and defeated another 4 orcs that appeared as reinforcements.

Then the 2 of them met with the third wave which is the 2 elite orcs.

Facing 2 elite orcs, even for the 2 of them, they could not avoid a hard fight.

The elite orcs swung the giant axe, attacking violently. I quickly rush to them, and touch Arisu who draw some distance away from the fight.

「《Haste》」

Arisu's body is surrounded by red light in an instant, and her movements become very nimble. Making use of the opening from the elite orc's surprise, Tamaki moved back.

「Kazu-san, please.」

「Okay,《Haste》.」

Tamaki's body is also surrounded by red light.

Tamaki jumped forward. Facing the giant axe that the elite orc had swung in front of her, and shortened the distance between them……

She gave a blow that was full of vigor, but this blow only hit the lightbulb on the ceiling. No, she deliberately destroyed the lightbulb.

The broken glass fell on the ground, and in that instant, the elite orcs stopped moving in confusion.

Taking chance of the opening, Tamaki dashed into the opponent's range……

She swung the giant axe, and pulled out the fruit knife from her bosom.

She had wanted a back-up weapon, so I gave her that knife, and strengthened it with《Hard Weapon》.

Tamaki held the fruit knife in a reverse grip and swung upwards strongly, cutting open the elite orc's throat. The fruit knife that was casted with《Hard Weapon》, cut opened the bronze-coloured strong skin easily. Just this blow, nearly cut the half of the elite orc's throat.

The elite orc was taken down by Tamaki's sudden blow, and its blue blood spray out like a fountain.

「Good, I did it!」

Tamaki kept the fruit knife and picked up the giant axe on the ground and went to support Arisu. The 2 of them attacked ferociously together, and finished off the other elite orc in no time.

And I leveled up at this moment.

◆◆◆

Even though we came to the white room, we also do not have anything else to discuss.

「I am going to raise the Rank of Support Magic.」

This battle has already ended. For the next battle, it is better to raise the power of Support Magic. The others does not have any differing views.

Next is just to retreat, then we will finally be out of danger.

I clicked enter.

Kazuhisa: Level 11 Support Magic 4→5/ Summon Magic 3 Skill Points 6→1

We returned to the original place.

And heard the footsteps of the orcs coming down from level 3.

「Okay, let's escape through the hole!」

I shouted out and jumped down from the hole. I used my hands to support myself so as to divide the landing force. And my legs do not feel too numb, perhaps it is because of my level up, but I feel that my body has become more muscular.

I quickly let out some space and Mia jumped down after me, followed by Arisu and Tamaki, then the 2 wolves.

All of a sudden, I felt a sudden fear in my whole body.

I raised my head and looked up.

Something broke the windows on level 3 and dropped down, landing somewhere near me.

That is a creature which moves with 4 legs and is bigger than the gray wolf. It’s a black gigantic dog.

That dog is somewhere very near me.

The ground began to give out sounds of cracking, and began to shaking intensively. I nearly fell on the ground but luckily I managed to hang on.

When I raise my head, a gigantic creature that was bigger than 3m was in front of me, that pair of red glowing eyes are glaring at me.

Fear caused me to remain motionless.

Chapter 47: Middle School Suppression Operation 7

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 47

Chapter 47: Middle School Suppression Operation 7

On the asphalt ground nearby the school.

A black dog is in front of me. Though I say it's a dog, but its body is gigantic, with a length of 3m, it can't be compared with the gray wolves.

Which is to say, this fellow is actually this big…… when I saw it through the crow's investigation, it had shrunk its body into a ball, so I hadn't noticed it.

Now that it is standing straight, with its body fully stretched, and ready.

That pair of ruby red eyes kept on staring at me. Shit, I am completely being locked on, it has treated me as a target.

If this fellow is the same as the name that we have given it, a real hellhound from the legends, then coupled with the information that we have gotten today……

The hellhound opened its mouth, a flame flickered in the depths of its reddish black tongue…… then it sucked in a breath.

A sack like thing situated below the hellhound's throat, expanded like a balloon.

That is an amazing organ, an ordinary dog does not have it.

Hence I can also understand, that is……

「Kazu-san!」

Arisu wish to rush to my side, but because she had lost her balance due to landing, it is the same for Tamaki and my gray wolf familiars.

So there is no one that could protect me currently.

This is fine.

I hope that the attack will only be targeted at me.

「《Resist All: Fire》.」

I casted magic on myself.

Immediately, the red flames that was spewed from the hellhound's mouth engulfed my entire body.

So hot. I gave a groan and rolled on the ground. Even with defensive magic, it can't block this degree of heat?

My skin is burning, sounds of my hair burning can be heard. I used my hands to cover my eyes.

My throat feels awful, like my lungs are burnt. I retreated 1 step, 2 steps……

「《Air Blast》.」

It's Mia's voice. Fresh air covered my skin. I raised my head and took a deep breath.

I look to the side. The flames spewed from the hellhound's mouth is redirected by the strong wind, and the nearby woods are all burnt.

The hellbound glared at Mia with hatred. It took its sight away from me, lowering its body, as though it wanted to pound on Mia.

But, before that——

「You bastard!」

Tamaki jumped out nimbly, and raised her giant axe, closing to the hellhound.

Her whole body is still surrounded by the red glow of《Haste》. Tamaki quickly closed their distance before the hellhound could react. The gigantic black dog reacted towards the incoming threat, and wanted to step back.

But it is too late. Tamaki swung down the giant axe, and cut a piece of skin on the front leg of the hellhound. Blue blood sprayed, and turned into flames that burn, part of them even burnt Tamaki's gym clothes.

「Wh..what is this!」

Tamaki panickedly threw down the axe, wanting to use her hands to pat off the fire on her clothes. The hellhound took the chance and put some distance between them……

Then it suck in a breath strongly.

「You wish.」

This time it was Arisu who rush towards the hellhound. Very good, that is the time. I ran to Tamaki and placed my hand on her shoulder.

「《Resist All: Fire》, this should deal with it slightly.」

The instant the magic was cat, the flames on the gym clothes extinguished, it is really effective.

「Th..thank you, Kazu-san.」

Tamaki's exposed neck had some burn injuries. Injuries of this extent can be cured with recovery magic, but it seems very painful. Damn, this bastard actually did this to my companion!

Tamaki picked up the giant axe on the asphalt ground, and nodded after looking at me, then she turn towards Arisu who is battling with the hellhounds.

Arisu used the attack range of the spear and stabbed repeatedly at the range where she will not be splashed with the fresh blood flames. The hellhound also seems to be unfamiliar with fighting with spears, and kept being unable to give the decisive blow.

Even so, the hellhound's movements is still very fast. Once Arisu relaxes, it will probably rush towards her. Arisu also understood this, so she used《Haste》to its limits, keeping her distance.

Even if the flame breath attacks, as long as there is this distance, perhaps she can avoid it. The distance between them is that special, perhaps it is only Arisu who is familiar with battle can do it.

Which is to say, Arisu is really good at fighting. Even if it is now, I am still thankful for it in my heart.

I only knew after I asked, that she was a girl who hates fighting in the past, hence her fighting talent also kept on sleeping within her, only awakening it yesterday.

This moment, Arisu is maintaining the danger distance and suppressing the hellhound. But this situation will probably be unable to be sustained for long.

「Tamaki!」

「Hmm! Arisu, switch!」

Tamaki raised her giant axe and rush towards the hellhound. Arisu left the frontline as though she is switching with her, and returned to my side where there is some distance from the battlefield.

The hellhound jumped back, avoiding Tamaki's chop.

「Ka..kazu-san you are burnt!」

「Ah, no need to mind it. Or rather……《Resist All: Fire》.」

I also helped Arisu cast magic that resist fire. As a side note, Mia retreated to somewhere further away than me, looking at Shiki-san and the others who escaped into the forest.

Argh, are Shiki-san and the others who have the burdens fine? Just now the fire was also spewed towards the forest.

I surveyed the surrounding. Luckily the flames spewed by the hellhound lighted up some places which are quite far away from Shiki-san and the others. Then again, it burnt up the trees that are still growing, these flames are really something.

I had understood now, that the human campfire in the courtyard is probably also done by this fellow. That time, if I had not felt unease towards the sight of the campfire, and investigate carefully…….

No, now that it had come to this, discussing it will not help things. As compared to that, it is more important to win the battle in front of us. If we drag it too long, more orcs will come.

But before that……

Hmm, wait a moment? I suddenly thought about something, this bastard is always near the general orc?

Then that fellow…… That general orc who feels like a demon king——

「Ah shit.」

Mia looked up. Hearing Mia's words, I did not look up, but rush towards the forest, jumping to the naked ground from the asphalt ground. My legs tripped on a protruding rock, making me fall disgracefully. I kept on rolling, anyway it is just to pull some distance.

As I had expected, the asphalt ground that I was on, split into halves with a huge sound. Small rocks scattered, and some even hit my face.

I raised my head and looked, discovering a very burly black orc kneel on a knee. The super gigantic orc with a silver sword in its right hand, gradually stood up.

General Orc.

This fellow is the real boss of the orcs here. It looked at the surrounding arrogantly, then took a deep breath……

Shit, it is coming. I immediately used the new support magic that I learnt.

「《Deflection Spell》」

Rank 5 Support Magic《Deflection Spell》, is a magic that can be casted on a party member. The premise is that the target must be near the caster, and each time it can only affect one person. The effect is to widen the range of the magic that the target uses next time, for instance if it is a magic that can benefit one member, the beneficial target can widen it to every member in the party.

In this sort of situation, the necessary magic is……

「Mia!」

Please, notice it!

Indeed, Mia who had pulled further away, used the silence sound to call out the magic's name.

「《Silent Field》」

The general orc opened its mouth, about to roar. As though it is trying to cover its voice ,the silent field widens.

Very good! Mia, thanks for noticing! Ah, I have always felt that you are a capable girl. I believe that if it's a hikikomori, she will definitely be able to understand what sort of action this monster will take at such a time.

The silent magic had its effect, and sealed the general orc's roar……

It should have been so, but——

The air is slightly vibrating.

I sunk into panic. How can this be, it should not be like this. The surroundings around everyone of us are covered in silence magic……

But, the general orc's roar seems to be saying that it is useless, and scattered the magic. That roar covered everywhere, as though playing around with our eardrums.

This roar is strong to the extent that even our souls could be blown away.

Arisu and me who are nearby, are sent flying with the shockwave, and kept on rolling on the mud.

What is this? What is going on with this fellow?

Magic is not effective on it? No, is the magic being broken?

This is too ridiculous, too unreasonable.

I raised my head.

The general orc looked at me, and an eerie evil smile showed on his face.

Chapter 48: Decisive Battle at the Middle School 1

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 48

Chapter 48: Decisive Battle at the Middle School 1

I support my upper body up while maintaining a fallen position, looking at the general orc

The gigantic black-coloured orc, lifted the sword that was glowing with silver light easily, and stood sternly like a statue. It looked at me, as though praising its own victory.

Shit, this fellow is really bad news.

Yesterday during the evening when I was fighting with the elite orc, I was so scared until I decided to retreat immediately. But what I had felt now, completely surpassed that, a difference that was enough to make one despair.

Yesterday, Arisu and I were in a bad state. But thanks to my timely level up, then we could come up with a strategy. Luckily everything went well, hence we barely managed to attain victory.

This time, I just leveled up. Even if we defeat the hellhound, the next level should be quite far away.

No, this is determined by the experience given by the hellhound.

Perhaps Arisu can level up? Then Arisu's spear skill can rise to Rank 5. But the general orc in front of us is too scary, so scary until I feel that Rank 5 Spear Skill may not bring able any change in the battle situation.

With a roar that can even break《Silent Field》, it is not a joke. This also means

that the effect of magic is not an absolute, right?

Which is to say, it scattered the magic away?

If it is like this, then Mia's other magic—— like《Heat Metal》, will they be uneffective too?

That sword is still glowing with silver light, is it enchanted with some magic? Other is it something like a magic sword that is commonly seen in fantasy stories? The blade should be pretty sharp? Other is there some other effect?

Magic Sword. I had suddenly thought about it, a certain novel had mentioned something like being able to devour the opponent's soul, or destroy the world…… That, even if that sword is not of that level, it will also have some sort of effect…….?

Arisu and Tamaki have to fight with an opponent with that sort of weapon……?

My important lover Arisu; Although Tamaki is not my lover, but she is also an important comrade of mine. Must I command them to move forward?
Now that it has come to this, I have began to regret attacking the main school building. I had knew that if we made a wrong move, it will become like this.

No, Shiki-san isn't wrong. She only gave the best method currently, and I also recognised that the gamble was necessary, but…….

I kept thinking, with an extremely fast speed on such useless things.

No, concentrate. Now what should I do? Anyway, we must take care of the situation currently…….

「《Smog》」

Mia used magic. Wind Magic Rank 1《Smog》, is a magic that conjures smoke to

block vision. The magic smoke quickly covered the surroundings, blocking everyone's view.

Yes, we cannot face both the hellhound and the general orc together, so there is only 1 thing that we can do.

Retreat!

「Shiki-san, we are going to run, use that!」

Will Shiki-san who has entered the forest hear my voice? No matter what, I stood up, and ran towards the forest haphazardly, Arisu and Mia also followed me.

Tamaki who is facing the hellhound, also gradually move towards the direction of the forest.

「We are going, Tamaki, put some distance!」

「Okay——」

Shiki-san who came out from the forest gave the signal, and Tamaki immediately retreat away from the hellhound. The black giant dog arched its body, intending to chase after Tamaki……

Shiki-san opened the can and threw it out with its contents. The things inside the can splashed onto the hellhound's face.

The hellhound struggled in pain, giving howls in rage, shaking its head left and right vigorously.

That stench followed with the wind and drifted to our side. If I must describe it, that smell is like the sour smell of a rotten egg. Anyway, it is just an extremely smelly stench.

「Fermented fresh fish is really smelly……」

Shiki-san said like it didn't concern her. She had came out from the signal that we, who have been shocked due to the surprise, have given out.

「Come, walk this way. I have already called the other girls to head back to the Cultivating Centre first.」

「The girl that you are carrying?」

「That very fat girl? Sumire-chan right?」

Ah, you actually said it, I had tried to use some polite way of describing in my head.

Ah forget it, anything is fine, she will be able to get enough exercise like this.

「We will lure those guys to the traps region.」

「Un..understand.」

Then again, why are there such cans? Later I really want to ask Shiki-san. No, I have this feeling that I do not really want to ask, after all it is about why she prepared a stinky can……

Anyway, we—— the 4 people from the elite party, together with the familiars and Shiki-san, are running in the forest. For the sake of luring the enemies to the traps, we tried our best to pull the distance away from our enemies.

After all the hellhound will catch up immediately, so if we are too slow, then it will lose its meaning.

As expected, a howl came, and the forest behind us began to burn.

Isn’t this fellow too reckless. Even if it is just guessing, but flames caused by magic should be hard to extinguish. The phenomenon created by magic seems to require magic to counteract it. But reversely, it must also extinguish after a certain time.

Even so, if the seeds of flames causes the flames to spread…… is it trying to induce a huge scale forest fire? This is destroying nature, beast.

No, it is useless talking to a dog about destroying nature. Then again, that dog’s movements are strange. There are sounds of crashing coming from the back.

Ah—— could it be because its sense of smell is abnormal now? This should be a good chance?

Even so, there is still another general orc behind. Even if we head back and fight, it will be hard to attain victory.

In this situation, it is indeed correct to lure the enemies to the area with traps.

As long as there are traps, there will be some way. Calm down, now is not the time to panick.

「Kazu-san」

Arisu while running beside me, used her hand to touch my shoulder.

「《Heal》」

Right, I was burned. After that, I remembered that I was blown away by the general orc’s roar, then I was hitted in the head by the shattered asphalt pieces. I used my hand to touch my forehead, ah, I seemed to have been bleeding.

I had this feeling that this sort of injury, is no longer considered as an injury……

After my level surpassed 10, my body seemed to have become more firm.

Even if I had support magic to resist fire, after been swallowed by that scary flame, I actually could say that there wasn't much damage…… I am really a monster.

Forget it, a monster is fine. No matter what sort of changes happens to my body, as long as I can survive, anything is fine. If Arisu and the others can be safe due to this, then that will be even better.

The area that was touched by Arisu, gradually warmed up, and the pain also slowly disappeared.

「Thank you, Arisu.」

「It is great that you are fine. When Kazu-san was covered by the flames spewed by the dog, I thought that my heart had stopped.」

「It is fine, but my heart also almost stopped beating physically. It is great that magic could protect us from a certain level of damage.」

If there is no support magic, will I die on the spot? No, I am currently level 11, which means I have something like a HP, perhaps I could endure it…...

But I do not have the wish to do some human experiment, and I do not wish to let others be killed from that sort of breath. If Arisu were to be surrounded by that flame, and exposed burnt skins—— that sort of scene, I absolutely do not want to see that.

Hence I have to make my decision, to finish off that hellhound quickly. If possible, when it falls into the trap and unable to do anything, then Arisu will finish it off…...

「The general orc circled to the front.」

Shiki-san who is in front said so. Oi, why did you know that? I did not say my doubts out, but Shiki-san turn towards me slightly.

「As long as you focus and listen, you can identify from the sound. When Detection Skill is raised to Rank 2, the ability is also became stronger, just that you will need abit of skill.」

Wow~ Detection Skill is really good, although that「skill」part is making me abit uneasy. Don't tell me she did some strange practice inside the white room……

「I can use my left and right ear to change the accuracy. Positions and adjusting the frequency of the sounds can be done with Rank 1, as long as you train diligently on it.」

Ah—— she is indeed doing something that normal people is unable to understand. Because of this, fanatics of MMO are…… Forget it, it's fine since that skill is quite useful now.

「We can only drop the general orc into the hole, then everyone will deal with the hellhound together.」

「That's right, then we will do it like this.」

Just in case, while running, I casted《Resist All: Fire》on Shiki-san and Mia. At this time, I wish to use《Deflection Spell》and divert the effect to the entire party. But I do not have that excess ability, hence this is something that can't be helped.

With this, even if everyone is hit by that flame, then they will still be safe…… No, will it be difficult for Shiki-san whose level is lower?

「After bringing us to the trap area, Shiki-san should keep away first.」

「I will. Forcing yourself forward even though you can't be of help, this act is nothing but that of a fool. Even if you die in battle, it can only be said that you asked for it. I have to use my life more efficiently.」

I really hope that you can say that you don't want to die honestly. You are not going to say it? You awkward girl.

「It is just in front, follow me.」

Shiki-san stopped, and then turned left into the animal trail. All of us followed behind her. After circling around the big tree trunk, our position is on the other side of the trap.

At this timing, the general orc just chopped down the tall wild grass, and dashed out. The distance between us is only a few dozen steps. Mia, Shiki-san and I retreated to the back, while Arisu and Tamaki readied their weapons.

The general orc revealed a smile, and attacked with the sword that was glowing with silverlight. It did not even care about Arisu and Tamaki who are already ready to intercept, and dashed over in a very carefree way.

Did it have absolute confidence in its ability? Or is it just a simple fool? Or both? Anyway, the general orc rushed over directly.

In the end, it fell into the trap immediately.

「Very good.」

Mia clenched her fist tightly

「It's a success, next is to defeat it, Arisu!」

「Mmm, Tamaki!」

Arisu naturally looked into the hole...

A bad feeling came over me.

「Arisu, stop!」

I used my magic in reflex.

「《Reflection》」

A rainbow coloured barrier appeared before Arisu, and reflected something. A heavy sound echoed out from the trap.

A spine-chilling roar echoed through the forest, the surrounding falling leaves danced around like a tornado. Arisu and Tamaki could not help but retreated a few steps.

The big-sized black orc jumped out from the hole. When I realised it jumped out, the general orc is already at the ground beside the hole.

It actually escaped the hole just by jumping, this scene left me in shock. Just in a instant, the invincible trap has been broken.

And…… what was reflected just now…… could it be—— although I did not see anything, but if my gut feeling is correct, the thing that killed the crow during the investigation……

Regarding the attack by the general orc, I have some sort of prediction, which is to say—— the general orc is now taking out something from a pouch on its waist with its left hand, and that action……

The attack is coming.

Who will it be? No, no matter who the target is, who will be in the worst

situation if they get targeted?

The answer is simple, among the members, the only one that had the danger of dying in a single blow is…...

I stood in front of Shiki-san as like I was protecting her.

「《Reflection》」

The answer is only half correct. Something flew out from the general orc's left hand, towards us.

Forget it, I better say it clearly, that thing is a small rock. The general orc used some unknown method and threw out the small rock at a high speed.

That small rock assault me who is protecting Shiki-san, then it will reflected by the rainbow-coloured barrier.

But there wasn't only 1 small rock, the general orc had threw 2 small rock continuously. And the second rock is aimed at Mia.

「Huh?」

Mia gave a shocked sound.

Then her body is blown away by the impact.

At the same time, the small rock that was reflected by me, hit the general orc's left hand, causing its thumb is bend in an awkward direction……

This also represent that, that attack has that sort of power.

I was too careless. If the place that it was reflected to, wasn't right, other people may also die.

Then again——

Beside Mia, something thin flew in the air.

That was an arm.

Just a small rock, caused Mia’s left arm to be torn apart and blew it away.

「Ah……」

Mia fell to the ground with a consternation expression on her face.

Chapter 49: Decisive Battle at the Middle School 2

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 49

Chapter 49: Decisive Battle at the Middle School 2

The general orc is unable to throw small rocks to attack us because the thumb on its left hand is fractured.

But the price is——

We lost Mia's left hand.

No, actually it is not a permanent lost, after all we still have healing magic.

A normal《Heal》will not be able to rejoin broken limbs, but if we are using Rank 4 Healing Magic《Cure Deficit》, then it may be possible to heal broken limbs.

But Arisu's healing magic is only Rank 3 currently, it seems like there is a need to raise it to Rank 4……

Even though we can't use《Cure Deficit》right now, there is still another magic called in《Stasis》in Rank 1 Healing Magic, which can stop the time in an object. For instance if it is casted on food, it can prevent rotting.

As long as we cast this on Mia's hand, then we can stop it from being damaged, and preserve it until Arisu raised her Rank.

Compared to that, the problem now is, how should we salvage this situation.

Arisu and Tamaki are shakened badly, and the general orc is right in front, but they don't dared to attack.

《Haste》has already ended, although the other supporting magic are still effective, but even if the 2 of them work together, it will also be hard to go against the general orc.

Moreover, the hellhound is approaching.

This is like a dead end.

At this time, what should we do……

「Kazu-san, you should head over to Mia.」

Shiki-san who is behind me spoke.

「If it is this side, I will do something to salvage it.」

Shiki-san said so and walked to me.

She used a sharp voice and instructed Arisu and Tamaki, and the 2 of them regain their senses due to it, barely managing to avoid the slash from the orc.

「Quick, now.」

「Ah, okay.」

I casted《Haste》that was amplified by《Deflection Spell》on everyone , Arisu and Tamaki's body is surround by red mist, and their movements speeded up because of that.

Even though it took alot of MP, but we can't waste the time now.

Next, I went beside Mia who was blown away. She was pressing on her left shoulder that was covered in blood, rolling continuously on the ground.

I carried the petite girl.

「Mia, it's me, are you still conscious?」

「Mmm……」

Mia looked at me with a pale face, her lips which has turned purple, kept trembling, and breathlessly mumbled out「Kazu-chi」.

「Ho..w is ev...ryone……」

「They are all fighting, but it will still take awhile.」

「He..lp me.. Sup..port my body… I… will.. assist……」

What foolish words are you saying—— that was what I thought.

But I recalled the reason why Shiki-san sent me to her side.

She probably wanted me to fire up Mia's spirit.

As long as I gave the order, Mia will do her best to fight.

Today, I recognised that we have built up a certain level of trust between us.

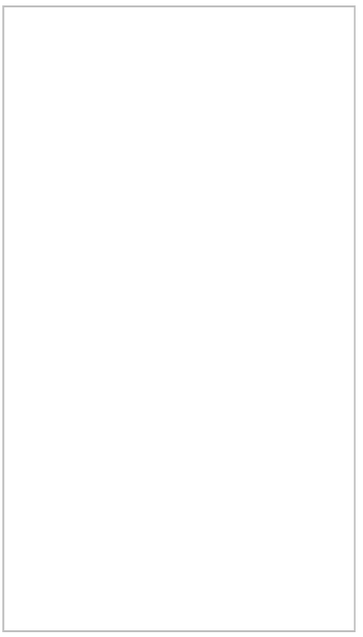
Shiki-san made use of this trust, wanting me to exhaust Mia, until she dies.

Ah, Shiki-san, you are really a remarkable schemer, good enough to cover what I was lacking.

Damn you.

Mia panted in pain and stood up under by support. Even though she is covered in blood, she still pressed her wound with her right hand, and head towards the

battlefield.



Arisu and Tamaki are locked in a deathmatch with the general orc.

No matter it is the physical, strength or endurance, the gap between them and enemy is like the difference between a child and an adult. Every time the general orc swings the silver sword, the 2 of them will be blown into the air.

They landed heavily, but still they clenched their teeth and stood up, facing the general orc again.

This sort of fighting is too reckless.

But the 2 of them can only do it like this, this is only buying for time. The 2 of them are waiting, they are waiting for Mia's magic.

「《Heat Metal》」

Mia used her trembling voice to say out the words, and opened her palm facing the general orc.

The reddish black light shoot out from Mia's palm, and hits the general orc's sword.

The general orc gave a weak groan and stopped moving. Even though it is forcing it, it is not willing to let go of the sword that it is holding on to……

「Now!」

Shiki-san shouted. Arisu and Tamaki did not miss the big chance, and attacked the general orc together.

In that instant, the general orc gave a roar.

That was a horrible shout that could freeze a person's heart.

The sound spreaded out like a shockwave, sending Arisu and Tamaki flying. Even Mia and I who were faraway, have to lower our bodies in order to endure the wind pressure.

The roar ended.

The general orc gripped the handle of the silver sword tightly again. The movement of gripping seems normal, making one question if this fellow is no longer feeling the heat.

No, actually it may not be feeling it. My instincts tells me that this is the same the time when《Silent Field》was broken.

The general orc's roar has the ability to destroy magic.

「What is with this fellow, how should we deal with this kind of opponent?」

「Shhh, Kazu-chi.」

Mia raised her head and looked at me, and whispered in a low tone in an denouncing manner.

「You cannot show your weakness.」

I was actually reprimanded by Mia who was heavily wounded, I could only feel ashamed for my carelessness. I glared at the general orc, thinking of what we can do.

The worst is, we can already see the shadows of the black giant hound behind

the general orc. That hellhound is rushing over with an alarming speed.

Ah, damn, why at such a timing!

But, a spear suddenly thrusted out towards the side of the hellhound, a girl had dashed towards the hellhound recklessly.

Even though the thrust was repelled, but the hellhound's attention is diverted to the side. The black giant hound turned to the side and faced the girl who attacked it.

The one who went out recklessly to mess with the hellhound is the ace of the track club, Nagatsuki Sakura of Middle School Year 2.

「No, you can't handle that fellow!」

I shouted out loudly.

Sakura ignored my warning, and turned her back towards the giant hound as though luring it, and the hellhound pound towards her……

Then seeing Sakura nimbly turning her body, and she jumped up.

She used her left hand to grab the branches of a nearby tree and used it to turn her body.

Her body was dancing in the sky.

Nagatsuki Sakura landed on a seemingly very sturdy branch.

What is with her? I remembered she is from the track club, but that action is like a gymnasium athlete.

She was so impressive that I was shocked.

Is this the power of the Physical Skill? Or is she already capable of this initially? When all of these ended, I really wanted to ask her this, but now we do not have that time.

「I am here, damn dog.」

Sakura challenged the hellhound.

The hellhound should not be able understand the human language, but it seems to have noticed the meaning from the actions, hence it breathed flames at the tree that Sakura was on in anger, the entire tree is covered in red flames.

But Sakura has already jumped to the tree beside. She kept scolding「stupid」, 「slow」while continuing to jump to the next tree.

The hellhound focused on chasing her.

She is good, her level is only 1, but yet she could fool around with the hellhound that even Tamaki had trouble with.

But just playing around is not enough, I kept thinking, wanting to think of a strategy to turn the tables.

「Kazu-chi」

Even though her body is still shaking, Mia still opened her mouth to say.

「Let me.」

「You said to let you, which is……」

「Even if we die together, I must also defeat that hellhound.」

If we use her magic without reserve, perhaps we can win against the hellhound.

But her wounds are not healed, to do that with her current body……

「My magic… is useless… against the general orc, so……」

So even if she collapse now, it will not be a problem.

That is true.

Although it is true but she is still badly wounded…..

Mia leaned on me tightly, and looked at me with a serious plea. I looked into her eyes, and prepared my heart.

「Understood, don't you dare faint in the middle.」

「Mmm.」

She should have lost quite alot of blood, but her conscious is still so clear, it wouldn't be surprising to call it a miracle.

No, she is already level 9. From my logic, her HP should have raised quite a bit. Even though she looks weak, actually she should be very strong.

It's fine, the Mia now should be able to do it. I kept repeating it in my heart, as though I was convincing myself.

「Sakura, listen to me!」

I shouted out loudly to Nagatsuki Sakura who was playing around with the hellhound.

I judged that that dog will not understand our language and told her the content

of the plan directly.

「Understood.」

She gave me a short reply.

Okay—— I nodded.

Then I carried Mia in a princess carry and stood up.

From now on, it is our time.

Time to fight back.

Chapter 50: Decisive Battle at the Middle School 3

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 50

Chapter 50: Decisive Battle at the Middle School 3

Saying that it's a battle, but actually the things that we need to do is very simple.

「《Smart Operation》.」

I casted the support magic for raising the power of magic attack on Mia who is in my arms. Because Mia hardly attacks with magic, hence there isn't much chance for this magic to showcase itself.

But now it is different, her magic is the main force.

Mia quickly pointed out the index finger on her right hand and aimed it at the hellhound who is chasing after Nagatsuki Sakura.

「《Lightning》」

A ray of light linked Mia's index finger and the hellhound together.

I smelled the stench.

That was a lightning strike. The hellhound stopped moving for a moment, with its body paralysed. It seems that the electric magic attack by Mia, gave it great damage.

It's effective, then once more.

「《Lightning》」

Mia continued to use magic. The hellhound took it head on and gave a groan.

Enemies are not fools, once it realised that Sakura who was jumping around is only a bait, it turned towards us.

There is about 20 metres between us.

The hellhound kick off, and dashed towards us. It accelerated in a short time, and closed the distance in an instant.

「《High Jump》」

Mia casted magic on me. As《High Jump》of Wind Magic Rank 2 says, it is a magic that increases jumping power. I got the power of the wind and jumped.

Mia and I were flying in the air.

Then we landed on the branch nearby, with a close brush with the hellhound.

「Grr…..o.」

Mia moaned in a low voice, the intense shaking had tortured her weakened body. The petite girl clenched her teeth to endure the pain.

I could only increase the strength of my arms that are carrying Mia, what I should do now is to depend on her.

Damn it—— I cursed at myself in my heart.

The hellhound stopped quickly, and glared hatefully at us who escaped above. I was initially afraid that it will jump or touch here, but it seems that I over worried.

Then that fellow stopped below us. Completely not moving.

「Mia, bind it.」

「Nn,《Earth Bound》.」

Seeing the grass near the hellhound becoming like animals, binding its 4 limbs. The hellhound kept struggling, attempting to pull its legs out from the magical vines.

「《Stone Blast》」

Just at this timing, countless stones flew down from the sky. These stones rained on the hellhound's body, and every one of them is bigger than a fist.

The hard stones smashed on the hellhound's head and body, it could not escape, nor can it protect its weakness, and could only be hitted one-sidedly.

A stone hit the eyeball on its left side.

Blue blood sprayed out, and turned into flames before scattering, lighting up the grass around it.

The hellhound gave out a groan.

The beast glared at us and took a deep breath, the sac below its throat also swell up along with it.

Very good, it took the bait. I snickered to myself.

The hellhound's breath had me half scared to death initially, but it actually has a big weakness.

Before it could spew, it must do preparatory work. A deep breath, in order for the sac at the throat to swell, just that is already very obvious.

As long as we know its preparatory moves, then we can catch the timing.

My physical is not very good, but if it is only that, even I can make it, hence I can use that move accurately.

「《Reflection》」

A rainbow shield appeared below me, and the flames spewed by the hellhound was reflected back by the reflection magic that I casted.

The demon dog was covered in the red flames that it spewed, after all the fire belongs to it, so there shouldn't be any effect…...

But that time it is completely defenseless, so of course we will not let the chance go.

「《Lightning》」

Mia used electric magic to attack the hellhound. No matter whether it hits or not, she gave another shot.

The hellhound could not endure it after taking 2 hits and it jumped off from the spot.

Ah, the binds from the grass are gone. I see…… they were burnt off by the fire.

The hellhound is already full of wounds, with one eye destroyed, its body unstable, and all the black fur on its body are burnt, and its skin is even festering, giving off charred meat smell.

Ah—— even if it is its own flames, it will also get injured? So even if it can breath fire, it does not mean that its body is immune to fire? That was lucky.

The hellhound will probably be afraid of《Reflection》, so now it will be unable to use its breath attack.

Then what the enemy can do to us who are in the tree……

As I had expected, the hellhound indeed gathered its strength, and used its body to ram the tree we were on.

A pity that its moves are completely seen through.

「《Stone Blast》」

Mia released numerous stones, and rained them viciously on the entire body of the hellhound. At the same time, the hellhound used its head to ram the tree we are on, causing the tree to shake vigorously, but I have already jumped.

The effective time of《High Jump》is increased by 1 minute for every Rank, with Mia's Rank, it should be 3 minutes which is enough.

I landed on the seemingly very sturdy branch on a nearby tree, and Mia gave out another groan in pain.

Each time I do an intensive movement, Mia's life is diminishing, but I killed my emotions and ordered Mia.

「Go.」

「Mmm,《Lightning》.」

Mia cast who know how many lightning strikes at the hellhound, and this blow finally……

The black giant hound lost strength in its 4 limbs.

The hellhound collapse on the spot and the monster's body disappeared quickly.

2 blue gems were left on the scene.

I see, there are actually 2 gems, is it because it is different from the orcs? Forget it, we can think about this later. Anyway——

「Well done.」

「Mmm.」

Then we are sent to the white room. Arisu leveled up.

◆◆◆

Once we reached the white room, Arisu rushed to our side.

She and Tamaki are covered in wounds, and their gym clothes which were enhanced with magic are all torn and tattered, and areas revealed are full of bruises or cuts.

Even so, Arisu did not care about her own injuries, only kept casting《Heal》at Mia in tears. She kept using《Heal》, continuously casting it alot of times.

「Sorry, Mia. You must be in pain. It has been tough for you.」

「Mmm, its… fine.」

Mia smiled weakly, and raised her head and looked at me.

But in such a short time, her eyes became sunken, her cheeks are thinned, and her face is paled, like the many dead people that we saw today.

「It is worth it to be hugged so tightly by Kazu-chi.」

I bit my lips tightly.

I know Mia admires me. At least, she trust in me who is the leader. Because of that, I must tell her that, must decide our direction after today.

「Wait a moment, Mia. I will raise my healing magic and use《Cure Deficit》to fix your arm back.」

「No, Arisu.」

I announced and shook my head firmly.

I stared at Arisu who was in shock.

「Your skill point is now 6, I cannot allow you to raise healing magic, you must raise Spear Skill to Rank 5.」

「Why! Then, Mia's arm……」

「Wait after the battle has ended, then we will retrieve the arm, then cast Rank 1 Healing until your next level up, then we will raise Healing Magic to Rank 4. Now we can't do it, right now what we need is your spear skill.」

I lowered my head and looked at Mia. Mia who is in my arms looked at me, and smiled warmly.

「Mm, Kazu-chi, well done.」

「Sorry, Mia.」

Mia shook her head.

「It is a calm and correct judgement.」

「I guess you know Kinnikuman Soldier lost very badly later.」(TL note: Kinnikuman manga reference)

Mia and I looked into each other's eyes and forced our laughs. We wish to make use of laughter to get rid of the unease.

「Why, Mia, how can this……」

Arisu look at me and Mia in turns while bewildered.

「All of this is for the sake of victory.」

「For victory, this is a must.」

This is how Mia and I told Arisu.

We are both very clear about it.

If we followed our feelings here, then we are all finished—— that is how we judged it.

No, Arisu should also understand it logically, just that she chose to follow her feelings.

In other words, she did not feel that she『have to do this』, but rather『want to do this』, then she acts.

That is her weakness.

Sometimes, humans will display great powers because of emotions, but that is mostly situational, in a battlefield, being moved by feelings is mostly bad.

So I have to restrain Arisu's movements, and guide her properly.

「Arisu, we are doing this to ensure everyone survives, that is why we did it. If we don't win the battle in front of us, then Mia's life will be in danger. Compare to other things, we have to ensure defeating the general orc is our priority.」

「Bu..but……」

「This is an order, Arisu, if you want to hate someone then hate me. For the sake for letting everyone survive, I can only choose the most suitable orders. Listen to me, okay?」

Arisu glared at me. She tightened her lips and looked at me, her clenched fists trembling.

Then she lowered her sight as though she gave up, and breathed out.

「I… know.」

She spoke in a whisper.

「But I have a request.」

「What?」

「Kazu-san, please hug Mia tightly now.」

What kind of request is that? I lowered my sight and looked at Mia.

Mia's complexion has improved greatly due to Arisu's《Heal》, and now she is blushing while looking at me.

「To be able to stay in Kazu-chi's arms, I am very fortunate.」

「You……」

「Since the main wife has given her permission, I am going to get cosy with you.」

Mia used her right arm to lock my neck, and after raising her body slightly, she kissed my cheek. The touch from her soft lips causing me to tremble uncontrollably.

I looked at Arisu and she gave an uneasy expression while looking me.

「Kazu-san, is Mia fine……?」

Arisu seems to be very worried about Mia.

She seems to have completely ignored the matter of me and Mia flirting around, that really makes one feel abit lonely.

「Don’t worry.」

Even though I am not sure whether Mia is fine, but I still nodded with confidence, and hugged Mia’s soft body tightly.

Mia was squeezed until she gave a「nn」sound, it sound very constraining.

「Just that we are no longer able to use magic, so you and Tamaki have to handle the rest by yourselves.」

I took turns looking at Arisu and Tamaki. Tamaki looked back at me, seemingly very uneasy.

「Can we do it with just us?」

「I will also support you two. Just that I wish for Shiki-san and the other to escape further.」

「That’s right, it is too dangerous after all.」

General orc is different from the enemies that we have met until now, although the difference in strength is one of the reason, but more importantly it is the roar attack that is troublesome.

In a game, that is an AOE attack.

If it’s Arisu and Tamaki, then they should be able to barely withstand it…… But, that is because their level has surpassed level 10. If it was Shiki-san or Sakura whose level are low, if they suffered a close range attack, they may possibly die in a blow.

「Arisu, Tamaki, next we can only gamble…….」

「Leave it to us, Kazu-san, we will leave our lives in your hands.」

Tamaki slapped her chest with a pat, and revealed a fearless smile.

「This is nothing. Just one left, one left, let’s quickly defeat it.」

After discussing the tactics, Arisu raised her spear skill to Rank 5. Then we left the white room.

Arisu: Level 11 Spear Skill 4→5／Healing Magic 3 Skill Point 6→1

Chapter 51: Decisive Battle at the Middle School 4

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 51

Chapter 51: Decisive Battle at the Middle School 4

After returning to the original place, I grabbed Mia and jumped down, then I placed her on the ground that was filled with fallen leaves. I feel that it is tough for her to even keep her eyes open.

「Leave the rest to us, you can take a nap first.」

「Hmm, Kazu-chi.」

「Yes?」

「You must win.」

「Leave it to me.」

I gently caress Mia's hair while she smiled weakly.

「And one more thing.」

「What is it」

「Kiss me one more time.」

I meekly kissed Mia's cheeks. She smiled.

「Thanks.」

Finally she turned towards the general orc and Arisu and the others who are

having an intense battle……

Used her trembling right hand and pointed.

「《Smog》」

A emerging smog covered space surrounding the general orc.

Arisu and Tamaki retreated in the smog, and ran here.

At the same time, I had the 2 wolves enter the smog to buy sometime.

Mia finally used up all her strength, and silently closed her eyes. Her pale face seems very illusional, seemingly making others feel that she may have stopped breathing.

I will not let you suffer anymore pain—— I promise that in my heart.

At least I must confirm your safety.

「《Repel Sphere》」

Mia’s body is covered by a rainbow coloured ball that a bubble.

Support Magic Rank 5《Repel Sphere》, is a barrier that can isolate something. This barrier seems soft, but it is said that even if a truck rams it, it will not have a single crack.

The barrier changed colour and blended into the surroundings.

Like a chameleon, the barrier became one with the surroundings. If you are slightly further, then probably you can’t even tell that Mia is there.

The effect of this magic is different from the light show of《Invisibility》, it is like

protective coloring. Although you can see the colors if you observe closely, but it is better than nothing.

According to Q&A, you can see the outside clearly from the inside, as though it is just isolated by a glass. So it is like a magic mirror, this function is really convenient.

Just that this barrier has its weakness, it can isolate everything in matter——even sound.

Don't even mention impact, even sound will not be able to enter it.

Since it is a closed space, then what about the air inside? I targeted this to ask in the white room, and the computer answered that air will automatically form inside. When I saw this, all I can say is hooray for magic.

The biggest problem is that the time for the barrier is set at 30 minutes, which is not too long nor is it too short. Even if you want to get out earlier, it can't be cancelled.

During the duration when the barrier is active, the wounds of the people inside will recover slowly, which is the few healing methods inside healing magic.

This magic has already invaded the territory of healing magic, no wonder the restriction is so strict.

But this weakness is not a problem in the current situation. Anyway as long as it can let Mia relax and keep her safe, then it is enough.

Mia slept in the safe barrier, I looked at her and stood up while satisfied.

Next is to defeat the general orc, and all of these will end, we will then be able to achieve complete victory in this battle at the main school building.

I raised my head.

At this timing, Arisu and Tamaki ran towards me.

Both of them are completely wounded everywhere, but thankfully they are not lethal injuries. In the route here, Arisu used《Heal》to do basic treatment for Tamaki and herself.

「The 2 of you really did your best.」

I casted《Haste》on Arisu and Tamaki. During the casting, I felt the link between me and my familiars broke.

The 2 gray wolves are dead.

Thank you—— I expressed my thanks in my heart.

The general orc rushed out from the smoke.

No problem, Mia's last magic has bought us enough time. Although it is only a few seconds, but it is very precious.

Now we should reorganise ourselves.

「Everything has developed according to strategy, let's go.」

「Yes!」

「Leave it to me, Kazu-san!」

I lightly patted their back.

Arisu and Tamaki who were surrounded by the red light of《Haste》, rushed at the general orc.

This battle tactics maybe reckless, but I could not think of other methods to win. From our current strength, this is the few victory chances that we have discovered, we have to change this to become a fact.

Now that the general orc has injuries on its left hand, the long distance attack using the rocks are now sealed. Those rocks not only killed the familiar crow, but also took away Mia's left hand. Just by not being worried about this attack, will cause one to be more relaxed.

This is a rare chance, so we will not choose to run.

Because we have this will, that is why I left Mia here.

To defeat the general orc, we can only take the chance now—— I had everyone prepared their hearts.

Just based on the determination to not retreat, Arisu and Tamaki rushed towards the general orc in a go.

If my judgement is wrong, the both of them may die—— this weakness is slowly creeping into my heart.

It will be fine—— I shook my head.

Even so, I will not regret making this decision.

Since I have set my determination, then I wouldn't turn back.

Arisu gave a thrust from outside the general orc's attack range, and it repelled the attack with the silver sword. This sweep became a gust, assaulting Arisu and Tamaki.

Arisu's black hair and Tamaki's golden hair danced in the wind.

Just as their bodies are about to be blown away by the wind……

「Tamaki, lower your waist!」

「Mmm, mmm! I understand!」

The 2 of them lower their center of gravity and tried to hang on desperately.

Just like how we discussed, then……

「Now, Tamaki!」

「Mmm!」

Tamaki charged into the attack range of the general orc without any regards to her body.

She swung down her giant axe while giving a big cry.

The general orc immediately used the silver sword to receive the giant axe……

But this moment Tamaki threw down the axe and lowered her body, grabbing the fruit knife in the bosom.

This unexpected movement, stopped the general orc's movements for a moment.

Tamaki stabbed the fruit knife into the back of the general orc's right hand.

Blue blood sprayed out from the burly orc's right hand, and while the general orc struggled in pain, the silver sword in its hand also dropped.

Very good, it is effective!

Taking the chance when the general orc cannot move his left hand freely, and sealed his right hand as well……

This is a reckless gamble that cannot be considered as a strategy, but we won the gamble.

「Now, Arisu!」

「Okay!」

Arisu immediately gave a stab and plunge the spear towards the general orc's body. Even if its the general orc, without weapons, he can't avoid this.

That was what I had thought……

But before the axe that Tamaki threw, hits the ground, the general orc kicked up the handle, and used its injured left hand to hold the giant axe.

I could only give the sound「huh?」, Arisu and their feelings should be the same as mine, probably also wanted to shout「what is going on」.

The general orc used the edge of the giant axe to block Arisu's strike, the tip of the spear clashed with axe edge, and a high shriek rang throughout the surroundings.

Arisus gave a troubled sound, and her upper body also floated up.

If it is comparing strength, it is natural for the general orc to win. With just 1 left hand, and it was under the state of the thumb being injured, it was able to give a decisive strength to its wrist to shatter Arisu's blow.

Seeing the general orc bending his back greatly…… No, that burly orc is using its lower body and took a strong step.

The general swung the giant axe with its left hand and the air gave out a groan, and violent wind assaulted Arisu and Tamaki.

「How……Damn!」

Tamaki gave up the fruit knife and turned to pick up the silver sword on the ground.

She just held the silver sword and kept rolling on ground due to the strong wind. Damn, that wind was not caused by the silver sword, but from the general orc's natural ability.

Even so, we have destroyed its right hand.

And took away his main weapon.

Comparatively, Tamaki also has her weapon snatched away, but that is still beneficial to us, it should be slightly weakened. Next is to kill it even if it takes alot of time……

At this moment, the school side started to get noisy. Shiki-san came running panically, with Mia's left hand in her arms.

「The orcs are here, there are quite a few small fries, there are at least 1 elite orc. Sakura-chan said that she will restrain them, I tried to stop her, but……」

I frowned. Stopping Nagatsuki Sakura's reckless move is correct, she did well during the face off against the hellhound, but if this continues then it will be messy.

I looked at Arisu and Tamaki who are still having an intense battle with the general orc.

At least they gave it alot of injuries, even though it is not severe, but the 2 of them got the upper hand, and the general orc does not seem to be as strong as previously.

Especially when facing again Tamaki who is holding the silver sword, it had a tough battle. Looking at it carefully, every time Tamaki swung the silver sword, it seems like some lights are dancing in the surroundings.

What is that? Is it scattering some weird powder?

No, the feeling does not seem to be that. Seeing Tamaki's attacks are…… getting faster and also sharper.

「Kazu-san! I feel super good in my current state! I feel that I can continue to fight like this!

I guess that is something like「a runner's high」, but, that can't be…...

「There are magic weapons in this world?」

Shiki-san looked at the intense battle that Arisu and the others are having with the orc, and said it softly.

I see, magic tools…… Since there are monster, skills and magic, then it isn't strange for weapons to have special effects just like RPG.

If it is that, then that weapon has the ability to heighten combat sense? Or is it the recovery of fatigue? Or is it some other effects……

Anyway, we gotten something good. If it's that, perhaps we have a method of dealing with the general orc.

「Arisu, the enemy's reinforcements are about to arrive! You should go and deal with that side! Tamaki, You and I will lure the general orc! We are going to break

away from the small fry!」

When hearing it, the 2 of them have a troubled expression……

But they nodded immediately and began moving. If it become a rumble then it will be bad—— regarding that, our thoughts are the same.

Since we have already proceed to this extent, then we can't let the general orc escape. Arisu and Shiki-san will head towards to the side where the enemy' reinforcements are coming from.

While Tamaki and I will pretend to run away, luring the general orc away from the reinforcements. Luckily the general orc did not seem to able to make tactics, so it was successfully lured away by us.

We splitted up, and began our last battle.

The sun is about to set.

Chapter 52: Decisive Battle at the Middle School 5

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 52

Chapter 52: Decisive Battle at the Middle School 5

Now it is evening.

Tamaki is moving through the forest that is dyed orange while having an intense face off with the general orc.

Tamaki held the silver sword with both hands while the general roc held the giant axe with its injured left hand, and crossed arms like this a few times.

Both parties seems to be similar in strength.

Every time they clash, they forced each other back, and sparks scattered around the battlefield.

This is possible, we can fight.

I clenched my fist, looking at their battle.

I had cast reinforcing support magic on Tamaki, even through《Haste》is used, then she could barely match up against the general orc.

And this happened just before《Haste》lost its effect, at that time Tamaki suddenly gave of an「ah」sound.

「Level up……」

I understand her meaning immediately. Then we are sent to the white room.

Arisu and Mia were waiting for us in the white room.

Mia was temporarily released from《Repel Sphere》. Although it's support magic, even such restraining magic will also lose its effect in the white room?

Mia fell onto the ground with a do, and her breathing was very rush, Arisu quickly casted《Heal》.

Mia's complexion turned rosy in an instant

Perhaps it was due to《Repel Sphere》having some recovery effect, Mia's state seems to be better than when we just left.

「Arisu-chi, thanks.」

「Mia, thank goodness you are fine, I can finally relax.」

Okay, with this Mia's skill point should be 4.

Should she raise wind magic or keep it to raise earth magic?

No, before that, I had better confirm it.

「Arisu, how many orcs did you defeat?」

「Mmm, 2 elites, 2 normal. The sequence is normal, elite, elite, normal.」

Argh, she actually defeated 2 elite orcs in such a short time!

Re..really incredible.

Seeing me with a shocked expression, Arisu was panicking.

「They are not defeated by my own power only, Shiki-san and Sakura also

helped…… It was Sakura who smartly attracted the elite orcs' attentions so I can kill them easily.」

Wow, before that when facing the hellhound she was also like this, this girl Nagatsuki Sakura is only level 1 and she dared to lure the elite orcs, that is quite reckless of her.

Seems like she is hurrying to her death.

No, maybe because her hatred towards the orcs are so deep so she could only do so.

So scary, I felt that someday she might do some suicidal action. Hopefully Shiki-san could help her before she becomes like that……

「But Sakura suffered serious injuries due to this, so I wish to heal her before finishing off the orcs…… Can I?」

「Ah, mmm, help her recover.」

In other words, she would not be able to come and assist Tamaki and me.

But no matter what, we are already quite far away from Arisu.

I remember the Q&A mentioned before, even if we formed a party, once the distance between each other gets too far, we will be unable to share the experience. I had also thought before that this situation may perhaps fulfil the criteria.

We can no longer hope for the support of Arisu and the others.

Even so, the general orc now is about the same as Tamaki. Luckily Arisu defeated all of the reinforcement of the general orc.

I guess it is my responsibility to turn this situation into our victory.

I also roughly knew how much exp is the hellhound, it is about 12 orcs.

Then hellhound should be level 12.

If from simple calculation, then it is Demon Dog Rank 6……. Even so, there should be some skill point left over.

I don't feel that the hellhound is that good at close range combat.

Excluding flame breath, Arisu with Spear Skill Rank 4 is able to keep up with the hellhound. As for Tamaki who has Sword Skill Rank 5, she because of being afraid of the breath, and the situation is not stable, so I can't judge it.

Hmm—— perhaps there are many ways of calculating.

Perhaps I should not think that the enemies have a similar skill system as us.

Leaving this question aside, anyway we no longer have any other worries.

Next……

「Leave it to me, Arisu! I will obtain victory.」

Tamaki raised her fist in spirit and turn towards me.

「Kazu-san, just watch me, this time I will make myself useful.」

Is that so…… Tamaki.

You still felt that if you are useless, you will be abandoned by me?

N, this is already a similar instinctive idea. I remembered the conversation I had

with Shiki-san during the daytime when I was resting.

Shiba is the wound that is deeply carved into my heart.

For Shiki-san it is the fear of men.

Similarly, in Tamaki's heart, there is something inside.

Just like me and Shiki-san, Tamaki must face this. After that, for the sake of all of us surviving, she must also make peace with that.

As the responsibility of us being her comrade, we must at least help her through this.

「Don't worry, I won't abandon you.」

I said so, and lightly caressed Tamaki's golden hair.

Tamaki smiled, as though she was itchy.

After Mia said it, she run over, and stuck out her head with a「mm」.

「Oi.」

「I also worked very hard, give me some encouragement.」

「How many encouragement do you want……」

Even though I said it, I still roughly caressed Mia's hair.

「I felt that my treatment is different from Tamaki's」

「That is your illusion.」

「So after using finish, then throw it away after it has no more value?」

「Don't said it until it is so nasty.」

I glanced at Arisu, seeing her standing slightly further away, looking at me with a lonely expression. I reached out to call Arisu over, and caressed her head after Mia.

Arisu closed her eyes, seemingly feeling very comfortable. In this time, my other hand has always been on Tamaki's head.

Now I have to concentrate on the mental condition of Tamaki.

I glanced at Mia, and she also nodded in agreement.

I always felt that Mia is the person who understood the situation the most. Mmm—— how should I say it, it just makes me feel relaxed. Indeed it is relaxing.

「Sorry, Kazu-san」

Tamaki said in a soft voice.

「I am troubling Kazu-san.」

There is no such thing—— saying out such words are simple, but to her, this is not considered as a consolation.

I understood clearly, the me who have talked with Shiki-san about our pain, should also be able to understand her pain.

Even though this thought keeps running through my mind, I am still unable to say it to her……

But, maybe I can show it with my behaviour.

而我可以為了她而出手幫忙。為達這個目的，目前最好的辦法便是信任她，將一切都交給她。所以，我們必須贏過眼前的戰斗。
I could help her for her sake. For this aim, the best method is to trust her, and leave it all up to her.

「Y..yes, Kazu-san, now what skills should I used my skill points on——」

「Didn't we discuss it before?」

The skill points that Tamaki has yet to use is 4, if she used it on one skill, then she can raise a Rank 0 skill to Rank 2.

Even if she don't do it, I feel that just by raising Physical to 2, it can also make her battle with the general orc much safer.

But we have already discussed before, and would not do so. I believe in Tamaki's current strength, and Tamaki also believes in my ability.

「It is fine not raising any skills.」

So I announced again.

「If it is you, you can definitely win, so we will save the skill points first. You do not need to care about a mere general orc, and raise your Sword Skill to Rank 6 as priority.」

In actuality, the general orc is not that weak until we can describe it with 「mere」. Even now, fighting against it, is actually quite forced.

Even so, I desperately endured it.

For Tamaki.

For the sake of all our future.

We must win this battle with our current strength.

「Kazu-san…..」

「It’s okay, I know you are strong.」

Hence, I nodded full of confidence. No matter how uneasy my inner heart is, I still smiled as though there is no such thing.

After that we discussed Mia’s skills, and decided to let her prioritise raising Earth Magic to Rank 5.

After the combat with hellhound, we had once again realised the importance of long distance magic attacks.

Rank 5 Earth Magic《Rockfall》, is a magic that can make a big rock drop from the sky, actually it can be considered as a strengthened version of Rank 4 Magic《Stone Blast》. No matter how strong the hellhound is, as long as we squash it biologically, it will be fine.

「Raise Skill Rank, then attack based on logic.」

Mia who has only 1 hand left, give a smirked expression. Forget it, she is mostly correct, just that firepower is more important.

Then we made the promise of meeting again. We swore to definitely win this battle and gather back together.

「Just wait, Arisu, Mia, I will definitely return with Kazu-san.」

Tamaki regained her spirit and clenched her fist in front of her chest tightly with a「hmph」sound. The twin-tails, as though they are alive, kept shaking with her movements.

We left the white room, and returned to where the general orc was waiting.

Tamaki: Level 10　Sword Skill 5／Physical 1　Skill Point 4
Mia: Level 10　Earth Magic 4／Wind Magic 3　Skill Point 4

◆◆◆

Then, we began the final battle that is horrifying enough to kill someone.

After we returned to the forest from the white room, Tamaki gave a sharp cry and swung the silver sword.

An intense blow, enough to force the general orc back. Very good…… now.

「Return, Tamaki.」

「Mmm, Kazu-san!」

Tamaki took the opening when the general orc retreated, and sped to my side while I began casting magic.

「《Extend Spell》」

Rank 5 Support Magic《Extend Spell》, can increase the effective time for the next magic casted. I touched Tamaki's shoulder.

「《Haste》」

Although《Haste》has yet to lose its effect, I still replenish it fast. As the effective time is doubled, Tamaki maintain the intensive attacks. At least she wouldn't fail due to《Haste》losing its effect.

The general orc got closer.

!

Tamaki gave a strong attack then moved around, searching for the best spot. Argh, oi ~ your position is not good!

「Tamaki, that side is the cliff!」

「Huh?」

Tamaki shouted in surprise. The next second, the general orc gave a strong blow. Argh, that kind of strength again?

At the edge of the cliff, Tamaki fumbled. Ah, really, why did her clumsiness happens at such a time!

I rushed to the battlefield……

「Tamaki!」

I reached out to try and support her who lost her balance.

At this time, the general orc swung down the giant axe at me.

Hoho, I have already seen through this attack! If such a simple fellow rushes in, then I will not let the chance go!

So I cast this magic.

「《Reflection》」

In the end, my action became a bait to lure the enemy's attack. Even the timing of the attack, I also knew it clearly, hence it was easy to set a trap.

The barrier appeared before me and reflected the blow from the giant axe. The general orc stopped and its back bent even more than Tamaki……

The position between us has swapped, the general orc rolled down the cliff just like that.

Thought I said it was a cliff, it is actually just a slightly steep slope only. If it worked hard, it should be able to climb up. Moreover it is that extremely stubborn general orc, it will not die. Hence ——

「Tamaki, let's go.」

「Mmm!」

We jumped down the cliff without hesitation.

And slided down the slope.

We are going to follow up and attack and end the general orc here, there isn't any scrap of doubt in our intent.

As I expected, the general orc used its leg to hook on a tree on the slope and stopped sliding.

Tamaki and I slided over.

The general orc who was kneeling on a knee turned over here……

It's expression has twisted due to surprise.

「Kazu-san, this is very dangerous……」

「No, just maintain it like this.」

I held hands with Tamaki and rush down the slope. I stood at the front pulling her, giving her encouragement.

「Don’t need to worry about me, you must finish it with a blow.」

「But——」

「Hurry.」

The general orc lifted the giant axe in an imperfect posture. Is it coming?

Even so, this time I can’t see the accurate timing.

If we include the time when the general orc fell into the hole, I have already let it see《Reflection》twice, no matter what it will be vigilant towards it. And I do not have a pair of eyes that can see through an opponent’s slash.

If this carries on, I will be chopped into 2.

Perhaps, even Tamaki who was behind me will be chopped into halves as well.

But that is if I do not do anything.

After I placed Tamaki behind, I entered the last safe zone nearest to the general orc and then……

「《Repel Sphere》」

I casted a barrier on myself.

The surrounding sound disappeared.

The general orc swung the giant axe down diagonally.

From the trajectory of the axe, that blow is enough to cut Tamaki and me together, and we who were moving at that speed would not be able to avoid it.

But that perfect cut was repelled by the barrier.

The giant frame shook.

And its now, go!

My voice cannot be send out, and I am not sure if she saw my hand sign.

But Tamaki made a move.

She jumped out from my back and lunged towards the general orc.

She swung the silver sword over.

This blow cut off the enemy’s head.

The head of the general orc separated from its body, and danced in the air.

Then that head kept rolling down the slope.

The body fall on the spot.

And gradually disappeared.

Leaving 4 blue gems.

Next, a sound rang in my mind.

I leveled up.

Chapter 53: Tamaki, the Faithful dog

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 53

Chapter 53: Tamaki, the Faithful dog

Once we reach the white room, Tamaki hugged me. Her hands were locked around my neck and her body was stuck tightly on mine.

「I did it, I won! I won! Kazu-san, thank you! I did it right. I did not betray Kazu-san's expectations.」

「Mmm, mmm, well done, Tamaki has done it well……」

If Arisu saw this—— once I thought of it, I survey the white room immediately……

Arisu is not around, and I don't see Mia as well. Right—— I suddenly remembered one thing.

When the party members are too far away, then they will not be able to share the experience, this situation probably satisfied that condition.

When Tamaki and I were battling with the general orc, we pulled quite far from the others.

「Huh, funny? Everyone is not around.」

Tamaki who just realised this, looked left and right and I explained it to her.

Tamaki opened her eyes wide and after her surprise, she gave a naughty smile.

「Then, I can now date with Kazu-san without any limits.」

「Oi.」

Tamaki hugged me tightly innocently. Your breasts are touching, they are touching. But they are not as big as Arisu's.

「Eh—— Kazu-san, can I whine to you?」

Tamaki's cheeks are grinding on me. It kind of feels like playing around with a cat, not like facing a lover. Actually, perhaps it is so. Tamaki wants the existence of a pillar of support, while I happened to play that role.

I remember what Arisu had said in the afternoon, Tamaki's craziness and what happened later. Have Arisu even thought of the possibility of us being alone together?

In case, if Tamaki's mentality went out of control——

If something happens, please hug Tamaki, don't be concerned about me. No matter what you must live on together.

The meaning of Arisu's words, perhaps did they also have this meaning? Or is it that I am thinking too much?

Ah, forget it. The 2 of us sit side by side with our backs against the walls of the white room.

There is a period of time where we just chatted, and kept on it for very long.

I felt that there were endless topics like about Arisu, Tamaki and their classmates.

And the girl we just saved—— Sumire. Her full name is Suginomiya Sumire, with a gentle nature and likes reading.

「If she likes reading, then she should be good friends with Arisu?」

「Mmm, they often chat in the library. And Isa-chan and Tsukimi-chan……」

Tamaki's expression turned dark and she stopped halfway.

「The 2 of them……」

「Tsukimi-chan was at the girl's dormitory, Isa-chan was in the level 1 classroom just now.」

I see—— I nodded. Mentioning them in the conversation, does not mean that they are still alive. And if their friends are among the survivors, then Arisu and Tamaki will be more happy.

At the girls' dormitory, Arisu is only focused on helping the survivors, and no longer cared about those who died.

Among those, so there is a girl called Isa.

Arisu has healing magic, and she could use this power to save others. She must have firmed her will, and if she has the time to cry while looking at her friends' corpses, then she should have used that time to help the survivors.

That is a very sad will, and I have actually helped fueled it.

But I do not regret it.

Since Arisu is willing to support me, then I will also support her in return. No, not only Arisu, even if it's Tamaki or Mia, I will do the same.

We are one.

It is because we worked together, support each other, that's why we can defeat the general orc. So this is everyone's victory.

But it is enough for me to know this. Now, I hope that Tamaki can remain happy, confidence is what she need the most now.

I caressed Tamaki's golden hair and she smiled shyly.

「Even if it is only now, it is fine.」

Tamaki leaned her head on my shoulder.

「Just for now, let me lean for a while. When Arisu is around, it is okay for her to be prioritised. But once in awhile, share with me too.」

I continue to caress Tamaki's head.

Kazuhisa: Level 12 Support Magic 6/ Summon Magic 3 Skill Points 3

◆ ◆ ◆

We returned to the original place.

In the next 30min, I was stuck in the barrier of《Repel Sphere》. We had discussed in the white room and decided that Tamaki should return first.

Tamaki quickly picked up the 4 gems that were about to fall down the cliff.

After that, she climbed the slope. After reaching the top, she looked in my direction……

Then she tilted her head in confusion.

Ah, of course, when you are that faraway, you can't see me anymore.

The camouflage ability of the barrier is very strong. But Tamaki seemed to have remembered and waved her hand casually then dash off.

The figure of the golden haired girl disappeared from my sight. Really—— I leaned on the wall of the barrier, breathed out relaxly. I did want Tamaki to return after 30 min, but……

Will she be able to return? After Tamaki is quite blur, will she get lost?

Forget it, even if we are faced with that situation, as long as I summon a few familiars, then I can guarantee my own safety, then just walk back. I relaxed my shoulders and continued waiting.

From the sunrise until now, I finally have the time to rest. Today I seemed to have been battling since morning. The truth is, I did have a short nap and also done many other stuff, but I felt that I have been consistently on the battlefield.

So tired, I am really tired from the bottom of my heart, if I don't concentrate, I will zone out.

My eyelids are about to shut……

On the cliff that was dyed red by the night, a human shadow appeared.

I got a shock, because that was a guy.

That youth has slit-like eyes like a cat, a figure that was tall and yet humpbacked, his nose that was high, coupled with a evil-intent smile, that completes a completely unique look.

It's Saso Shiba.

I can't be wrong, that is the guy who once bullied me. Shiba surveyed the

surroundings with a happy expression, and lightly shrugged his shoulders.

I know he hasn't realised my existence.

But my body keep sweating.

My teenth can't stop chattering, giving off an annoying sound, and my heart is beating like an alarm clock.

Ah, so I am actually so afraid of him? So I feared the person that I wanted to kill this much?

The scenes in the past flashed one by one before me.

During Judo class, Shiba suddenly attacked me, then pulled me to the ground, with his entire body pressing on me. I gave out a cry like a frog being squashed, everyone was laughing, even the PE teacher is also laughing.

When I want to retaliate, Shiba's loyal lackeys stepped on my hand. It is too ridiculous—— Shiba used that as an excuse, and continued bullying me.

When it was my turn to clean the classroom, both my hands and legs are tied behind, and I was on the ground like a caterpillar. He wanted me to clean the classroom like that. I bit the cloth in my mouth and clean the floor and the walls. When my performance isn't good, he will kick and beat me up, and the surrounding students are all laughing. Shiki-san just took a glance and walked out of the classroom without any expression.

Shiba used the wet cloth to throw at me, and then everyone began to step on my body.

After school, I will be on my fours at the corridors, completely naked. Shiba will ride on me, and make me walk like a horse in front of all the students and teachers. When I stop, Shiba will hit my butt. He will pull my hair and laugh at me

to cry out like a horse, and I will follow his instructions. The younger female teachers will only smile at my state. I will be wounded on my 4 limbs and even bleed. But yet he will get angry at me for dirtying the floor like that, and kick me with his feet, causing bruises all over my body.

The past experience kept on surging without an end. Even if I tried to stop thinking, it won't stop. I gave out a groan.

Is this a type of PSTD? I rolled in the sphere, while thinking about my condition.

Haha, what, I don't even have the right to laugh at Tamaki, and my wounds are not something serious.

Luckily I am within the《Repel Sphere》. In Shiba's hands, he has the hunting rifle, and now I don't even have my summoned familiars, I can't fight against him.

That's right, I can't win, if it is just me, I can't win against him. So please, don't let him find me.

Then…… I stopped rolling.

Shiba suddenly turned around. What is going on? Is somebody there?

Another shadow appeared and stood beside Shiba.

That person seems to have not noticed me too.

But the instant I saw that person, my breathing stopped.

It's Arisu, the person standing beside Shiba is Shimozono Arisu.

Arisu looked at Shiba and seemed to have said something softly. The distance between the 2 of them is about 5 steps.

Arisu readied for battle for an instant then Shiba spoke to her.

Arisu put down her spear, and Shiba also put his hunting rifle on the ground.

Arisu shook her head with a troubled expression, while Shiba got closer to Arisu slowly.

Arisu stood there in shock. Shiba, he…… ah, Shiba——

He hugged Arisu tightly.

Arisu relaxed her body, the 2 of them quietly maintained this posture for a while, having some secretive conversation.

The sun has already set, and I can't see their expression. No sound can enter《Repel Sphere》, hence I also can't hear their voices. But they can communicate with each other.

Then Shiba raised Arisu's hand.

Arisu lowered her head like tamed and did not resist. Shiba picked up the hunting rifle and left, pulling Arisu's hand.

Their shadows disappeared in the other side of the forest.

◆◆◆

The surroundings are covered in darkness while I was stuck on the same spot.

Not even moving an inch.

Even if I want to move, I can't.

《Repel Sphere》is released.

My body rolled down the slope, and I was not obstructed by any branches, and kept on rolling.

My body is powerless and my brain is not working.

My body finally reached a flat area, and I fell into the grass patches.

I stood up. My mind is groggy like it was surrounded by fog and I can neither to think properly nor organise my emotions. I looked at my fingers on my left hand, and the red ring representing my party has already disappeared.

Now I do not have any companions, just alone.

So troublesome, what should I do, how should I do it?

Yes, protect myself.

I cast《Summon Gray Wolf》4 times and the 4 gray wolves lined up before me. For support magic I should just cast《Keen Weapon》, then add《Haste》if needed.

Then, argh…… where should I go? I looked at the cliff that I fell from.

So dark, I can't see properly, I don't even know where the Cultivating Centre is.

Argh, forget it.

Enough, I don't want to go back, and I don't want to consider any other thing.

I walked in the direction down the hill with an unsteady gait. The road is dark, and I tripped over a root, and fell. Ah, it cannot continue.

「《Night Sight》」

I cast night sight magic of Rank 5 support magic on myself, and my sight became as bright as the time during evening.

I walking through the grassland unsteadily, and discovered a group of orcs in midst. Seeing 3 orcs scattered around something like stone pillar, staring around absent-mindedly.

What is this? Ah, who cares.

Just kill.

I cast《Deflection Spell》on myself then used《Haste》. Because the effect became《Haste》for everyone, all of the wolves and myself glow red. I had the wolves do sudden attacks on the orc group.

When the orcs noticed, my wolves have already suppressed them individually, and bit down on the aimed necks. Before long, the orcs died after they had their windpipes torn apart.

So, this stone pillar…… what is it?

Mmm, who cares. To the next place, the next place.

After walking a distance, the stone pillar appeared again. There are 3 orcs too, and I killed them too.

The next stone pillar had 4 orcs, one of them wasn't killed in time, and dashed at me, and swung its axe down.

「《Reflection》」

I lure it to the limits, then reflected its attack. Because I have been quietly observing the axe's movements, so I did it abit more leisurely. Mmm, actually if I

was chopped, it is also fine.

That's right, it is fine even if I die. No matter if it is others, me or everything, anything is fine.

After the axe that was reflected due to《Reflection》cut the orc face, it fell and I leveled up. I was sent to the white room.

◆◆◆

I stood only in the white room dumbly.

I stood in front of the computer.

Next, what should I do? What can I do?

There are 5 points in my skill points, support magic or summon magic, which should I choose?

My mind is foggy, I wasted a few hours in front of the computer. Ah, so troublesome.

I made my choice.

Kazuhisa: Level 13 Support Magic 5 / Summon Magic 3→4 Skill Points 5→1

◆◆◆

I returned to the original place—— before the stone pillar. Ah then again, just now I did not pick up the gems.

I should pick them up now.

Mmm, better forget it, it is too troublesome.

「《Summon Soldier》」

Rank 4 Summon Magic《Summon Soldier》, allows a swordsman dressed in black armour to appear. This familiar has a knight feeling, and it seems strong.

I casted《Keen Weapon》and《Physical Up》on the black knight.

I widened my strides. The black knight was obviously wearing very heavy armaments, but yet he could moving at my speed and almost did not give out any sound.

And I did not give it《Physical Up》.

If that is so, if there is a need to escape then we can't escape.

Hmm, who cares, so annoying.

These stone pillars to be positioned radially around that entire mountain.

I continued forward in the grassland, then I continued to find stone pillars. There are always a few orcs at every stone pillar.

I killed everyone of them.

Occasionally the familiars will be retaliated, and hence my wolves disappeared.

Every time I met this situation, I will summon a black knight. Just how many orcs have I killed? And how many stone pillars have I passed? My mind is very confused, although I am very tired but I just can't stop moving.

When I rose to level 14, the familiars by my side became 2 black knights, 3 wolves.

When it is level 15, it is 3 black knights and 2 wolves.

Ah, with this I can raise my summon magic.

Let’s raise summon magic. This is good, from now on, I will just raise summon magic.

Kazuhisa: Level 15 Support Magic 5 / Summon Magic 4→5 Skill Points 5→0

◆◆◆

When summon magic reach Rank 5, I got a magic called《Depotation》. This is a return magic, it recovers 90% of the MP that the summoned familiar uses.

I used《Depotation》to return the 2 surviving wolves. Casting《Depotation》also needs MP, so in reality, each time I used it, I can only recover around 3 MP. Hmm, that is enough.

With this as an exchange, I called out a Rank 5 creature.

「《Summon Elemental: Wind》」

A half transparent naked girl appeared, she is the Wind Elemental.《Summon Elemental》is a magic that can summon out elementals of the 4 attributes.

After all calling out the Fire Elemental in the forest is quite dangerous.

Calling out the Water Elemental on ground is quite uneffective too.

Although Earth Elemental is not bad, if I want a reliable vanguard, I already have the black knights, they are really useful.

Hence, I called out the Wind Elemental.

Ah, but——

Seeing that big breasts on the naked girl.

I began to have a headache, this caused me to remember something irritating.

I used《Depotation》to remove the Wind Elemental.

To replace her, I called out the Earth Elemental. A giant made out of rock is born like this.

Mmm, this fellow should do it. This fellow is better.

I had the Earth Elemental walk in front, towards the next stone pillar.

Huh. why should I follow the stone pillars?

Argh, forget it.

My head feels painful, and my legs are not listening to me.

I nearly fell, and could only stabilize myself by forcing it.

Suddenly I raised my head, then I realised I am surrounded by enemies.

Ah, this is natural. No matter how stupid the orcs are, after repeating so many attacks, they will eventually discover it, moreover I did not hide the sounds of the battles.

And I wanted to fight back naturally, I ordered the familiars to kick away the surrounding enemies.

Not caring how much MP I had left, I called out another 2 Earth Elementals.

The black knights used their elegant sword skills to cut down the orcs, the Earth Elementals used their rough hands made of rocks to sweep the orcs away.

Then one of the black knight fell. Looking at it carefully, the elite orc is approaching me from there.

Shit.

Mmm, who cares.

Dying here is fine.

Kill me. Facing the elite orc that is shortening the distance, I raised my hand in a relaxed manner.

「Hello, thank you.」

I smiled, smiling at the giant axe that was swung down at me. I had a calm feeling, receiving the evil weapon that is about to split my head open.

But…...

「Kazu-san!」

It's Tamaki's voice. The high shriek of the iron clashing echoed in our ears and the giant axe of the elite orc is repelled up into the sky.

Tamaki brushed past me, with the silver sword in her right hand, and a torchlight on her left.

Tamaki used the torch to shine at the elite orc. The strong light shone on its face, causing some fear to appear on the bronze coloured orc.

Tamaki took the chance to shorten the distance between her and the elite orc, a

trail of white light flashed before me.

The elite orc after it has its chest cut opened deeply, fell to the ground.

Then I was sent to the white room.

What is going on? I didn’t hear the music from the level up. Ah the red ring returned to my left hand.

I see, hmm, Tamaki leveled up. I raised my head.

Chapter 54: The Past, Now and Tamaki

BIFMSMTK Volume 2 Chapter 54

Chapter 54: The Past, Now and Tamaki

In the white room, there is only Tamaki and me.

「Kazu-san! I finally found you!」

Tamaki who was breathing hurriedly lunged onto my chest, like a little puppy and rubbed her cheeks against mine. Why is she here? Why I……

Ah, it’s already fine.

Damn annoying. I pushed her away coldly.

「Kazu……san?」

Tamaki stared at me with her eyes wide-opened. She seemed shocked, and was abit afraid.

She probed at me jittery.

「Kazu-san, what happened? Why didn’t you wait for me? I searched for you for so long, and Arisu is gone too…… Ah yes, isn’t Arisu with you?」

Arisu?

Ah, Arisu? Arisu, she……

Those images assaulted me again.

Arisu who was hugged tightly by that guy.

Arisu who left with that guy.

I groaned and kneeled down, hugging my head and trembling.

Tamaki panickedly ran to my side.

「Kazu-san, oi, Kazu-san, what happened to you?」

Tamaki shook my shoulder. I raised my head, and saw her looking at me worriedly. Even though I gave her such an ugly sight, she is still worried about me.

「I……」

Tamaki frowned, as though she had firmed her will.

「Although I don't know what happened, but Kazu-san, I know the pain that you are having now. I can understand.」

「What do you know about it!」

Something flew past in my mind.

My mind turned blank, and a painful and bitter black square like object and an rush like a lava surrounded me.

When I came to, I have already pressed Tamaki onto the ground. I assaulted Tamaki in a rushed breath, but ……

But Tamaki did not resist.

She has Rank 1 Physical Skill, so as long as she has the will to resist, she should be

able to push me away, but she did not do so.

She is obviously trembling, but yet she did not escape and her eyes kept looking straight at me.

「It is okay, Kazu-san, if someone like me can be of help to you——」

As though she is trying to comfort me, she smiled gently, and bought her face closer.

Our lips overlapped.

It is different from the passionate Arisu, this kiss is about restrained, but Tamaki's struggle has be transmitted to me. Tamaki's warmth is surrounding me.

「Wh…… why…… do you…… know?」

「I know. Although I do not know the reason why Kazu-san is feeling so painful, but that pain, I am able to understand it. I also know, that we cannot let Kazu-san of now to be alone.」

So—— Tamaki followed up.

「This time it is my turn to help Kazu-san.」

Tamaki guided me with a smile.

◆◆◆

When it ended, Tamaki brought my face to her chest.
She hugged me like this who is groaning and crying.

「Kazu-san, thanks to Kazu-san, I have been very fortunate the whole day. This is probably the happiest

day of my entire life. So, this is just a bit of me repaying
you.」

Tamaki said so and gently caressed my head.

「Ah, Kazu-san, tell me, what happened?」

I hesitated. After hearing my confession, what will she think? Knowing that pathetic me, she will……

「It will be fine, I have already decided, no matter what happens, I will always stay on Kazu-san's side. Anything that Kazu-san feels troubled about, anything that Kazu-san hates, I will accept it, I want to accept it.」

I timidly raised my head, while Tamaki smiled warmly at me.

「And think about it, Kazu-san. Me from this morning, is also quite pathetic.」

I could not help but give a bitter smile. That is true, she was not only so scared that she can't move, and she even peed in her pants, Tamaki from back then was really pathetic.

But that was because the situation was bad, and then her mental wounds reopened, it was the influence of a series of unfortunate events……

It was different from me. The wounds that I hid, were far more embarrassing.

「Kazu-san, Arisu has asked me before.」

「Arisu……?」

「Arisu said if she died, then Kazu-san will definitely be sad, perhaps even go crazy.」

Arisu she…… said something like that?

「What she asked me, was not after she died, but before she died. She said if that really happened then it will be too late, for Kazu-san to not kill me, I must dedicate myself to Kazu-san.」

「Why?」

I really do not understand the meaning in her words, so I asked, but Tamaki had a face full of doubts.

「Because if Arisu betrayed you, then Kazu-san will definitely kill me as a hostage. So if Arisu died…… hmmm.」

I replied with a「huh」, and Tamaki also tilted her head in confusion.

「Didn't we said this in the morning?」

「Wait a moment.」

The interaction this morning, is there such a thing?

…… seems like it.

No, even if there is, that is also only a joke……

Wait what if Arisu took those words to be real? So that is why Arisu said that to Tamaki……

Now as I think about it, the reason why Arisu requested me to hug Tamaki……

「Those harmless words from me, don't perhaps drove you girls up the wall?」

「Ah——maybe.」

Tamaki laughed.

「But hugging with Kazu-san like this, I surprisingly could accept it.」

「You…… that——」

「Ah, I also said it just now, I only wanted to be Arisu's substitute, I am satisfied with that. I will leave Kazu-san's heart to Arisu, I also hope that you will do so. So, Kazu-san——」

Tamaki said so, then she kept her smile and stared at me seriously.

「Tell me, I will accept everything. What happened? What is the pain that Kazu-san holds?」

I hesitated abit…… Then I began to describe the me from before yesterday.

I began with why I knew how to dig holes; the me in the high school section, what am I; then about the person Shiba, what kind of thoughts that I have.

Other than that, I also told her what I saw just now. Shiba hugging Arisu and bringing her away. I talked about that memory that was like a nightmare.

Tamaki will occasionally reply with a few words but most of the time she is just quietly listening. When I finished everything, she brought my head to her chest.

My face is buried in the 2 peaks that are full of life. That place is very warm and I can even hear Tamaki's heartbeat. Feeling that warmth and movement, my mood gradually became calm.

When I began to have problems breathing, Tamaki let go of my head. She looked at my face and gave a sarcastic smile.

「Now, I really felt like killing everyone in the high school section.」

Her reaction is like Arisu, no wonder they are best buddies. I gave a bitter smile.

「Listen well, Kazu-san. Compared to everyone in the high school section, Kazu-san is more important to me, Arisu and Mia must have thought so too. Hence, I have a few things that I want to talk to you about.」

「A few things?」

「Someone stole Mia's hand from Shiki-san, I don't know who the party is. The left hand that was stolen has magic casted on it….. It should be called《Stasis》right? After casting it, that hand is in Shiki-san's care…… Shiki-san did not tell me who stole it, but Sakura-chan seems to have heard gunshots.」

Gunshot sounds—— I suddenly realised it. When the familiar crow went to investigate, Shiba that guy has a hunting rifle. Was Shiki-san threatened by Shiba? And Mia's left hand was even stolen?

Argh, wait a moment. Shiba that guy took Mia's hand, what is his aim?

「Kazu-san, you knew that Arisu was adopted just like me.」

「Mmm.」

「I have heard before that the relative of the foster parents who took in Arisu, is the management's of this school, so that is why Arisu was sent here.」

「The relative is…… of the management's?」

「Then, Arisu's relative's son is also studying in this school…… Arisu has always been in the care of that person since a long time ago.」

「That guy's name is?」

Tamaki shook her head. Indeed, no matter how much they know each other, one will not probe until they even knew the name, I sighed.

「But, Shiba that fellow……」

Will that guy treat someone kindly?

Hmm, probably will. After all that guy always treats the people he likes well, then completely rejects those he doesn't like.

That guy hates me, but those who are near him, mostly have accepted some grace from him.

For the sake of strengthening his authority, that guy has been recruiting companions.

So sly.

He tactfully increased his companions and strengthened the power on his hand.

Because of that, when everyone realised it, even the teachers cannot resist against him.

If that guy likes Arisu…… The 2 of them are relatives, and she is younger than him by a year. If he felt that Arisu may have a use in the next year and got along with her……

I see, then to Arisu, perhaps Shiba has been a good relative. Arisu also heard about my past yesterday, and when I mentioned Shiba……

Damn.

Tamaki suddenly gave a groan.

Looking at it carefully, I had grabbed Tamaki's arm tightly. And from who knows when, my nails has been digging into Tamaki's soft flesh. The skin on her shoulder are torn and even bleeding.

「So..sorry, Tamaki.」

「It is fine, this pain when compared to the pain in Kazu-san's heart, it is nothing.」

Tamaki said so and smiled bravely.

「After all when we leave here, the wounds will also heal.」

That….. Is right. But how should I say this…… I felt that I am too wretched. I grabbed my head, vexed.

「Hey, Kazu-san.」

Even after peeking into the dark parts in my heart, Tamaki still smiled happily. She hugged my tightly, and kept caressing my back, like saying「it is fine」to me, and said in a warm tone:

「Go and confirm Arisu's feelings. Because you are unsure, that is why you are lost. I will also go along. The feelings that Arisu had when she left with the person called Shiba, and what Arisu wanted to do, let's go and confirm that first, then think about it.」

「Tamaki…… you——」

「If Arisu's heart changed, then we will beat her up, and bring her back, if it is true love, then we must snatch it!」

Ah, I see.

Indeed….. That is absolutely correct. What am I lost about?

「Kazu-san, tell me. Do you still like Arisu?」

「Hmmm, I like her, I love her, she is the person I love the most.」

「That's great, if you did not say so, I will feel a bit hurt.」

Even when told that she is not the most important, Tamaki still had a smile, seemingly did not feel any pain.

Because my body is hugged by her tightly, so I can feel that her body has become stiffer. That is the pain felt by her heart. But I pretended to have not noticed it.

「Kazu-san, let's go to the high school section.」

Tamaki followed up.

「Let's sneak into the high school section now, and confirm what is the truth.」

After finishing, she showed me a brilliant smile.

Tamaki: Level 12　Sword Skill 6／Physical 1　Skill Point 2

「Yes, Tamaki, when did you raise your Sword Skill to Rank 6……?」

「After separating with Kazu-san, I battled a bit and then I level up immediately. For the sake of coming here, I spent quite a bit of effort.」

I thanked Tamaki again, and caressed her golden hair gently, and she gave a warm smile.

Illustrations

Volume Complete 3 Illustrations

ぼくは異世界で
付与魔法と
召喚魔法を
天秤にかける
3
横塚 司
illustration マニャ子
モンスター文庫

ぼくは異世界で付与魔法と召喚魔法を天秤にかける

3

横塚司
yokotsuka tsukasa
illustration マニャ子
manyako

モンスター文庫

中等部1年
田上宮 親向
中等部3年
下園 亜理栖
中等部3年
竜蜂 珠樹
中等部2年
長月 桜
高等部1年
志木 縁子

「男のひとと接触して……だいじょうぶなの」
「だいじょうぶなわけ、ないじゃない」
「ああ、ただいま」
「おかえり」

「バカみたい、わたし。
意地を張るのもたいがいにしなさいよ」

Chapter 55: Mystery Words

BIFMSMTK Volume 3 Chapter 55

Chapter 55: Mystery Words

Tamaki and I returned to the original place.

Immediately, the orcs swarmed over.

Battle begins again.

But now, I have Tamaki beside me.

A first rated swordswoman who has Rank 6 Sword Skill.

Tamaki used the General's sword in her hands and danced in the darkness, with the silver light leaving illusions in its trails.

Whenever that happens, there will be an orc that will be cut down.

Be it the normal orcs or the elite orcs, before Tamaki, all of them are the same as small fries.

As for what I did, only during the midst of the battle, I just cast Rank 5 Support Magic《Night Sight》for her.

「Wow wo, although it is night time, but it is very bright. Kazu-san, this is incredible. Really great.」

Tamaki seems to be in cloud nine.

Seeing her jumping around happily, makes one cheer up.

The girl who adapted to the darkness, switched off the torch and walked around in the surroundings like a ghost.

In midst, I leveled up to level 16.

Nothing special that I needed to do, so I left the white room immediately.

「Even so, that is really scary, the so-called Rank 6……」

「Hehe―, I am the first to reach Rank 6!」

Those slashes, all of them reaped the lives of the orcs each.

We used overwhelming power to wipe out the orcs.

To the extent that the enemies didn't even have time to escape.

The battle ended.

Tamaki happily gather up the gems that have fallen.

Just a mention, what she took out, were numerous red gems.

「In midst of coming here, I picked up alot of them. But I feel that these are not all of them. These are made by Kazu-san right? They became very obvious signs.」

「Ah ah, mmm, …… in the surroundings of the stone pillar, there are many orcs. We must defeat all of them, that is what I thought……」

Suddenly, I saw the stone pillar before me.

Then again, what exactly is this?

Why are the orcs gathering in the surroundings of such a thing?

「Hey, Kazu-san. Is there such a thing in our school?」

「Because I only entered this year, so I do not know this mountain as well as Tamaki.」

「Hmm, I feel that there shouldn't be.」

Tamaki tilted her head in confusion and used the light to shine at the stone pillar again.

「This, look at this. There is something strange with the patterns, I have never seen it before.」

Like she said, somewhere in the center of the stone pillar, there seems to be a few snake-like red patterns carved on the surface.

The height, just happens to be near our eyes.

Then….. This, what kind of words would they be?

「《Read Language》」

I tested it, and used the magic that we bought with the Mia Vendor.

After using the magic and concentrating on the red patterns……

「Fixed coordinates, space search, restrict scope」

「Kazu-san, what are you talking about?」

「No, that was what it was written, this.」

「I completely don’t understand it.」

That’s right, me too.

Then again, the language that irritates one lined up here about sending what, transferring what, other than that, we can’t link anything to this.

To be honest, I am quite mindful of it.

I wished to rush to Shiki-san’s side immediately and hear her opinion on it.

But, now…… is not the time for that.

I shook my head and look towards Tamaki.

「As for the investigation on this side, we will come back again to do it. First is to go to the high school section.」

「Understood, leave the small fries in between to me!」

Tamaki knocked on her chest with a dong, full of spirit.

Did she overestimate the effect of the Physical Rank 1 skill? She completely choked on that.

What should I say…… I am super uneasy.

Maa, maa, but her presence is indeed reassuring.

With her who has Rank 6 Sword Skills, coupled with the support of my Rank 5 Summoning magic familiars, we can easily obtain victory from everyone except the general orc.

Seeing her who is laughing, even I also laughed.

Being with her who is energetic, even I also became energetic.

Until just now, I was still in the darkness, thinking about it, which feels like all of it has been a lie.

「Tamaki. Let me say this again. Thank you.」

「What are you saying, Kazu-san. That is, the same for me too.」

Tamaki who raised her chest proudly, revealed an innocent smile.

But…… her situation also happened because of her innocence.

Just as I was abit uneasy when looking at her……

「No problem, Kazu-san! Arisu may be a bit too upright, but it is because she did not see her surroundings!」

She seemed to have said it, thinking that I was still worried about the matter with Arisu.

But, ah, Tamaki.

I feel that Arisu is probably so, but still I don’t want you to say it.

But these words, I forced myself to swallow it back.

Then again, after looking at my watch, it is already 8pm.

Wah, I had wander around for more than 2 hours.

That is true, ding, ding, I had kept leaving.

Tamaki must have searched everywhere.

Really, I must have worried her.

But not only Tamaki.

Shiki-san, Mia and the others must also be very worried.

But now is not the time to return.

After this, there are things that are needed to be done.

And things to be confirmed.

「Let's go, Kazu-san」

「Hehe.」

Tamaki and I headed towards the direction of the high school section.

After walking about 30 minutes.

While defeating many orcs, we enter the area used by the high school section.

In midst, Tamaki leveled up to Level 13 and saved the skill points up.

Other than that, we also cuddled a bit in the white room.

As we got closer to the high school section, my face seems to be more spasmed, that was what Tamaki pointed out.

Hence, saying that it was to help me remove my nervousness, she stuck tightly to my body.

Forget it, it is fine that I got saved.

Because if my body and my spirit became useless due to my cowardness, then it will be troublesome.

As for her who removed my nervousness, no matter how much I tried to calculate, I couldn't thank her enough……

「I am so happy. To be able to help Kazu-san, is a very fortunate thing.」

I kept caressing Tamaki's head as she said such strong words.

The girl who is as loyal as a dog, closed her eyes in happiness.

And smiled shyly.

Tamaki: Level 13　Sword Skill 6／Physical 1　Skill Point 4

Because we do not intend on approaching the high school section directly, hence we are in midst of entering the forest.

Basically we returned all the familiars.

The remaining ones are the 2 Wind Elementals.

If the amount is too many, then the rustling of the grass when we opened the path may be detected by somebody.

Even if I saw the breasts of the Wind Elementals, my head doesn't hurt anymore.

In place of that, I do not know why but Tamaki had a sad expression.

She placed her hand on her chest, without any spirit in it.

「Bigger than me……」

「To be honest, I feel that rather than big, I think that the shape is more important.」

「Kazu-san, why are you using keigo?」(TL note: Japanese have a more respectful way of saying = keigo, so that used in this situation. Normally it is not used in normal day conversation between friends.)

「Because such a conversation is a bit embarrassing.」

Then, we showed our faces from the grass brunch and peek towards the doors at the high school section.

We could see the main school building of the high school section.

In front of it, there are orcs roaming about.

Hmm, this seems different from when I had the crow investigate in the morning.

Forget it, having huge amounts of orcs in the main school building is also natural.

Perhaps, there is also an general orc in this building.

「Kazu-san, do we head there directly?」

I shook my head towards Tamaki who took the silver sword out from the sheath.

Anyway, her sword sheath is something that I summoned out.

More accurately, I used Rank 4 Summoning Magic《Summon Weapons》to summon both the sword and sheath, then threw away the sword.

「Confirm the situation first.」

I suppressed the urgent emotions.

First, we shall circle around it and head towards the boys' dormitory.

I have also told Tamaki about the situation with the investigation by the crow.

About the battle that Shiba and the others had with the orcs in front of the boys' dormitory.

Other than that, regarding the hunting rifle that Shiba has, and before I could explain……

「It is fine, Kazu-san! If it is just a shot, just endure it then beat him up!」

I got the response of a muscle-brain.

Her spirit is commendable, but if someone does not hold her leash tightly, then it will be dangerous.

Moreover, now Arisu who is able to use healing magic is not with us.

We head to the deep parts of the forest and moved out into deep areas.

In the journey, we met with orcs that are moving alone twice.

Why are they still here so late in the night? Although I want to think about it, but we shall just kill them first.

Hmm, they seemed to be searching for something……

What is it, or who is it?

Did someone escape into the forest?

At this moment, Tamaki who was in front stopped.

「Hey, Kazu-san.」

Tamaki said so with a nervous face.

「Somebody is here, let's hide.」

「Why do you think so?」

「Because when I was with Shiki-san, I had the same feeling.」

I see, although I do not understand……

Is it because my highest Skill Rank is 5, while Tamaki's Sword Skill is 6?

It could be possible.

But such a conversation.

If a certain someone has the Detection Skill, and was hiding around here, perhaps he would have noticed us?

Perhaps the orcs that we took care of, came here because they were targeting that guy?

That fellow, is he an enemy, or a friend.

If it is the students from the high school section……

I called the Wind Elementals to my side and enter the state of being ready to battle.

At this timing…..

「Please wait a moment, degozaru.」(TL note: its a old fashion way of saying by ancient japanese warriors/samurai, it has a meaning of saying at he is of a lower standing.)

The low voice of a male, came from the shadows of the nearby trees.

Huh what? Degozaru?

「I do not have enmity degozaru, right now I will reveal myself, degozaru, I hope that you will temporarily not attack me degozaru.」(TL note: the I here is Sessha, it is a way that ninja normally refers themselves as. The guy continued using I in such way.)

「Eh, that, Kazu…….」

Tamaki looked at me while baffled.

I faced the direction of the voice.

After hesitating awhile, I gave the order to the Wind Elementals to have them retreat to the back.

At least, it wasn't the voice of Shiba.

Besides if it was Shiba, he will not say something like「degozaru」which was like an idiotic word.

The possibility of Shiba's comrades……

But, talking to us also means, at least there is the room for conversation.

Just who exactly will appear from the shadows of the trees……

Is a guy with black cloth wrapped around his entire body.

No, let me say it clearer.

He’s a guy dressed like a ninja.

「I, am acting like a ninja.」(TL note: the I here is Sessha, it is a way that ninja normally refers themselves as.)

「No, you will know once you see that.」

I was dumbfounded, while looking at that guy.

Not knowing what to say.

Just who is this person.

Chapter 56: Degozaru

BIFMSMTK Volume 3 Chapter 56

Chapter 56: Degozaru

Why a ninja.

If I must use a sentence to express my feeling, then that will be it.

Tamaki was also dumbfounded beside me.

Could a guy who dressed as a ninja really exist……

「Don’t give out too loud a noise degozaru. We will be discovered by orcs degozaru.」

After speaking like this, he faced his back towards us.

「Please follow degozaru. Let’s talk in my hiding place degozaru.」

We followed the guy who self-proclaimed himself as a ninja.

It may be a trap, but just like that, we did not even considered it.

Or rather, we have completely fallen into the other party’s pace, so we did not even have the mood to consider such a thing.

Hmm, from that motive, I had to say that the power of dressing as a ninja is really powerful.

To take away the thinking and judgement ability of our side, what fearsome power.

Is it just a joke or is it serious, although now I could not understand it completely……

The「hiding place」that the ninja said, is a small house that was abandoned.

The outside is pretty broken down and it seems like it will collapse at anytime now.

But once you entered, it seems to be properly cleaned.

There is a table and there are 4 chairs surrounding it.

This is just like a commonly seen society. (TL note: for those who forget/don't know, a society is something like a club)

Or rather it is a society.

After I had the familiars wait outside for orders, I entered with Tamaki.

The ninja shutted the entrance tightly then after that, opened the fluorescent light at the ceiling.

The inside that was lighted up by the fluorescent light, had written「Welcome to Ninja Department」.

「Ninja……Department?」

「That is so.」

The ninja raised his chest in pride.

「I am the head of Ninja Department degozaru.」

「What about the members?」

「The so-called ninjas are always alone degozaru.」

Mmm, hmm.

No, but, so as to say this person is a student of the high school section……?

Then it means, a young…… but I can't tell.

He was masked.

A mask? (TL note: the ones that cover the mouth and nose only.)

No, not very clear, anyway it was a clothing that covered everything but the eyes.

「That. If you are a student from the high school section…… Then do you know who I am?」

「Year 1 Kaya Kazuhisa degozaru. I know degozaru.」

I froze up due to my nervousness.

Noticing my situation, Tamaki held my hand.

But the ninja circled around the table and turned towards me……

And lowered his head.

A nice 90 degree, it was a perfect bow.

「How you were treated in the high school section, no one won't know degozaru. It is not hard to tell about what kind of feelings that you have for the people in

the high school section, including me, but can you please endure it for now?」(TL note: the you here was said in a old fashion way. おぬし = Onushi = you.)

No, even if you said such a thing to me.

Or rather, now that I came to the high school section, is also not to cause chaos……

After I asked the ninja to raise his head and sit down, I explained the reason about why I came here.

The thing about Arisu.

The thing about Shiba.

Then about the situation at the high school section, mostly gotten from the investigation by the crow.

「I see, so Kaya-tono had wanted to help the girl he likes and stand for to battle degozaru.」(TL note: tono = another type Mr.)

「That, well, you can take it as that way. And Kazu is fine. Everyone calls me that.」

「Me too. Tamaki is fine. Please take care of us, Ninja-san!」

Tamaki said happily.

What, you got familiar with him so easily, Tamaki.

Hmm, being adaptable is a good thing…… how should I say it.

「I understand degozaru, Kazu-tono, Tamaki-tono. Indeed, if it is the 2 of your strengths, then orcs or anything, there is nothing to fear degozaru. After all……」

「No, wait a moment, why did you know about our current strength?」

This time, it was the ninja that tilted his head.

「The familiars waiting outside, are the Elementals summoned by Rank 5 Summoning Magic. Also to be able to move nimbly in the darkness where there isn't any light, it also means that one of you has Support Magic at Rank 5. This can be confirmed from the use of《Night Sight》
. While Tamaki-tono has the sword as her main, from her power at killing those orcs, she is at least having Rank 4 Sword Skill…… Perhaps her skill may have even reached Rank 6? Such a thing, can be easily understood by observing awhile degozaru.」

Tamaki and I faced each other, dumbfounded.

No, although it may be so.

Although what he said was not wrong.

「Ninja-san, I had only thought that you are just a cool-looking ninja.」

Tamaki actually pointed out such a hard to say thing directly.

She really does not know how to see the mood.

Maa, this time because the other party laughed so it is fine.

But that is some powerful observation.

Pointing that out calmly, although it is the same as he said, but even so it is too…… From our small movements, it seems that we will be completely seen through.

「I, to become a first-rate ninja, has been training daily degozaru. The instant when I defeated the orc, when I entered that strange white walled room, I did my best in obtaining information degozaru.」

「How did you defeat the orcs.」

「After hooking the rope around the neck, then using the branches with the principle of pulleys then kill it degozaru. I learnt it from Hissatsu Shigoto Hito degozaru.」(TL note: Hissatsu Shigoto Hito is a popular drama in japan.)

Winning with just that, or rather why did he have such preparations……

But I could only stare blankly, unable to speak.

With the orcs and their unrealistic strength, it is surprising his ninja method did not fail.

No, wait.

In fact the guy dressed as a ninja, is more realistic than the issue that happened to the school, isn't it?

Compared to the orcs, the ninja is still more stranger, right?

If it is this, then the magic we used here are non-existent, then the orcs are the real students……

「Kazu-san, your eyes are swimming around, it is dangerous, calm down!」

「Ah, ahah…… it is fine, Tamaki, I calmed down.」

「Please wipe your sweat degozaru」

The ninja took out a heart shaped handkerchief.

How should I say this, thinking in fact made me become like an idiot.

「Anyway whether you are real or not, let’s do this. What level are you now!」

「Level 9 degozaru. Detection 3, Sword Skill 4, Physical 1 degozaru.」

The ninja revealed his card so casually.

Is it because of the consideration that it won’t be a problem even if it was known? Or is it because he needs me to trust him so he revealed his cards?

To me, I have already been swallowed into his ninja space.

Hmm, but this is really incredible, it is really built like a ninja.

And it is also very strong.

If he focus on surprise attacks, could he even defeat the elite orcs?

Without any waste for the sake of coolness, it is not bad.

Saying about ninjas, it is the shuriken, so you will think of taking Throwing Skill, but that can be replaced using Sword Skills to throw daggers.

If you use Fire Magic then it will be Fire Release-jutsu, if you use Wind Magic then it will be Divine Wind-jutsu. So he must enduring it when choosing and focused on style and strength. (TL note: jutsu = usually called as techniques)

Including the 1 Skill point left, it can be seen that he obtained his skills based on planning.

Including the fact that he saw through our Skill Builds in an instant, at least his judgement skills are trustworthy.

But, really, this skill build is really not bad……

「What is it, Kazu-san, you seemed very happy.」

Ah, I was discovered by Tamaki.

Is my part as a gamer revealed?

Forget it, I shook my head and faced the Ninja-san.

「But you have Detection Skill Rank 3 and yet you were discovered by Tamaki. Tamaki's Sword Skill is Rank 6.」

「Indeed that is so degozaru. For the Skill holders with 2 times higher than the Detection Skill, they will discover it degozaru, that kind of consideration is more appropriate degozaru.」

Oh~, I see.

We had wanted to exchange information on this area.

No, wait a moment, I thought about it.

「When my companions had Detection Skill Rank 1, my Support Magic is already Rank 3. But yet I cannot discover that person, so as to say……」

「Then this rule is only applicable to the people who have Weapon Skills, then that will be fine degozaru. Using Magic Rank, you will not be able to discover their presence, or perhaps they will have less favourable conditions than Weapon Skill holders……」

I see, if you considered it like this, then it makes sense.

But that is really troublesome, later we will need to test it with the familiars.

In the Cultivating Centre, other than Shiki-san, nobody else took Detection Skill.

It is too dangerous to let her conduct experiments alone.

If we can obtain information regarding to Detection Skill, more or less we can provide some information on our side.

I am no longer confused.

After taking Arisu back, then I will return to the Cultivating Centre.

For this goal, I must make sure of the things that I need to do.

「Did someone with Shiba take Detection Skill?」

「Saso Shiba, he himself has Detection Skill degozaru. Perhaps he has the aim of fighting as a sniper degozaru.」

Indeed so that is it.

Detection Skill can let the user increase his ability to seek.

So as to say even if we try to sneak up to him, we will be discovered.

According to Shiki-san, you will know it even if you are seen from faraway.

Even it is used as a countermeasure for assassination and scouting, it is quite remarkable.

Other than that, Shiki-san seems to have discovered the fact that I had observed her breast region from faraway.

Such a scary ability.

「Even if I want to sneak into the male dormitory and snatch back the arm is also…… hard?」

I spoke in a soft voice.

The simplest method without any future troubles, for taking Arisu back is that.

If Tamaki is right, Arisu went with Shiba because Mia's arm has been taken as a hostage.

Considering Arisu's gentleness, and her character which does not allow her stop and think of the lost and gain, this is highly possible.

Removing her shackles, even if it means using a forceful method, we have to bring Arisu back.

I still have the problems with Shiba over here…...

Even if I face off with Shiba completely, it will only be beneficial to the orcs only.

It was hard for Shiba to gather the entire high school section.

I hope that they will fight with the orcs.

Hoping that it will buy us some time.

I have discussed that topic with Shiki-san before and got a conclusion on it.

Facing off with the high school section is a bad decision.

Now what we need, is time……

「Hey, arm, what does that mean degozaru. It sounds like a secret message degozaru……」

I was suddenly questioned by Ninja-san.

Ah ah, this means I have yet to explain this thing to him.

「The left arm of one of our companions was torn off during the battle with the orcs. As we casted《Stasis》, after we raised Healing Magic to Rank 4, then we will be able to attach it back……」

I explained our battle with the general in a simple terms.

At the peak of the intense battle, the matter that we splitted up.

And the matter that the support party had recovered the arm.

But the person that was holding on to the arm was assaulted by Shiba.

The matter of Shiba snatching away the arm.

Considering from this situation, the reason Arisu will stay with Shiba is to get the arm back.

Ninja-san listened to the words that I said silently.

But we can understand that the face that was hiding behind the mask, gradually revealed a hated expression.

The last blow was when I said it.

「Luckily, the girl that had her arm taken was not in any real danger. Even without her left arm, she can still move happily. But Mia, she……」

「Wait a moment! What is it with Mia!」

Ninja-san shouted and banged the table intensely, even forgetting his role-play.

Tamaki and I was so shocked until we shrunk back.

Ninja-san, suddenly came to his senses and scratched the back of his head.

「So..sorry degozaru.」

「That, Ninja-san, can I ask…… your name is?」

Ninja-san, lowered his shoulders powerlessly.

「I, am called Tagamiya Yuki. Please keep the thing about the ninja secret from Mia……」

So that's it, it is that.

Mia's family name is Tagamiya.

She has been searching for her elder brother in the high school section.

Conclusion.

Ninja-san = Mia's elder brother.

Tamaki and I had our mouths opened, as the ninja is Tagamiya Yuki.

Maa, I had wanted to say that they have similar atmosphere around them.

In short he is a normal talented person, but he is wasted on such places.

Before long, Tamaki pointed while shouting.

「Kazu-san, this pair of siblings are too much! Although Mia is also like that, but this brother is even worse!」

「Tamaki. If you want to talk bad about someone, you should say it in a place where he can't hear, okay?」

Or rather, the school has already become like this, compared to the feelings of wanting to see her little sister, the feelings of wanting to keep this role play a secret from Mia is greater?

This fellow, normally, just what kind of attitude is this brother moving with.

He seems to want to know everything, but yet do not want to know, such a complicated feeling.

「No, not that, as to Mia being alive, I am very happy about it degozaru. From how it seems, it was you who saved Mia degozaru. I am very grateful on this degozaru.」

「I have already heard this from the beginning, about Yuki-senpai who was transferred to this school because he brought eroge games to his elementary school.」

「M..mia she, even said this……」

Yuki-senpai, after trembling abit, collapsed on the table.

Then again, this person, if we believe what Mia had said, he is already a Year 3.

A ninja get-up or what, really, what is he doing……

No, thanks to his ninja skills, that is why he is able to survive.

Just like the words, using his skills to save himself, that is worthy of respect….. I think.

I shall not raise up the thing of him acting alone since the beginning, as he reached level 9.

Oh wow, level 9……

「If he had raise 1 more level, then Mia's sacrifice would have not been in vain, Kazu-san!」

Tamaki stabbed in the real final blow.

This girl is really merciless.

And she is a natural……

「Wh..what is going on degozaru.」

「Hmm, after you leveled up to level 10.」

I said to Yuki-senpai, about the item vendor that you can use once you reach level 10, and how Mia named it Mia Vendor, to tell him that Mia is still alive and how she had been fighting.

Yuki-senpai, grabbed his head and mumbled.

「I, had Mia's hard work…… Gu gu gu ugm but even leveling up to level also took quite alot of effort degozaru……」

「Maa, it is just something like an insurance, don't mind it too much.」

I shall not mention about that first.

I proposed something to the ninja-dressed guy who had suffered a huge blow.

A proposal.

If he is Mia’s brother, then he will have to accept it.

「Please help us. To get Mia’s left arm back together. Then Mia will also acknowledge Senpai. Regarding the ninja thing too, we can also do something about it.」

「This proposal, do I have the choice to reject it degozaru.」

「Nope, not possible, right?」

I revealed an evil smile.

Yuki-senpai collapsed on the table again.

Chapter 57: What Shiba and co has done

BIFMSMTK Volume 3 Chapter 57

Chapter 57: What Shiba and co has done

According to Mia's brother, Yuki-senpai who is in the 3rd Year in high school, there seems to be 3 surviving student bodies until today noon.

One of them is the boy's dormitory led by Shiba and the rest is the 2nd girls' dormitory and the people from the Society Building.

They have been fighting alone.

They did not cooperate because their thoughts were different.

The 1st boys' dormitory is a one man dictatorship by Shiba.

Using a hunting rifle from who knows where, to defeat the orcs and level up very fast like a hurricane.

It seems that he and the other 5 people began to do whatever they want with the other students due to their fast leveling.

A part of the teachers also enter the Shiba's camp.

The 2nd girl's dormitory had tried to negotiate with that kind of Shiba at the start.

But the girls who went to negotiate were kidnapped.

They seems to have been used to comfort the elite members of the boy's dormitory.

Although this is quite nasty, but I know the girls in the high school section had accepted Shiba's actions usually.

So to me, this was just as I wished.

I had wanted to tell them "look at yourself now, bitches".

The Society Building group have planned to increase the number of sports society members who are at level 1 as their core force.

They gathered together with a few sport teachers as their center.

Until the second morning, the number of people who are level 1 and above should reach 2 digits.

I see, everyone has been working hard. That was what I had thought.

Which was unpleasing.

But at least they are defeating the orcs.

That is a good thing, I tried to convince myself forcefully.

「But wait, Ninja-san. What is with the until noon."」

「This is what happened after noon degozaru. A huge number of orcs gathered and attacked the 2nd girls' dormitory and the Society Building group degozaru.」

This was perhaps was slightly before when I used the crow to scout.

A few hundreds orcs and small amounts of elite orcs.

It is around the same time as the Cultivating Centre.

We used the terrain of the Cultivating Centre, and barely managed to win.

Although there are some sacrifices, but it can be said that the loss are kept to a minimum.

But the 2nd girls' dormitory and the Society Building group, should have tried to set defense lines using the terrain.

And if they do not have people who can fight like Arisu and Tamaki.

Even if they defeat the orcs, if they did not have a way to resist against the roar of the elite orc.

In actuality, the enemy trampled over them overwhelmingly. The students who resisted were almost all killed.

「The orc groups did not go to the 1st boys' dormitory?」

Tamaki opened her eyes and asked.

「The ones who lured the orcs to the 2 places is the 1st boys' dormitory.」

「Huh? Wait. So as to say……」

「Shiba that guy, in order to crush the people who does not obey him, send his subordinates to lure the orcs and let them discover the 2 places. In net games, this is called train degozaru. This is quite the troubling act.」

No, rather than troubling, how should I say this, this is just like……

I was shocked.

…

Yesterday I was about to kill Shiba, and I could still be shocked to this extent……

It is too incredible.

Tamaki seems to be unable to follow and kept blinking her eyes.

Hence I explained what is a train.

「Wah, wait wait wait! Aren't the surviving people all friends? Why is there a need to harm our comrades? This is too strange.」

「This is not strange, Tamaki. Shiki-san and I have already considered the possibility of meeting such a matter.」

「Shiki-san……?」

「She also understand about Shiba very well. She had said that if it's that guy, he may really do it.」

Because of that reason, we have to be very cautious about interacting with the high school section.

To crush everyone who oppose him, that is the character of Shiba

No matter what, I suffered due to facing off against him.

That is just like wandering in the depths of hell.

After Yuki-senpai heard my words, he understood Shiba's character and sighed after crossing his arms.

The expression behind the ninja mask, must be bitter.

「From the results, after noon, 2 of the gathering points out of the 3 have been destroyed degozaru. The surviving people hid in places where the orcs and Shiba

could not find degozaru. I have some connections with those places and am currently moving around to support the hiding survivors.」

「How many people survived.」

「If you did not include those who joined Shiba…… then there are around 20 people degozaru. Among them, there are around 3-4 people who are above level 1 degozaru.」

Should I say it is more or lesser than I expected.

This number will further decrease in the future.

They, and them, could they survive pass tonight?

「Now, how many people are with Shiba?」

「Including the girls that are used as slaves, then there are about 50.」

There is quite alot.

The total numbers of people who are above level 1 are unknown, perhaps their number of combatants may be even more than the Cultivating Centre's.

If they are our comrades then it will be reassuring.

But in reality it is impossible.

They are the hidden enemy.

If Shiba is only the leader, then it may not be so.

But once they become the lap dogs of Shiba, even if Shiba is not around, they will also do the same thing.

If they do not do so, they will never grasp authority.

If they haven't made their move on the Cultivating Centre, it means that it still have some value.

If they can defeat high ranking orcs, then leaving them alone is fine. The enemy's enemy is the friend.

But Shiba made a move on Arisu. He made a fool out of us.

Using his gun to threaten Shiki-san, snatching away Mia's arm, all of these are perhaps used as a threat.

Using all my abilities to summon familiars, then attack the 1st boys' dormitory, then from Shiba, I will kill off every of the surviving students and the teachers.

And I must get Arisu back. If that can be done, then it will be great.

But it is not realistic in reality.

A trade, but a trade will definitely be rejected, however if it's a fake trade.

Then using that time to made secret movements…… once the talks break down, we will finish it in a go.

Hmm, there are still some other moves that we can consider, but that's about it.

I explained the majority of my plans to the 2 of them.

Both agreed.

Especially Yuki-senpai who was especially keen.

He accepted the order to secretly get his sister, Mia's arm back.

「As her brother, I must at least have such a motivation degozaru!」

Yuki-senpai laughed.

「Leave it to me. In actuality, there are 'grass' in the 1st boys' dormitory degozaru. If I make contact with them, then we can lure Shiba out degozaru.」

「Hey Kazu-san, what are 'grass'?」

「That is a covert, a secret agent *etc.* Which is a spy.」

I see, so the people in the 1st boys' dormitory are not all working together.

Using this point, he could proceed well with his spy activities……

Although his get up is abit that.

Although his tone is abit that.

Or rather it is abit of that in everywhere.

※

Then, the well-planned tactic was wasted.

When we got closer to the 1st boys' dormitory from the ninja house, sounds of battles could be heard from there.

We looked at each other.

Although it is late in the night, but《Night Sight》was also used on Yuki-senpai, so we can see each others' faces clearly.

To Yuki-senpai, I casted as many support magic as I could on him.

His ninja wear was added with《Hard Armour》, and his various types of ninja weapons are also added with《Hard Weapon》.

Other than that I used《Summon Weapons》to summon a long sword, and gave it to him after adding《Hard Weapon》.

After his battle prowess was significantly increased, Yuki-senpai gave me his heart-felt thanks.

「There seems to be quite a number of orcs degozaru.」

That was what Yuki-senpai who had Detection Skill had said, after he heard it.

At this moment, a huge roar from faraway echoed to our area.

Ah it seems that there are elite orcs.

「This is in the scale of hundreds .」

「That, is the 1st boys' dormitory easy to defend?」

I searched for the areas around the boys' dormitory in my memories.

From a bird-eye's view…… how should I say it.

If they had detected the attack early, if they had dug holes to impede the advance of the army, or cut the army's march…… then probably?

I asked Yuki-senpai if they did any similar battle preparations.

The answer is indeed "no".

「They are busy in the daytime,trying to harm the other gathering points, or busy leveling up.」

I see, so when I saw Shiba, it was not at the 1st boys' dormitory but near the 2nd boys' dormitory.

Probably hunting orcs there.

But if it is like this……

I bit my lip.

The destruction of the gathering points for the high school section does not matter to me.

If Shiba is met with danger, I will only say " look at that pathetic look of yours".

But Arisu will definitely also be there.

She will be battling at the foremost frontline.

The battle in the daytime, to kept her from being surrounded, Shiki-san and I have commanded to our utmost.

Even when we are about to get surrounded, our comeback assault was done after seeing that the orcs are in chaos, and that they are unable to prevent an organised retaliation.

There have always been trustworthy companions beside Arisu and Tamaki.

Mia and I will also be at positions where we can provide support.

And now it is already night time.

The support magic on her body should have already expired.

If Arisu blocks the orcs by herself now……

It’s impossible.

「Go help.」

I said without any hesitation.

Arisu’s smile flashed in my mind.

I smiled bitterly, indeed I still like Arisu.

「It is fine for Shiba and the people in the high school section, anyway we will go to save Arisu. We will enter the battle for this.」

「Understood, leave it to me. I don’t understand the complicated stuff, but if it is saving Arisu, then it is fine.」

「I see…… degozaru. Okay, then leave Mia’s arm to me degozaru.」

We nodded and began moving.

After Yuki-senpai separated from us, he entered the 1st boys’ dormitory after circling a few times.

Tamaki and I climbed the slope behind the orcs.

We peeked at the courtyard in front of the 1st boys’ dormitory. It was completely filled with orcs.

Nearby the boys’ dormitory, there are tables and chairs used as a roadblock.

There are spotlight illuminating the roadblocks.

They are probably powered by the generator to light them up.

Inside the roadblock, some students are throwing, some are using spears to stab at the orcs from the gaps.

Among them. There was a little girl, with a spear, rampaging at the roadblock.

It’s Arisu.

Arisu is fighting alone with a group of orcs.

Everytime she swings her spear, a few orcs will fall before her.

Every time her spear stabs, an orc will die.

As she is peerless, only her surroundings is empty with no orcs approaching her.

Even so, Arisu’s endurance is not infinite.

Eventually she will be exhausted.

By then, she will be unable to resist against that number.

And there are numerous elite orcs behind that orc army.

The worst is that there are hellhounds. Other than the general orc, all of them are here.

The orcs are serious.

If Arisu is not around, the 1st boys’ dormitory will collapse immediately.

No, even if Arisu is around…..

「Let’s go!」

「Mmm, leave it to me!」

I summoned my familiar and casted the Support Magic.

Among the Rank 5 familiars, I summoned 4 Fire Elementals this time.

The naked men that are wrapped in flames appeared.

Their head and lower body is wrapped in flames, with a scimitar in their right hands.

There is the atmosphere of the middle-east.

All of suddenly my MP is just left with 60. But that is enough. As long as we have these, it is enough.

Using《Deflection Spell》to spread,《Keen Weapon》,《Physical Up》,《Mighty Arm》,《Resist All : Fire》are casted on the 4 Fire Elementals, Tamaki and myself.

I casted《Clear Mind》on Tamaki and myself.

Last, we indeed need《Deflection Spell》and then《Haste》.

Nearly all the members are wrapped in red light.

The MP left is 22.

「Attack!」

I shouted loudly.

We rushed down the slope together, and attacked the orc group from behind.

The battle in the late night begins.

This is the battle to save Arisu.

Chapter 58: Battle at High School Boys' Dormitory

BIFMSMTK Volume 3 Chapter 58

Chapter 58: Battle at High School Boys' Dormitory

Translated @ avertranslation.org

Our formation is in an arrow shape.

With Tamaki as the vanguard and me in a slightly behind position.

Other than that, there are 4 Fire Elementals around me.

Tamaki who is the tip, striked at the group of orcs.

Her silver sword danced, and brushed past before speeding away.

It seemed just like a periodic drama killing.

Not even the elite orcs are a match for Tamaki who has Rank 6 Sword Skill.

The bronze-colored orcs scattered once they crossed.

Tamaki pressed forward with the momentum.

「Oi, gather before me! I will finish everyone of you!」

Oi oi.

You are too far in front.

She had already rushed into a position where I could no longer help her……

As there is a group of orcs in between us, I could no longer see Tamaki’s figure.

Ah ah, really.

At this rate, I can't even send the Fire Elementals to guard her back.

The Fire Elementals swing their scimitars to defeat the orcs, and open a path.

The orcs that got closer to the Fire Elementals, groaned in pain as they are wrapped in the flames that burnt them.

But these flames are completely not hot to me and Tamaki.

And it was before we added《Resist All: Fire》.

I wonder why is this……

The flames from the Fire Elementals does not seem to affect its companions.

Perhaps this is like the preventive friendly fire in MMORPG.

Now this is something that benefits us, so anything is fine.

Surrounded by the flaming men, I proceeded.

Hence I leveled up. And we reached the white room.

※

Only Tamaki and I were in the white room.

If Arisu is still in the party, then she will also be around……

Indeed, she left the party.

Forget it. This must be what Shiba wanted. We shall not talk about this.

「Oi, Tamaki, you are too forward.」

「Sorry.」

Tamaki used both her hand to cover her face, and laughed like she was very shy.

Forget, she seems to be reflecting… yeah right.

This girl has been getting carried away.

「If it is at normal times, then it is fine. You have Arisu following you, she will help to clean up after you.」

「Mmm, I know. I know that Arisu has always been helping me. So I want to thank Arisu more than anyone. Perhaps I may even treasure Arisu more than Kazu-chi.」

Hmmm, maybe that is true.

Tamaki seems to have always been in Arisu's care.

And Arisu also seems to like taking care of Tamaki.

Perhaps they have the relationship of being of the same mind.

Maybe I was the lightbulb between them.

Forget it, even if it is so, it is fine, moreover they don't seem to mind it.

Bringing Arisu back, this time I must make her mine.

Other than that, there is one more thing.

I must also declare that Tamaki is mine too.

That is a definite.

It is a very greedy and immoral act, but if it is just 2, it should be acceptable.

And for us to maintain our current state, we can only do this.

Just how much do we rely on each other.

Both Tamaki and I are weak people.

That's right, through this, I gradually realise just how weak a person I was.

I can't do anything alone.

So in conclusion, if it is for Arisu, for my sake, and for Tamaki, I will no longer be lost.

So saying that……

I looked at Tamaki.

「If you fell before Arisu returns, then it will be putting the cart before the horse. You may be strong, but now there are no healing magic among us. And Arisu who could protect your back is not around. Don't forget to coordinate with the Fire Elementals, understand?」

「Understood, Kazu-chi.」

Tamaki nodded energetically.

Nnn, being energetic is a good thing, but she……

I sighed……

Without learning any skill, I pressed the return button. And hence we returned to the original place.

Kazuhisa: Level 17 Support Magic 5/ Summon Magic 5 Skill Points 4

※

After we return from the white room, the sea of orcs was cut apart before long.

Or rather Tamaki returned and cut down the orcs that were blocking the way.

Then we got into formation again and advanced.

A very tall Fire Elemental told me Arisu's position and once in awhile we will have them fly up to observe the situation around us.

Arisu's position is around the left front.

The bad thing is that there is a huge black shadow approaching from the right corner.

Hellhound.

I was very anxious.

If Arisu who did not have resistive magic, get hit by the breath of the hellhound……

「Tamaki, there is a situation, open the path in a go.」

「Okay!」

I used《Haste》that was coupled with《Deflection Spell》.

Every member glowed with red light. And we dashed into the sea of orcs.

Tamaki strikes, the space is then opened by the Fire Elementals, I also tried to attack strongly.

I only placed a Fire Elemental behind us to ensure my safety.

In the midst, Tamaki leveled up once. I had her save her skill points.

I wanted her to reach Rank 7 Sword Skill asap.

Once she reached Rank 7 then she should be able to fight with the General orc.

We exited the white room immediately.

Tamaki: Level 14　Sword Skill 6／Physical 1　Skill Point 6

After reaching level 14, we continued to cut the orcs endlessly.

And the beasts also began to panic due to their heavy losses.

Part of them began escaping after being in a fear state.

Our attack from the back was very effective.

The enemy army was caught in a pinch attack situation.

Hence, the awaited thing appeared.

A bright firework was launched from the roof of the 1st boys' dormitory.

It was a rocket firework that you can buy in a convenience store.

But this firework split the sky with the 2 moons in this other world, and the bright explosion also scattered in beautiful flares.

Directly below the fireworks, is a man’s figure.

The man dressed in a ninja wear, give a slight pose.

He waved something like a rod high up.

It must be Mia’s arm.

Okay! Many thanks, Yuki-senpai!

I feel that he should change that spiderman outfit.

Then what happened is……

The orcs who took the fireworks as a new magic and sunk into confusion.

The odd shaped monster escaped.

In this instant, we rushed into the empty space among the orcs.

We could see Arisu’s figure.

When Arisu saw us who are approaching, she gave a shocked expression.

「Arisu, return!」

After saying, I ran towards Arisu.

「Ah, wait, Kazu-chi.」

Tamaki’s panicked voice came over.

Who cares.

Although the one who got angry at Tamaki’s reckless movement was me, but when I saw Arisu, my legs began moving by themselves.

Depending on《Physical Up》and《Haste》, I broke through the orcs.

The orcs could not keep up with the sudden intrusion.

I rushed into the encirclement the orcs had for Arisu.

Then I noticed it.

The hellhound separated from the orcs and came over.

The sac below the hellhound’s throat inflated like a balloon.

This is the sign of the breath.

Not good, it is coming.

「Arisu!」

I hugged Arisu. Then my vision was engulfed by red flames.

The hot breath scalded my back and I groan out in pain.

But in my arms.

I lowered my head and saw Arisu who was in my arms.

I gave a gentle smile.

「Ka..Kazu-san.」

「Mia's arm has already been taken back. You can return.」

「Bu..but I……」

「I hope that you will come back, come back to us.」

「Sh, yes!」

The breath ended.

Turning back, the figure of the hellhound running here appeared.

The huge dog jumped off the ground.

I hugged Arisu and said, let's party and she did not resist.

「Yes!」

It's Arisu's voice.

I nodded and agreed.

Nearly at the same time, Tamaki who rushed out from the orcs also jumped high into the air.

In the air, her figure crossed with the hellhound.

The silver blade cut open the hellhound's body.

「Arisu, Kazu-san, don't get injured.」

The hellhound which was 3m long was blew away by Tamaki in a blow and roll onto the ground.

Suffering such serious injuries, but it's still attempting to get up……

Tamaki gave a follow-up attack immediately after landing.

The sword flashes across the head of the hellhound who was attempting to get up.

The silver trace cut down the demon dog's head.

This silver sword is too shocking.

Even if you account for the effect of《Haste》, it is still very powerful.

No, of course Tamaki's skill is also very shocking.

Hence……

The sound of leveling echoed in my ears.

Seems like I leveled to level 18.

※

The white room.

Including me, there are a total of 3 people here.

Me, Tamaki and Arisu.

Arisu looked at us with an uneasy expression.

First it was Tamaki who rushed over, and hugged Arisu tightly.

「Arisu! Stupid, I was worried sick!」

「Ta..tamaki…… Sorry, I」

Tamaki who was rubbing on Arisu's face.

Arisu who look at her while smiling bitterly.

Ahhhh really, Arisu is just like Tamaki's mother.

I called Arisu and slowly walked over.

Arisu looked at me, slightly afraid.

「Welcome back.」

「Th..that…… Kazu-san, why, are you here.」

「Many things happened. But now, it is because you are here. Just because of that.」

After being slightly conflicted, Arisu looked straight at me.

「Something happened. When…… I was not around.」

「Arisu. I saw that you met Shiba. In the《Repel Sphere》」

With just this sentence, Arisu realised the current situation.

Her face turned pale.

「No it is not like that. Th..this is a misunderstanding. I..I because Cousin Shiba took away Mia-chan's left arm……」

Cousin Shiba huh.

I felt pain in my chest.

In order to not let my feelings show, I desperately pretended to be calm.

「I know. That time I did not know. But now I finally know. You are Shiba's cousin.」

Arisu lowered her head. Her cherry colored lips are bit tightly.

「Sorry. If only I had explained about Cousin Shiba yesterday…… Cousin Shiba said. As long as I followed him, then he will return Mia-chan's arm. As long as I helped out during the time when they defeated the general……」

I see, that kind of condition.

But that guy would not keep his promise……

No, perhaps he will.

I remembered.

Shiba that guy, although he will do evil stuff, but he will keep his promises.

That is where he is sly at.

As long as you become his companion, then you can trust him

Gradually you will listen to him.

Just like a drug.

A person who listens to Shiba, will gradually tend to over rely on him.

Arisu must have also fallen into this trap.

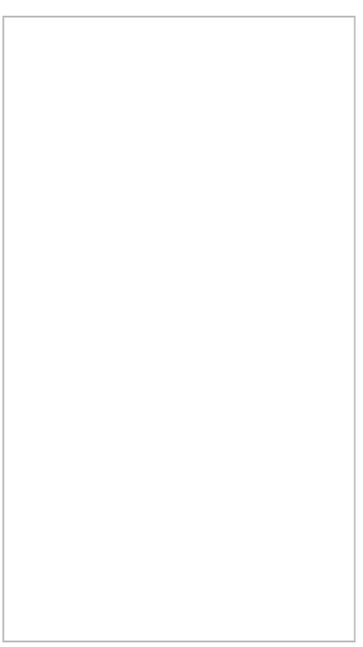
But the trap is broken, It was broken by me.

「There is no need to say. Just being like this is fine, we will forget about what happened in the past.」

I placed my hands on Arisu's cheeks.

Arisu raised her head and looked at me with her eyes brimming with tears.

I lightly placed my lips on Arisu's lips.



Even though Tamaki was just beside us, Arisu and I began to twirl our tongues and kissed.

After releasing, Arisu panted for air. With her cheeks blushed, she looked at me.

「Kazu-san, I...」

「You are mine. From now until eternity」

「Yes!」

Then I glanced at Tamaki.

I rubbed Tamaki's head violently, who had looked over uneasily.

Arisu was shocked to see us like that.

We have to explain it clearly now.

If we do not explain it clearly now, then it will become a situation where we have to keep on hiding it.

Although it was hard to say it, but I told her everything.

About how I wandered in the forest aimlessly in self abandonment.

About killing the orcs one by one.

About Tamaki searching for me alone.

About how I was saved by Tamaki.

About what happened after that, everything.

And also about what was conversed, everything.

「This is also all my fault.」

「This is also because my heart is too weak.」

「But that is great. I…… I am slightly happy. That……」

I hugged Arisu and Tamaki.

With alot of strength.

Even so I still wished to use more strength to feel their warmth and scent.

「I can’t do it without the both of you. So please, both of you, please love me together.」

I said it.

I said something that was too much.

I said something that was like a devil.

But probably, that was what we need currently.

If everyone is not together, we will definitely be unable to survive from now on.

Today we have gone through numerous tough battles.

To be able to attain victory in that kind of disadvantageous situation, what we had depended on, was the bonds between us.

For the sake of strengthening our bonds, I will do anything.

Of course among them, is also for the sake of covering the weakness in my heart.

To be honest, the moment when I saw the secret meeting between Arisu and Shiba was the worst.

I never expect myself to be so weak.

I must accept my own weakness and find a solution to it.

For this, both Arisu and Tamaki are necessary.

One person is not enough.

After understanding this, next is to see their thoughts on it.

Finally after the 2 girls looked at each other, then they turned towards me and

nodded together.

「We belong to Kazu-chi.」

Arisu said.

「We will both give ourselves to you together.」

Tamaki said.

「Our weakness, and Kazu-chi weakness must be slowly filled.」

「Ah yes. I am weak, too weak. I cannot leave my weak self just like that.」

「We will support you. Forever~ and ever!」

I kissed the 2 of them in sequence. Then I hugged them again strongly.

We continued hugging in the white room.

Chapter 59: For Everyone, I chose Summoning Magic

BIFMSMTK Volume 3 Chapter 59

Chapter 59: For Everyone, I chose Summoning Magic

Arisu told me about Saso Shiba.

She told me everything about Shiba who was her cousin.

From the start, she was very hesitated on it, because I forcefully asked her to say it.

But I cannot not know about him.

I wish to know everything about him who I wanted to kill, hence I decided so.

「I have also said before that I was adopted. My family after adopting me, became cold to me soon. At this time, Cousin Shiba who lived nearby in a relative's house treated me like a family. He told me to become his underling, then he will not let me become lonely. He would caress my head and hug me tightly…… By doing so, Cousin Shiba made me feel very safe.」

Ah, I see.

I understand.

This action completely fits his character.

Shiba that guy will still care for those who will become his.

Or rather he hate to become someone who will not own everything.

So those who obeys him, will also surprisingly admire him.

This is also the reason why the organisation with him as the center can work.

I disliked the organisation with him as the center.

So I gave my opinion.

In the end, I was glared at severely.

Next was just like I had said before.

「Cousin Shiba was also very trusted by my foster parents. When entering middle school, Cousin Shiba also said that if I entered the same school as him, then he will help pay for me, no matter how much it would have costed. My parents felt that if Cousin Shiba who always take care of me is around, then it will be fine. So they sent me over. But I did not rely on Cousin Shiba after I entered. I decided to work hard by myself. It is not good to consistently rely on him, that was what I thought……」

Saying so, Arisu lowered her head.

「Nevermind, continue.」

Arisu raised her head. There are quite abit of tears in her eyes, and she looked at me with a relying expression.

「But, Kazu-san.」

「I will not hate Arisu. Definitely. So continue.」

Arisu sighed and continued speaking.

She will meet once with Shiba once a month.

Shiba seems to mind Arisu.

A quiet cousin who is cute and admires him.

A smart cousin who is obedient.

Before him, Arisu has always been an ideal cousin.

To the ideal cousin Arisu, he will also repay by being the ideal cousin.

This relationship sustained from when he was in elementary school section until the high school section.

Although it is like that, but Arisu has never been to the high school section.

Sometimes he will go to the middle school section to ask Arisu if she has any troubles, or if she wants anything.

Sometimes he will give some gifts.

This is an ideal situation.

Just looking at that, it seems to be a very good cousin relationship.

It should be only these. Arisu had avoided his dirty side.

What caused everything to change was the thing that happened in the white room last evening.

The thing after my body and Arisu’s became one.

Arisu who heard the name from me, had felt danger.

If her relationship with Shiba was known by me.

「Because Kazu-san said before, so I wish to release the Cultivating Centre. Although that will cause Kazu-san to hate me, and it will be painful but there is no choice. This was what I deserved. But if I abandoned everyone…… Because of me, then everyone will die, Tamaki-chan will also die.」

「So you lured Tamaki to my side?」

「That, luckily Tamaki-chan also fancied Kazu-san…...」

Arisu shifted her sight shyly.

I used my fingers to pinch Arisu's cheeks and pulled outwards.

「Tamaki!」

「Nn, leave it to me!」

Tamaki pinched Arisu's other cheek and pull in the other direction.

Then we let go together.

With a pat sound, Arisu's cheeks turned red.

Arisu teared with "pain".

「That will be considered your punishment, Arisu.」

Tamaki stretched and stared at Arisu.

「Even if you don't do so, I will also end up liking Kazu-san. Moreover if Arisu had talked with Kazu-san, Kazu-san would also have considered about the matter with us.」

The words that I had wanted to say, were mostly said by Tamaki.

Then again I am also at fault. And it was much worse.

For instance, even though it is a joke, I had said that I will die with Tamaki if Arisu is not around.

No matter what, that was too much.

After seeing the secret meeting between Arisu and Shiba, then imagining the worst situation is also my own fault.

Considering what had happened before, although I was in confusion, in the end it is still because my inner heart is weak.

I have to face my own weakness.

Then to win against it, I have to rely on others.

Although it is hard, but I need Arisu and Tamaki's help.

「Maa, with this, there is no more secrets between us.」

「Yes.」

「Ah, don't tell me there are some secrets?」

「Th..that……basically none.」

Arisu looked to the side while blushing.

Hey, what is going on.

Is there more.

「No, that…….there is no need to say……」

「A—ri—su—! No hiding!」

「B..but. Th..then I can only tell it to Tamaki-chan.」

Arisu and Tamaki walked to somewhere slightly further to begin their secret talks.

So lonely.

Sighing with a ha, I was lost.

The 2 of them came back very quickly. Tamaki was laughing with a gi gi.

Arisu pulled the sleeve of Tamaki's PE shirt with a half crying expression.

「That, Kazu-san, quick come and listen to this.」

「Wah——Wah——! Tamaki-chan, you lied! I have already said not to say it out!」

「Nevermind about it, Kazu-san will definitely not hate it.」

Ah, I probably understood what it is.

Or rather from seeing Arisu who had turned beet red, and using her hands to cover her mouth and yet peek over, I can probably imagine what it was about.

「That, Kazu-san. Because Arisu had wanted to do it so much with Kazu-san, so in the daytime…..」

「Mmm, okay, enough.」

I used my hands to lift up Tamaki's head, and knocked it with a pat.

「Although there shouldn't be any secrets, but I did not say you can disrespect others' privacy.」

「Mmm, I understand!」

Tamaki nodded coolly.

Arisu remained using her hands to cover her blushing face and squatted at the side.

This is too much.

Changing the topic, we begin the discussion before we leave the white room.

As to what I have to do from now on, I proposed the general idea and the 2 of them did not have any opposing view.

「Then I will raise Summoning Magic.」

Kazuhisa: Level 5 Support Magic 5/ Summon Magic 5→6 Skill Points 6→0

After completing it, I press the return button and we went back to the original place.

※

After returning to the battlefield, we began moving for the sake of hunting the orcs.

Currently the orcs are in confusion. We should defeat as many as possible.

I really want to thank the people in the high school section for providing these experience points.

Arisu and Tamaki fought together in the frontline.

I had 2 of the Fire Elementals stay by my side, and sent the 2 left to the frontlines.

Before long, Tamaki leveled up.

Level 15. With this, Tamaki will have 8 Skill points and could raise Sword Skill to Rank 7.

Tamaki: Level 15　Sword Skill 6 → 7／Physical 1　Skill Point 8→1

After defeating another 6 orcs, Arisu leveled to level 15.

It seems like the difference in experience between Arisu and Tamaki is around 120.

Arisu must have also experienced battles similar to myself.

Arisu have already raised healing magic to Rank 4 in the battles.

She must at least be able to heal Mia's arm, that must be what she had hoped.

The leftover skill points are 5.

Now she should save it, and raise Spear Skill to Rank 6 as soon as possible.

Hence we left the white room immediately.

Arisu: Level 15 Spear Skill 5／Healing Magic 4 Skill Point 5

Hence the spirits of the orcs are broken badly. The orcs are fanatically escaping.

Then, as though replacing the small fry orcs, a giant with a body that seems to melt into the darkness appeared.

The sword in his hand shone with silver light.

General Orc.

And there is a hellhound awaiting its command beside it.

There is still one more of that damn dog.

Then again, general orc, you are not around at the beginning right.

Are you waiting for the resistance force of the high school section to be destroyed?

If this time is similar to that of the middle school section……

I began to think.

In the evening, if we did not attack the main building of the middle school section, then we would have suffered the attack of the general orc in the situation whereby we have yet to level up.

Forget it, anything is fine, I shook my head.

Now what we must do, is face the strong foes in front of us.

I immediately cast《Clear Mind》on Arisu.

Straight after, the general orc roared.

This is a roar that will cause people to shiver, but it did not have any effect on the 3 of us.

Before the enemy that had once caused the entire party to have tough fight, Arisu and Tamaki looked at me calmly.

「Tamaki, take on the general orc alone. It will be fine. Arisu, restrain that hellhound.」

「Understood, Kazu-san」

「Yes, I understand.」

The general orc and hellhound attacked.

Both Arisu and I had《Resist All: Fire》.

Arisu rush towards the hellhound.

While Tamaki head towards the general orc.

It is fine even if Arisu gets burnt.

She stabbed accurately at its front paw and leave a wound.

The hellhound who gave a groan, pulled apart, and Arisu chased after it without giving it a break.

I had only used the minimum support magic, but Arisu was in a completely suppressing position with just her battle skills.

This is a battle that was more imposing than previously.

I looked from the back and it seems like the tides are turning for the better.

「Arisu, I will let the Fire Elementals support you! Cooperate.」

「Yes.」

I sent 2 Fire Elementals towards the hellhound.

As the bodies of the Fire Elementals are wrapped in flames, the flames from the hellhound is just like a gentle wind.

Although they are unable to cause harm effectively, but they are able to attract the hellhound's attention. It is enough to just use them as distractions.

Hence Arisu became more advantageous.

Tamaki and the general orc are having an intense showdown.

The general orc seems to have noticed the meaning of Tamaki wielding the silver sword, and smiled as the 2 swords clashed.

Each clash creates intensive sparks.

This is a sword dance which is enough to make one hold their breath.

Both parties gave out a strike which had their sharp cries in it, this is a struggle of presence against presence.

From the looks of it, Tamaki and the general orc's strength are similar.

But because of my support magic, even just by a bit, Tamaki's movement is better.

Then the general orc is gradually forced into a passive.

The battles on both sides ended almost at the same time.

Arisu's spear lodged itself deeply in the throat of the hellhound.

The chest of the general orc was pierced by Tamaki's silver sword.

The 2 enemies both gave out their death cries, and collapsed onto the ground before gradually disappearing.

「I won, Kazu-san! I defeated the general orc alone!」

「That's great Kazu-san! We are already so strong!」

Arisu and Tamaki turned towards me together and smiled.

The excitement of the battle cooled.

The 3 of us and the 4 familiars turned behind.

The people in the high school section stared at us blankly.

Maa, this is that.

Suddenly appearing from the side, seeming to be together with Arisu who is their trump card, and defeating the orc army which had overwhelming power, it is the situation whereby they don't know what is happening.

Among them, one person noticed me.

That person seems to be saying something under the spotlight.

Why I, the one who was bullied, am together with the people from the middle school section. He seems to be unable to understand what is going on.

And he seems to realise that our attitude is not very friendly. The students from the high school section are confused.

Then at this moment, a shout came.

「What the heck is this!」

Shiba walked out of the broken down road block and put up his shotgun, then his echo came over. (TL note: seems like the hunting rifle he had, was a shotgun type)

Shaken huh. Maybe. Shiba couldn't have moved after planning everything.

And his plans were completely destroyed after the appearance of the general orc.

Nothing can go smoothly in this world.

I experienced this personally in these 2 days.

But Shiba did not know.

He tried to control the orcs' movement like dealing against humans, and then failed.

His failure was easily covered by us effortlessly.

To him, this perhaps is a great humiliation.

Maybe he is thinking that it can't be possible that it is so different from reality.

Suddenly I realised, to people who do not act according to his wish, there will be the fear of revenge.

Because he is afraid having situations which he is unable to control, just like how I was in the past, he will completely abuse those who are outside of his calculations.

「Arisu, why are you beside that guy! Get back here!」

Arisu shook her head lightly

And held my hand tightly.

While my other hand is held by Tamaki.

After holding both of their hands, then I noticed that I am trembling.

Shit, don't tell me I am falling into panic again.

But this is different from the past.

Arisu and Tamaki are beside me.

「No. I want to fight together with Kazu-san and everyone from the Cultivating Centre.」

「Is that really a good idea, your companion's arm……」

「That…..nin…..」

Arisu looked at me in doubt.

Hmm, if you don't confirm it with your own eyes, you will be unsure.

After all who will believe in ninjas.

But there are indeed ninjas.

「An..anyway I wouldn't listen to cousin anymore! I am returning to the middle school!」

「Don't joke! You are mine! Not that trash's, hurry up and come back, Arisu!」

「Kazu-san is not trash!」

Arisu roared. She held my hand and shout with her chest out.

「Just like Kazu-san said, he liberated the Cultivating Centre. Those who survived from the middle school section are only the people from the Cultivating Centre. But because Kazu-san is around, about 30 people survived. Because of Kazu-san's commands, everyone is able to grow to the extent that we can win against the elite orcs easily. Even the general orcs are defeated, same for the hellhounds. Even as per your promise, the general orc is defeated. This is all because of Kazu-san's hard work. Other than Kazu-san, no one else can do it.」

As she was saying this, Arisu took a step forward and looked at the high school people who are dumbfounded.

「Just when you are busy crushing the other powers in the day, we went to the girls' dormitory and saved the people who are trapped inside. Then after that, we suffered an attack by about 100 orcs and we finally defeated them. In the evening at the main building of the middle school section, we defeated the general orc there! Kazu-san was the one who commanded all of these. If there is anyone who dares to belittle him, stand out, I will be your opponent!」

Suddenly it was quiet.

No one gave a sound.

Hence…… the first one to speak is……

Shiba.

「I will not admit it!」

Shiba pointed the shotgun at me while shouting.

I completely panicked.

Nearly shocked.

Was Shiba such a person who solve things by force?

He should not be such a short-sighted person.

Or is it that our actions are just that way out of expectations?

My, Arisu and Tamaki's battle must have completely overturned his plans.

I think it should be like that, I calmly considered it.

Just merely hours ago, our whole party had barely obtained victory against the general orc.

Now facing the same enemy, even if Mia is not around, we can fight easily.

But Shiba, this is also because of you taking Arisu away.

I had abandoned my life, and began training without any aim.

Then Tamaki also joined in the battles for the sake of chasing after me.

This is retribution.

Shiba's action is very logical, but he did not know that I was present at that time.

He was unable to predict my self-abandonment. Tamaki's devotion and Arisu's thoughts are not something that he could predict.

Which is now.

I had once desperately tried to kill him who did not show any openings in the past, and just as we are thinking why he is beating around the bush, he lifted his gun with a lot of openings.

This irony made me want to laugh out.

In this instant, Arisu and Tamaki had wanted to block the line of fire, but I stopped them.

「I dare you to shoot!」

I suppressed my trembling, and stood before Arisu and them. The Fire Elementals retreated to the back.

I have to end this.

Although I am coward who likes to hide behind women and tremble, but at least in the end I must come out.

「Try if your shotgun is effective against me now. I want to see if it is effective against me whose level is much higher than you, see if you can still make me submit with force. Shoot if you can!」

「I am not kidding you! I am going to shoot! I am really going to shoot!」

「Shoot!」

I roared from my diaphragm.

Shiba pulled the trigger with a cry.

This action is like in slow motion. Under the situation which I had seen everything clearly, I called out without any hesitation:

「《Reflection》!」

The bullets were reflected by the rainbow barrier that appeared before me, the bullets flew back towards Shiba, piercing through his body.

「This guy attacked Shiba! Finish him!」

The rest of the students attacked together.

Throwing, fireworks, stones.

But before this I used magic again.

「《Transposition》」

Rank 6 Summoning Magic can switch myself with another companion.

My companions naturally also includes the familiars.

The effective range is 5m for every Rank.

Now is possible for me do a swap within 30m.

This is a magic that has many uses.

Now I shall use it as an emergency escape.

I switched positions with the Fire Elemental that had retreated to the back, and

the students' attacks ended up on the Fire Elemental.

To the strong Fire Elemental, the attacks from the low leveled students are as useless as shit.

Seeing the majestic Fire Elemental, the students went into panic.

For an instant, I had wanted to send all 4 familiars in……

I shook my head.

I cannot do this.

The high school section is an important battle strength.

As to whether I hate them, I do.

I really wanted to kill them.

But if we kill so many students here, then it will be a pity.

At least we must let them able to restrain higher ranking orcs.

Then we will be able to move freely.

No matter what, counting the kids that we saved together, the people in the Cultivating Centre did not even reach 30, and we will need at least 1 more day before we can liberate the entire middle school.

And the favourite is definitely not there.

The orcs brought a portion of the students into the forest, so there must be something there.

If these fellows from the high school section continues to drag our time……

I looked coldly at Shiba.

The Shiba who was hitted by his own bullet, the Shiba who is half-dying.

「Arisu.」

I shouted.

Yes. I looked at how to reply her, and said……

「I will kill Shiba. He will directly harm the people in the Cultivating Centre. Only he is of real danger.」

「Yes.」

Arisu nodded calmly.

「I will work hard.」

「No, it is better for me to do it. Arisu, you just have to watch it.」

That's right, this has to be done by me.

This is not something that should be left to others.

Shiba lifted his body, thinking of escaping. His body suddenly disappeared.

Detection Skill huh.

So troublesome.

If I leave Shiba who is a sniper with Detection Skill and Shooting Skill alone, it will

become very troublesome.

So I have to finish it here.

I returned 2 Fire Elementals and recovered my MP.

「《Summon Iron Golem》」

Rank 6 Summoning Magic, gave birth the new strongest golem.

The iron giant that was over 3m tall walked toward the road block.

The spirits of the students are already broken, scrimping away while crying.

The ground shook violently. The road block was destroyed and Shiba's scream rang.

He was indeed hiding in the shadow of the road block

Turning towards the direction where the sound came from, I could see Shiba's figure.

The hand that was holding the shotgun was clamped by the tables, and he was panicking because he is unable to escape from it.

There is no one beside him

Everyone has fled

There is only us and Shiba who is crying continuously.

I gave an order to the Iron Golem again.

Toward Shiba who is alone, the Iron Golem swung his fist down.

There were the sounds of meat being squashed.

Finally it has ended.

My revenge has ended.

Hence we went to the white room.

Tamaki leveled up.

Ah, this.

One of my doubts also got its answer now.

We can also level up when we kill a human who is level 1 and above……

Chapter 59: For Everyone, I chose Summoning Magic

Arisu told me about Saso Shiba.

She told me everything about Shiba who was her cousin.

From the start, she was very hesitated on it, because I forcefully asked her to say it.

But I cannot not know about him.

I wish to know everything about him who I wanted to kill, hence I decided so.

「I have also said before that I was adopted. My family after adopting me, became cold to me soon. At this time, Cousin Shiba who lived nearby in a relative's house treated me like a family. He told me to become his underling,

then he will not let me become lonely. He would caress my head and hug me tightly…… By doing so, Cousin Shiba made me feel very safe.」

Ah, I see.

I understand.

This action completely fits his character.

Shiba that guy will still care for those who will become his.

Or rather he hate to become someone who will not own everything.

So those who obeys him, will also surprisingly admire him.

This is also the reason why the organisation with him as the center can work.

I disliked the organisation with him as the center.

So I gave my opinion.

In the end, I was glared at severely.

Next was just like I had said before.

「Cousin Shiba was also very trusted by my foster parents. When entering middle school, Cousin Shiba also said that if I entered the same school as him, then he will help pay for me, no matter how much it would have costed. My parents felt that if Cousin Shiba who always take care of me is around, then it will be fine. So they sent me over. But I did not rely on Cousin Shiba after I entered. I decided to work hard by myself. It is not good to consistently rely on him, that was what I thought…...」

Saying so, Arisu lowered her head.

「Nevermind, continue.」

Arisu raised her head. There are quite abit of tears in her eyes, and she looked at me with a relying expression.

「But, Kazu-san.」

「I will not hate Arisu. Definitely. So continue.」

Arisu sighed and continued speaking.

She will meet once with Shiba once a month.

Shiba seems to mind Arisu.

A quiet cousin who is cute and admires him.

A smart cousin who is obedient.

Before him, Arisu has always been an ideal cousin.

To the ideal cousin Arisu, he will also repay by being the ideal cousin.

This relationship sustained from when he was in elementary school section until the high school section.

Although it is like that, but Arisu has never been to the high school section.

Sometimes he will go to the middle school section to ask Arisu if she has any troubles, or if she wants anything.

Sometimes he will give some gifts.

This is an ideal situation.

Just looking at that, it seems to be a very good cousin relationship.

It should be only these. Arisu had avoided his dirty side.

What caused everything to change was the thing that happened in the white room last evening.

The thing after my body and Arisu's became one.

Arisu who heard the name from me, had felt danger.

If her relationship with Shiba was known by me.

「Because Kazu-san said before, so I wish to release the Cultivating Centre. Although that will cause Kazu-san to hate me, and it will be painful but there is no choice. This was what I deserved. But if I abandoned everyone…… Because of me, then everyone will die, Tamaki-chan will also die.」

「So you lured Tamaki to my side?」

「That, luckily Tamaki-chan also fancied Kazu-san…….」

Arisu shifted her sight shyly.

I used my fingers to pinch Arisu's cheeks and pulled outwards.

「Tamaki!」

「Nn, leave it to me!」

Tamaki pinched Arisu's other cheek and pull in the other direction.

Then we let go together.

With a pat sound, Arisu's cheeks turned red.

Arisu teared with "pain".

「That will be considered your punishment, Arisu.」

Tamaki stretched and stared at Arisu.

「Even if you don't do so, I will also end up liking Kazu-san. Moreover if Arisu had talked with Kazu-san, Kazu-san would also have considered about the matter with us.」

The words that I had wanted to say, were mostly said by Tamaki.

Then again I am also at fault. And it was much worse.

For instance, even though it is a joke, I had said that I will die with Tamaki if Arisu is not around.

No matter what, that was too much.

After seeing the secret meeting between Arisu and Shiba, then imagining the worst situation is also my own fault.

Considering what had happened before, although I was in confusion, in the end it is still because my inner heart is weak.

I have to face my own weakness.

Then to win against it, I have to rely on others.

Although it is hard, but I need Arisu and Tamaki's help.

「Maa, with this, there is no more secrets between us.」

「Yes.」

「Ah, don't tell me there are some secrets?」

「Th..that……basically none.」

Arisu looked to the side while blushing.

Hey, what is going on.

Is there more.

「No, that…….there is no need to say……」

「A—ri—su—! No hiding!」

「B..but. Th..then I can only tell it to Tamaki-chan.」

Arisu and Tamaki walked to somewhere slightly further to begin their secret talks.

So lonely.

Sighing with a ha, I was lost.

The 2 of them came back very quickly. Tamaki was laughing with a gi gi.

Arisu pulled the sleeve of Tamaki's PE shirt with a half crying expression.

「That, Kazu-san, quick come and listen to this.」

「Wah——Wah——! Tamaki-chan, you lied! I have already said not to say it out!」

「Nevermind about it, Kazu-san will definitely not hate it.」

Ah, I probably understood what it is.

Or rather from seeing Arisu who had turned beet red, and using her hands to cover her mouth and yet peek over, I can probably imagine what it was about.

「That, Kazu-san. Because Arisu had wanted to do it so much with Kazu-san, so in the daytime…..」

「Mmm, okay, enough.」

I used my hands to lift up Tamaki's head, and knocked it with a pat.

「Although there shouldn't be any secrets, but I did not say you can disrespect others' privacy.」

「Mmm, I understand!」

Tamaki nodded coolly.

Arisu remained using her hands to cover her blushing face and squatted at the side.

This is too much.

Changing the topic, we begin the discussion before we leave the white room.

As to what I have to do from now on, I proposed the general idea and the 2 of them did not have any opposing view.

「Then I will raise Summoning Magic.」

Kazuhisa: Level 5 Support Magic 5/ Summon Magic 5→6 Skill Points 6→0

After completing it, I press the return button and we went back to the original place.

※

After returning to the battlefield, we began moving for the sake of hunting the orcs.

Currently the orcs are in confusion. We should defeat as many as possible.

I really want to thank the people in the high school section for providing these experience points.

Arisu and Tamaki fought together in the frontline.

I had 2 of the Fire Elementals stay by my side, and sent the 2 left to the frontlines.

Before long, Tamaki leveled up.

Level 15. With this, Tamaki will have 8 Skill points and could raise Sword Skill to Rank 7.

Tamaki: Level 15　Sword Skill 6 → 7／Physical 1　Skill Point 8→1

After defeating another 6 orcs, Arisu leveled to level 15.

It seems like the difference in experience between Arisu and Tamaki is around 120.

Arisu must have also experienced battles similar to myself.

Arisu have already raised healing magic to Rank 4 in the battles.

She must at least be able to heal Mia's arm, that must be what she had hoped.

The leftover skill points are 5.

Now she should save it, and raise Spear Skill to Rank 6 as soon as possible.

Hence we left the white room immediately.

Arisu: Level 15 Spear Skill 5／Healing Magic 4 Skill Point 5

Hence the spirits of the orcs are broken badly. The orcs are fanatically escaping.

Then, as though replacing the small fry orcs, a giant with a body that seems to melt into the darkness appeared.

The sword in his hand shone with silver light.

General Orc.

And there is a hellhound awaiting its command beside it.

There is still one more of that damn dog.

Then again, general orc, you are not around at the beginning right.

Are you waiting for the resistance force of the high school section to be destroyed?

If this time is similar to that of the middle school section……

I began to think.

In the evening, if we did not attack the main building of the middle school section, then we would have suffered the attack of the general orc in the situation whereby we have yet to level up.

Forget it, anything is fine, I shook my head.

Now what we must do, is face the strong foes in front of us.

I immediately cast《Clear Mind》on Arisu.

Straight after, the general orc roared.

This is a roar that will cause people to shiver, but it did not have any effect on the 3 of us.

Before the enemy that had once caused the entire party to have tough fight, Arisu and Tamaki looked at me calmly.

「Tamaki, take on the general orc alone. It will be fine. Arisu, restrain that hellhound.」

「Understood, Kazu-san」

「Yes, I understand.」

The general orc and hellhound attacked.

Both Arisu and I had《Resist All: Fire》.

Arisu rush towards the hellhound.

While Tamaki head towards the general orc.

It is fine even if Arisu gets burnt.

She stabbed accurately at its front paw and leave a wound.

The hellhound who gave a groan, pulled apart, and Arisu chased after it without giving it a break.

I had only used the minimum support magic, but Arisu was in a completely suppressing position with just her battle skills.

This is a battle that was more imposing than previously.

I looked from the back and it seems like the tides are turning for the better.

「Arisu, I will let the Fire Elementals support you! Cooperate.」

「Yes.」

I sent 2 Fire Elementals towards the hellhound.

As the bodies of the Fire Elementals are wrapped in flames, the flames from the hellhound is just like a gentle wind.

Although they are unable to cause harm effectively, but they are able to attract the hellhound's attention. It is enough to just use them as distractions.

Hence Arisu became more advantageous.

Tamaki and the general orc are having an intense showdown.

The general orc seems to have noticed the meaning of Tamaki wielding the silver sword, and smiled as the 2 swords clashed.

Each clash creates intensive sparks.

This is a sword dance which is enough to make one hold their breath.

Both parties gave out a strike which had their sharp cries in it, this is a struggle of presence against presence.

From the looks of it, Tamaki and the general orc's strength are similar.

But because of my support magic, even just by a bit, Tamaki's movement is better.

Then the general orc is gradually forced into a passive.

The battles on both sides ended almost at the same time.

Arisu's spear lodged itself deeply in the throat of the hellhound.

The chest of the general orc was pierced by Tamaki's silver sword.

The 2 enemies both gave out their death cries, and collapsed onto the ground before gradually disappearing.

「I won, Kazu-san! I defeated the general orc alone!」

「That's great Kazu-san! We are already so strong!」

Arisu and Tamaki turned towards me together and smiled.

The excitement of the battle cooled.

The 3 of us and the 4 familiars turned behind.

The people in the high school section stared at us blankly.

Maa, this is that.

Suddenly appearing from the side, seeming to be together with Arisu who is their trump card, and defeating the orc army which had overwhelming power, it is the situation whereby they don't know what is happening.

Among them, one person noticed me.

That person seems to be saying something under the spotlight.

Why I, the one who was bullied, am together with the people from the middle school section. He seems to be unable to understand what is going on.

And he seems to realise that our attitude is not very friendly. The students from the high school section are confused.

Then at this moment, a shout came.

「What the heck is this!」

Shiba walked out of the broken down road block and put up his shotgun, then his echo came over. (TL note: seems like the hunting rifle he had, was a shotgun type)

Shaken huh. Maybe. Shiba couldn't have moved after planning everything.

And his plans were completely destroyed after the appearance of the general orc.

Nothing can go smoothly in this world.

I experienced this personally in these 2 days.

But Shiba did not know.

He tried to control the orcs' movement like dealing against humans, and then failed.

His failure was easily covered by us effortlessly.

To him, this perhaps is a great humiliation.

Maybe he is thinking that it can't be possible that it is so different from reality.

Suddenly I realised, to people who do not act according to his wish, there will be the fear of revenge.

Because he is afraid having situations which he is unable to control, just like how I was in the past, he will completely abuse those who are outside of his calculations.

「Arisu, why are you beside that guy! Get back here!」

Arisu shook her head lightly

And held my hand tightly.

While my other hand is held by Tamaki.

After holding both of their hands, then I noticed that I am trembling.

Shit, don't tell me I am falling into panic again.

But this is different from the past.

Arisu and Tamaki are beside me.

「No. I want to fight together with Kazu-san and everyone from the Cultivating

Centre.」

「Is that really a good idea, your companion's arm……」

「That…..nin…..」

Arisu looked at me in doubt.

Hmm, if you don't confirm it with your own eyes, you will be unsure.

After all who will believe in ninjas.

But there are indeed ninjas.

「An..anyway I wouldn't listen to cousin anymore! I am returning to the middle school!」

「Don't joke! You are mine! Not that trash's, hurry up and come back, Arisu!」

「Kazu-san is not trash!」

Arisu roared. She held my hand and shout with her chest out.

「Just like Kazu-san said, he liberated the Cultivating Centre. Those who survived from the middle school section are only the people from the Cultivating Centre. But because Kazu-san is around, about 30 people survived. Because of Kazu-san's commands, everyone is able to grow to the extent that we can win against the elite orcs easily. Even the general orcs are defeated, same for the hellhounds. Even as per your promise, the general orc is defeated. This is all because of Kazu-san's hard work. Other than Kazu-san, no one else can do it.」

As she was saying this, Arisu took a step forward and looked at the high school people who are dumbfounded.

「Just when you are busy crushing the other powers in the day, we went to the girls' dormitory and saved the people who are trapped inside. Then after that, we suffered an attack by about 100 orcs and we finally defeated them. In the evening at the main building of the middle school section, we defeated the general orc there! Kazu-san was the one who commanded all of these. If there is anyone who dares to belittle him, stand out, I will be your opponent!」

Suddenly it was quiet.

No one gave a sound.

Hence…… the first one to speak is……

Shiba.

「I will not admit it!」

Shiba pointed the shotgun at me while shouting.

I completely panicked.

Nearly shocked.

Was Shiba such a person who solve things by force?

He should not be such a short-sighted person.

Or is it that our actions are just that way out of expectations?

My, Arisu and Tamaki's battle must have completely overturned his plans.

I think it should be like that, I calmly considered it.

Just merely hours ago, our whole party had barely obtained victory against the

general orc.

Now facing the same enemy, even if Mia is not around, we can fight easily.

But Shiba, this is also because of you taking Arisu away.

I had abandoned my life, and began training without any aim.

Then Tamaki also joined in the battles for the sake of chasing after me.

This is retribution.

Shiba's action is very logical, but he did not know that I was present at that time.

He was unable to predict my self-abandonment. Tamaki's devotion and Arisu's thoughts are not something that he could predict.

Which is now.

I had once desperately tried to kill him who did not show any openings in the past, and just as we are thinking why he is beating around the bush, he lifted his gun with a lot of openings.

This irony made me want to laugh out.

In this instant, Arisu and Tamaki had wanted to block the line of fire, but I stopped them.

「I dare you to shoot!」

I suppressed my trembling, and stood before Arisu and them. The Fire Elementals retreated to the back.

I have to end this.

Although I am coward who likes to hide behind women and tremble, but at least in the end I must come out.

「Try if your shotgun is effective against me now. I want to see if it is effective against me whose level is much higher than you, see if you can still make me submit with force. Shoot if you can!」

「I am not kidding you! I am going to shoot! I am really going to shoot!」

「Shoot!」

I roared from my diaphragm.

Shiba pulled the trigger with a cry.

This action is like in slow motion. Under the situation which I had seen everything clearly, I called out without any hesitation:

「《Reflection》!」

The bullets were reflected by the rainbow barrier that appeared before me, the bullets flew back towards Shiba, piercing through his body.

「This guy attacked Shiba! Finish him!」

The rest of the students attacked together.

Throwing, fireworks, stones.

But before this I used magic again.

「《Transposition》」

Rank 6 Summoning Magic can switch myself with another companion.

My companions naturally also includes the familiars.

The effective range is 5m for every Rank.

Now is possible for me do a swap within 30m.

This is a magic that has many uses.

Now I shall use it as an emergency escape.

I switched positions with the Fire Elemental that had retreated to the back, and the students' attacks ended up on the Fire Elemental.

To the strong Fire Elemental, the attacks from the low leveled students are as useless as shit.

Seeing the majestic Fire Elemental, the students went into panic.

For an instant, I had wanted to send all 4 familiars in……

I shook my head.

I cannot do this.

The high school section is an important battle strength.

As to whether I hate them, I do.

I really wanted to kill them.

But if we kill so many students here, then it will be a pity.

At least we must let them able to restrain higher ranking orcs.

Then we will be able to move freely.

No matter what, counting the kids that we saved together, the people in the Cultivating Centre did not even reach 30, and we will need at least 1 more day before we can liberate the entire middle school.

And the favourite is definitely not there.

The orcs brought a portion of the students into the forest, so there must be something there.

If these fellows from the high school section continues to drag our time……

I looked coldly at Shiba.

The Shiba who was hitted by his own bullet, the Shiba who is half-dying.

「Arisu.」

I shouted.

Yes. I looked at how to reply her, and said……

「I will kill Shiba. He will directly harm the people in the Cultivating Centre. Only he is of real danger.」

「Yes.」

Arisu nodded calmly.

「I will work hard.」

「No, it is better for me to do it. Arisu, you just have to watch it.」

That's right, this has to be done by me.

This is not something that should be left to others.

Shiba lifted his body, thinking of escaping. His body suddenly disappeared.

Detection Skill huh.

So troublesome.

If I leave Shiba who is a sniper with Detection Skill and Shooting Skill alone, it will become very troublesome.

So I have to finish it here.

I returned 2 Fire Elementals and recovered my MP.

「《Summon Iron Golem》」

Rank 6 Summoning Magic, gave birth the new strongest golem.

The iron giant that was over 3m tall walked toward the road block.

The spirits of the students are already broken, scrimping away while crying.

The ground shook violently. The road block was destroyed and Shiba's scream rang.

He was indeed hiding in the shadow of the road block

Turning towards the direction where the sound came from, I could see Shiba's figure.

The hand that was holding the shotgun was clamped by the tables, and he was panicking because he is unable to escape from it.

There is no one beside him

Everyone has fled

There is only us and Shiba who is crying continuously.

I gave an order to the Iron Golem again.

Toward Shiba who is alone, the Iron Golem swung his fist down.

There were the sounds of meat being squashed.

Finally it has ended.

My revenge has ended.

Hence we went to the white room.

Tamaki leveled up.

Ah, this.

One of my doubts also got its answer now.

We can also level up when we kill a human who is level 1 and above…...

Chapter 60: The End of the Second Day

BIFMSMTK Volume 3 Chapter 60

Chapter 60: The End of the Second Day
Translated @ www.avertranslation.org
Shiba died.

I killed him myself.

Thinking about it did not bring about much emotions.

No intention of any murder.

It is just, ah, it has finally ended, that kind of sigh.

I have only done what I needed to do.

I had too strong a blow during the day when my companion died.

Shimoyamada Akane-san.

The girl who trusted me, and died for me.

As I thought about her, so as to not let anymore people become sacrifices like her, I realised that I can be as heartless as possible.

For the sake of protecting the Cultivating Centre, killing Shiba is a must.

Mysteriously, this feeling is much stronger than the hatred towards Shiba.

In my heart, compared to the things that happened until now, the things that happened in these 2 days are much more important.

At least not counting the panic when Arisu was taken away.

As to whether this is good or bad, I am still unclear about it.

I do not know why I am happy.

Compared to hating Shiba, although it is not as serious but I am still happy about the me who is more willing to reflect about Shimoyamada Akane-san's death.

I changed. Or should I say, this is the real me.

Although I do not understand it too much, but the current me is better, that was what I thought.

We did not have anything that we needed to do in the white room.

We returned very quickly to the original place.

Tamaki: Level 16　Sword Skill 7／Physical 1　Skill Point 3

Good, the other students ran away.

Perhaps there are somebody in the boys' dormitory who are looking towards us, and because of the glare by the light, we just couldn't see them.

With this degree of brightness,《Night Sight》is not effective anymore.

Forget it. I gave Arisu and the others the order, and began gathering the gems.

Almost all of them were defeated by us.

So we will take everything.

If we left some, and if they are used by the people in the high school section to strengthen themselves, then it will be bad.

As long as the high school section can oppose the orcs suitably, then it is fine.

In the process, if their number decreases by a bit, then it will be even better.

And just in case, we have to take Shiba's gun away.

Since replicating bullets is possible, perhaps this thing may be of use.

After asking Arisu, his bag and the pouch at Shiba's waist both contains bullets so they are both taken.

「Then again where did Shiba get the gun.」

「It seems like a board director had secretly brought it in. He had bragged that he had stolen it before to play with it.」

I see, indeed, this entire mountain is owned by the school.

If the students entered inside, then even if they use the gun illegally, it would not be exposed.

There are still about a hundred bullets. He should have used quite a bit but yet there are still so many left.

Just how much did this director hid……

Forget it, if this director is not around, it probably means that he is dead. Or he is just not around.

No matter what, there is nobody that we could ask.

After we collected the gems, the 3 of us left the courtyard in front of the 1st boys' dormitory without looking back.

After a distance, Tamaki stopped.

「What is this fellow! Freak! Nnn! Nnn!」

This girl's emotion is really high.

After what happened just now, Arisu and I were both quiet, perhaps she did this in consideration of us.

And she even gave a hehehe laughter.

Arisu kept knocking my hand and looked towards me with tears in her eyes.

Ah it's that, you do not know it yet.

「It's me degozaru!」

The man dressed in ninja wear appeared before us from behind the trees.

Tamaki stopped Arisu who panicked and tried to use her spear to attack.

The 2 of us explained who he is.

「Ah…… Mia-chan's brother huh.」

「That's me degozaru. This is Mia's arm which was retrieved degozaru.」

Yuki-senpai gave Mia's left arm back to me.

Although it is very light, but Senpai treated it with a lot of respect and as though it is very fragile.

Senpai retreated a step and bowed deeply.

His greetings are really polite.

No, that's not it, he must…...

「Mia will depend on you degozaru.」

「Yuki-senpai, you are not coming to the Cultivating Centre?」

Even if it is futile, I have to try.

But the guy dressed as a ninja shook his head in rejection.

He had said it before, he is busy contacting all the evacuation areas.

To able to find him who has Rank 3 Detection Skill, probably only Tamaki or the General Orc could do it.

But…… Tamaki still looked at him worriedly.

「I have a wish degozaru.」

「What is it? Is it about Mia?」

「I wish to have that hunting rifle degozaru. With that, we can raise the people who wish to fight in the high school section to level 1 degozaru.」

I see, I had thought so.

As long as you learn how to shoot, then you can kill the orcs easily.

「You know how to shoot?」

「I learnt it secretly degozaru. I can teach the safe way of shooting degozaru.」

A ninja is really incredible.

No, it should be that Yuki-senpai is incredible.

The problem is, the people who he used the hunting rifle to strengthen to level 1, will they become our enemies.

「I have a condition.」

「What is it degozaru.」

「If Yuki-senpai wants to increase the students who are level 1, then you have to deal with those students.」

Yuki-senpai crossed his arms and sighed.

Is this something he has to be troubled over.

I feel that he has the brains, sense and ability to be a leader.

With this, to our Cultivating Centre, if it is the organisation that Yuki-senpai leads, we could ally ourselves with ease.

To me, I do not have much opinions towards the normal students in the high school section.

Yuki-senpai seems to have some concern..

「A ninja is a person of patience degozaru.」(TL note: Tbh I don't understand this)

「Is it just because of that!」

「No, but from an objective viewpoint, it is also because I have something that I wish from you degozaru.」

It seems like he could understand the situation properly.

As expected of him, but……

「I have no choice degozaru. Since you said so, I better take the role of leading the organisation. Is this fine.」

「Mmm, if Yuki-senpai said so, then I will have a peace of mind.」

I smiled and handed the hunting rifle and bullets to him.

「Then tomorrow, I will try to make the high school section more normal degozaru.」

「Is it the people other than the boys' dormitory?」

The ninja nodded.

「Perhaps some survivors will bring their people to the Cultivating Centre, then……」

「Yes, of course we will welcome them.」

We shook hands with Yuki-senpai.

Then we separated. The 3 of us walked towards the middle school section.

So tired.

After we returned to the Cultivating Centre, it is already past 11pm.

We walked while dragging our exhausted bodies.

As we raise our head and look, the 2 moons seemed to be bigger than yesterday's.

It seems like it is going to rush out.

Although I don't know about the months of this world, but if this continues, it will only be a few more days until full moon.

Back to the Cultivating Centre.

The girls who are on watch, informed loudly that we are back.

I landed on Shiki-san's body.

Hmm, this time it is all my fault, so I will accept my beating obediently.

Then Shiki-san hugged me tightly.

「That, Shiki-san, contact with man……. Is it fine?」

「Of course it is impossible, but I am worried about you.」

Shiki-san cried.

It seems like she is really concerned about us.

I did something bad.

Maa, perhaps Shiki-san is someone who is very calculating.

Just by her actions, the girls in the Cultivating Centre are in a very happy

atmosphere from our return.

Mia came out.

I let her see her arm.

Mia strolled out to my side and gave an angry expression and said “okay, give up and shut your eyes.”

I closed my eyes.

My lips were kissed.

Opening my eyes, Mia raised her head and smiled at me.

「Welcome back.」

「Ah, I am back」

Arisu attached back Mia’s arm immediately.

Although I had wanted to say many things, but I decided to say it tomorrow.

Then I found Shiki-san and told her about what happened at the high school section.

「I see, indeed it became like that.」

「You probably predicted it right?」

「Yes. Including the worst case scenario, which is the possibility of you disappearing due to going crazy. If that happened, what I should do etc, it is quite troubling.」

I really did something bad.

And after Arisu and I disappeared, Shiki-san formed another party with Mia as the center and assaulted the main building of the middle school section again.

Clearing the top floor, and saving 2 more girls who are trapped by the orcs.

In the main school building, a total of 11 person including Sumire, were found.

The total number count in our Cultivating Centre has risen to 31 people.

Even so, there are still more people in the high school section……

「Now they can do what they want. Just solve the problems in front one by one. Since you did not wipe out the entire high school section, then that will buy us some time to rest. That's good.」

While Shiki-san said it, she revealed an evil smile. Indeed, she is a talented commander.

※

I told Mia about her brother.

Mia gave a very irritated expression.

「That stupid brother.」

Mia who was not good at expressing her emotion, showed an emotion which could not be seen normally, and became red with anger.

Because Mia being like this is too strange, so we laughed.

「Ah ah, this is a scandal……」

「Indeed there are many places to be shocked at.」

「But Mia shook and smile that it was good that he survived.」

With a very shy smile.

※

Finally we could bathe.

The few who woke up got the generator and made some hot water.

The few of us went in without hesitation.

All 3 of us.

Arisu, Tamaki and me.

As a mention, the one who suggested it was Shiki-san.

「You can flirt properly. If the bonds between all of you thickens, then it will be more convenient for me.」

Hence for the sake of flirting, the 3 of us bathe together……

As my whole body is soaked in hot water, my conscious gradually fade.

Ah, isn’t this bad!

I am lying on the cold ground of the bathroom.

Ah, so comfortable.

Because I am too tired, I am unable to control my body properly.

Hence my lower half also can't be controlled.

When Arisu and Tamaki had tried to carry me out, they were bathed in my thing. (TL note: you know what it is *smirk. Had a hard time trying to figure out what it was)

Ah, I have accumulated too much.

Ah ah, this is so embarrassing.

「That's great, Kazu-san」, I could hear Tamaki's laughter.

「Today we both have been seen by Kazu-san in our worst parts. Finally we could see Kazu-san in a slightly bad state. With this, we are even.」

No no, Tamaki.

I have already let you see my worst side……

This girl, don't tell me you forgot what I said when I was on your bosom.

While considering these, my conscious gradually fade……

※

When I opened my eyes, I am lying on the bed.

This is a room whereby the moonlight can enter, I am sleeping in the middle of the king-size bed.

On my left and right, I could hear the sounds of Arisu and Tamaki sleeping.

I sat up, and fearfully looked into my underwear.

It’s already wiped clean.

Who wiped it……

No no, it’s fine.

This is all my fault.

I sighed and then raised my head to look through the window.

The greenish white light of the 2 moons gradually enter the bedroom.

This is the second night in this other world.

That’s right, this is only the second day since we came to this world.

It is a really long day.

The second day in this world has finally ended.

I collapsed onto the bed again.

I had wanted to wake Arisu and Tamaki up, and cuddle properly this time……

But waking these 2 who are deep asleep, makes one hesitate.

And my body is also exhausted.

Although I slept for awhile, the majority of my fatigue still remains.

Before long, my conscious fell into the darkness again.

Finally the long 2nd day ended.

Then……

The earth-shaking 3rd day begins.

Translated @ www.avertranslation.org

Chapter 61: The Beginning of the Third Day

BIFMSMTK Volume 3 Chapter 61

Translated @ www.avertranslation.org

The 3rd day in the other world began from the sound of the glass breaking.

Waking up in reflex, I looked at the glass window in the room.

The glass is fine.

It seems like it is not in this room.

I walked to the window and opened it to put my body outside.

The glass in the room beside mine was broken.

There seems to be something moving inside it.

A monster probably.

Although I do not know what happened, but I have to hurry up and confirm it.

「《Summon Elemental: Wind》」

A translucent naked female appeared beside me.

Arisu also got up.

Just like when she got to bed, she was wearing gym clothes as her pajamas.

「What?」

「Probably an enemy.」

After Arisu was stunned for a moment, she hurriedly and picked up her iron spear that was on the side of the wall.

「Hmm—mmm~, what's going on?」

Tamaki is still half asleep, so I will let her stay here.

「Tamaki, remain here. But at least pick up your sword.」

「Understood——」

The half-asleep Tamaki waved goodbye to us with her hand. I had the Wind Elemental act as the shield and walked into the corridor on level 3.

On the other side of the corridor, we could see Shiki-san who was dressed in gym clothes.

I ordered Shiki-san to remain there for standby.

From the room at the side, we could hear sounds of seemingly something knocking against the wall with a dong dong.

「I will open the door. The Wind Elemental will enter first, and Arisu will follow behind.」

「Yes.」

When facing unknown enemies, we will use the familiars as the shield, I guess that will be the direction of our battle plans.

I turned the doorknob and pulled open the door.

The Wind Elemental rushed in. Arisu also followed immediately.

「It's a bee!」Arisu shouted.

「Kazu-san, it's a bee-shaped monster!」

I look into the room. The Wind Elemental is struggling against a creature with black and yellow stripes.

The size is about the same as a human.

Just like Arisu said, its shape is like a bee of the insects.

This.. this is a super big bee.

The compound eyes which are about the size of a human's palm flashes with a red light that causes discomfort.

This thing flew in the air, with its wing giving the uncomfortable woo woo sound.

As the giant bee stop, it bended its lower body and extended its lower body, shooting out a sharp needle

The needle that was thicker than an antenna flew, and stabbed into the body of the Wind Elemental.

The face of translucent female twisted in pain.

But the loyal familiar did not bother about the needle that was stabbed into its abdomen, and used both her hands to hug the body of the giant bee.

Forcefully sealing the other party's movement.

At this time, Arisu rushed in.

The stab from the iron spear pierced through compounded eyes of the giant bee, and it sprayed blue fluids around its surroundings.

The giant bee fell onto the ground, and cutting metal-like shrill was heard.

After a few shivers, finally……

Its body faded and disappeared like smoke.

Just like the orcs.

Indeed this fellow is a monster just like the orcs.

After the giant bee disappeared, there are 3 red gems that fell onto the ground.

The time is just nice past 6am, the sun has risen not long ago.

But even so our waking up time was later than yesterday's……

When we slept last night, it was about midnight.

I am still abit sleepy.

But I can't say such words.

Shiki-san and I entered a small room, and had Arisu and the others guard the surroundings.

From what Mia who went to the rooftop said, the forest in the northeast direction had a few similar bees flying around.

The northeast forest of the middle school.

2 days ago, when the entire mountain is transported to the other world, that is where the orcs came from.

What is hiding in the forest.

In the 3rd day, what does it mean with the attack of the new monster.

「I had wanted to give you this today in the morning, as the wedding gift for your newly-married life with Arisu-chan and Tamaki-chan.」

「Oi!」

「Really. Yesterday your burdens are root cause. I don't regret about the decision about attacking the main school building. But it is my mistake for not seeing that you are much closer to your limits than you seemed to be.」

Shiki-san said so and looked at me from the bed while crossing her legs.

「Or is it that 2 is not enough, and that it will be better if Mia-chan to enter as well?」

「Don't joke.」

「You do not have obsessive disorder right. If your mental state is not stable, then I can't create strategies properly.」

Regarding this, it is all my problem.

Seeing my expression twisted in bitter, Shiki nodded her head in satisfaction.

「It is good if you can reflect on it. No matter what, now we can't seem to let you relax.」

「Yes, that bee…….」

「Is from the north side of the mountain, which is the point where the orcs came out from. 」

Shiki-san and I faced each other and nodded.

Our predictions are the same.

Without any surprise, the thoughts of the commanders being the same will only bring joy.

The real problem would be the aligning the thoughts while the situation getting worse.

「Kazu-san, Although I have to give you more burdens……」

「No matter what, there is the need to search for the students who are taken away. As long as we cannot confirm their survival, the situation is still continuing, then we have to end it before it gets any worse.」

That's right, until yesterday, I have experienced it myself.

Being depressed doesn't help.

The only way to survive is to keep on attacking.

「Then again the strength of that bee…… Kazu-san, how do you feel about it during actual combat?」

「Arisu defeated it in a blow…… Though she said that, it feels that it is not as strong as an elite orc, but it is above that of a normal orc in strength.」

「Giant Wasp is level 2 or 3, while skill is Wasp 2 or 3, how does that sound.」

So the name of that bee is Giant Wasp.

No objection. Then so be it.

「I feel that is probably level 3. The Rank 5 Wind Elemental is about the same in strength as it.」

「If the guess is correct, then the experience point is about 3 orcs, but its strength does not compare.」

「And it flies in the sky. If there is a weakness, then it will be different.」

「Weakness……」

Shiki-san placed her hand at her mouth and begin thinking deeply.

「The bugs in games are mostly afraid of fire.」

「You gamer!」

「That's right, but things that this gamer's mind has considered are mostly shortcut, which is a big problem.」

Shiki-san smiled.

Since it is true, I sighed.

「It is a pity that Mia can't use fire magic.」

「Yesterday there is a girl who raised Fire Magic to Rank 2. Let her try.」

Oh is that so, I nodded

With this, perhaps we can let Tamaki be the guard and head to the forest once.

「The kids that we saved yesterday, a few of them wanted to fight. So there is the need for the preparation to help them increase to level 1…… Attacking the north side now is not a good idea.」

「There is the need to strengthen those kids' gym clothes and weapon with《Hard Armour》and《Hard Weapon》」

Then I also briefly explained the magic that was newly learnt.

Especially the Rank 4 Summon Magic《Summon Weapon》and Rank 5《Summon Armour》.

These are the magics that can summon a certain weapon or armour.

The effect is permanent.

But the types of weapons and armours are slightly little.

The weapons summoned are long sword, long spear, pole, bow, 20 arrows etc, if you increase arrows, then there are 12 types.

For summoned armour, there are leather based to metal based, including shield, there are 7 types.

But the size can be chosen.

For example, it is possible to give the petite sized Mia a metal based armour.

But if Mia wears such a heavy armour, she probably would not be able to move a step.

But if she has physical skill, then she will probably be able to wear it with ease.

No, we could let Mia learn Shield Skill, and hold a large shield.

Or we can have a formation with Tamaki holding a shield based on the situation, then have Arisu or Mia attack from behind.

Other than that, there is a magic worth noting.

Rank 6 Summon Magic,《Summon Circle》.

This is a magic that needs prior preparations.

First it is the formation that is used as the base point.

The place can be anyway, for instance we could draw a formation on the floor in a room of the Cultivating Centre, and put in a human or object inside it.

Then I will leave and use《Summon Circle》.

Then all the object and people inside the formation at the base point will appear before me.

This is that kind of transfer magic.

The range of the base formation is 3m.

If we use it properly, it is possible for us to set a bomb in front of the enemy's building.

The premise is that we have a bomb.

We could also put supplies inside, and summon it during the appropriate times.

Actually, the best use is the transfer of personnels.

Even so, since there are no communication device like and phones, we could only transfer things according to time.

And we could set at most 2 base points.

One will be at the Cultivating Centre, the other we should use it as the situation requires.

「This is a magic that makes one eager to try out.」

「Ah ah. Perhaps we can have a method of me flying up the cliff then begin the summoning.」

「Currently there are no ways to fly…… Ah, Kazu-san your Summon Magic is Rank 6. So you can summon griffons.」

Indeed she is Shiki-san.

She remembered the magic for all the skills.

《Summon Griffon》exists in the magics for Rank 6 Summon Magic.

Although I haven't use it before, but it seem to be able to summon out a huge vulture-like familiar for my control.

The fact that we can ride on this griffon creature to fly has already been confirmed.

Although it is abit excessive, but other than this method of flying, there are 3 more methods under Rank 6.

First is the Rank 6 Support Magic《Wing》.

This is a magic that will cause angel wings to grow out from your back, you can use them like hands to dance in the sky.

The effective time is 20-30mins per Rank, which is very long.

But moving the wing uses considerable energy.

Then it is Rank 4 Wind Magic《Fly》.

You can float in the air based on your willpower.

And can move up, down, left, right freely.

The effective time is 2-3mins per Rank.

The effective time is short but at the same time it is convenient.

The Rank that you learn it, is lower than《Summon Griffon》and《Wing》by 2 Ranks.

And there is still Rank 5《Wind Walk》of the same Wind Magic.

This is a magic that can let you walk in the air like there is a ground.

For people who are not used to flying, this may be more practical.

The effective time of《Wind Walk》is the same as《Wing》of Support Magic, 20-30mins for each Rank.

Both are Wind Magic, but the uses can be separated.

No, because it is Wind Magic, so there should be a few methods for flying.

Although it is excessive, but a few of the combat familiars can fly too.

Like Wind Elemental is forever floating in the air.

Same for the crows.

There are many ways of flying.

So as to say, there should be the need to fly from now on.

If you considered it from a game's point of view.

Then our main party just have to raise our Ranks then we can obtain all these methods of flying.

We will choose which magic to use based on the situations.

But the current problem is, with the giant wasp as our foe, we should also be able to fly to gain advantage.

「What level is Mia at currently?」

「Level 10. I had her save her skill points, so there should be 4.」

Should we use these 4 point to increase to Rank 4 Wind Magic?

Or should we increase Earth Magic, and obtain stronger attacking magic as our priority.

No, this is hard.

「Then how about adding Mia-chan to Tamaki-chan as an experimental intercept party. If she feels that there is a need, then she can just increase Wind Magic then.」

Well I shall not bother with the naming, but this is probably the best method……
I think.

The gut feeling of Mia as a gamer is trustworthy.

Compared to my casual thought, she may have better conclusions.

「Hmm, then we will do it like this.」

I nodded.

Just like this, the 3rd day in this other world began in a panic.

Translated @ www.avertranslation.org

Chapter 62: Attacking Separately

BIFMSMTK Volume 3 Chapter 62

In the end we split into 3 parties.

Tamaki and Mia with 2 other students who can use Fire Magic, formed the Giant Wasp interception party.

Arisu and Shiki-san and a few guards formed the team to level the new people to level 1.

The rest remained at the Cultivating Centre to protect it with me.

Though I said so, my main job is to use《Summon Weapons》and《Summon Armour》of
Summon Magic and use《Hard Weapon》and《Hard Armour》to strengthen my companions' combat power.

And to use the resting time to recover my MP.

「Since the enemies that can fly are here, actually I really feel like training up people who could use bows…… but it seems like we do not have the time.」

That was what Shiki-san said.

Hence I had to summon out a lot of throwing spears.

Throwing a spear belongs to Spear Skill.

The javelins summoned using Rank 4《Summon Weapons》is better than the

orcs', and the distance they flew is not bad.

If they throw it with all their might, it can even reach the top of the trees.

And with《Hard Weapon》, it should be very effective against the giant wasps.

Though I said it, just summoning 10 javelins and adding《Hard Weapon》on them will use 80MP.

Now I am level 18, so recovering so many MP requires about 45 mins of rest.

But that is not all, I still have to add《Hard Armour》on everyone's gym clothes.

And prepare other armours. Especially for those who are heading to the frontlines……

After doing a bit of the work, it is time for breakfast.

Using the electricity from the generator, the cooking society prepared hot rice and miso soup.

They added dashi so it is very delicious. (TL note: dashi = japanese stock for soup)

Then after that, everyone headed out.

I gave the large shield to Tamaki who came to the lounge after getting dressed.

This is a giant type of shield which can cover the whole body, called Tower Shield

「Tamaki, take this. When the giant wasp shoot their stingers, you can use this to protect everyone.」

「Wow, what a big shield…… Should I learn Shield Skill?」

「No need to, test if you can use it. Since this is just a test, Tamaki who has Physical 1 is the most suitable to do so.」

While saying, I saw Mia who was hugging her arm when Tamaki answered with a “Mmm”

After a night, the arm that was attached back for Mia does not seem to have any problem.

Seems like we can relax.

Mia understood games very well.

No, although in reality we are left at the side, but her gamer thoughts are still very reliable.

We could get many ideas and hints from them.

「Kazu-san, this shield is not made of wood.」

Mia knocked on the Tower Shield and raised her head to look at me.

「But it is still quite light. Then this kind of material should be fine. And I added《Hard Armour》, so it should be able to guard against the stingers.」

「Mm, so we will hide behind to release Fire Magic.」

「Then we will follow this. Mia, I will depend on you to lead everyone.」

Mia nodded strongly with a “Mmm”.

「Leave it to me」

While Tamaki tilted her head and said “ah, isn’t Kazu-san anticipating my

leadership ability?”

No no, that, mm.

「Tamaki is rash and gets carried away easily, so she is not suitable as a leader.」

Ah, Mia is really straightforward.

Tamaki became down in an instant.

Hence I had to console her immediately.

「There is no need, Kazu-san. I understand it myself.」

「Tamaki……」

「Keeping work and private separated is the noble part of Kazu-san.」

Tamaki raised her head and smiled lively.

Not being down is also considered as one of her good points.

I scratched the back of my head and smiled bitterly.

「Yes, if you are biased on such stuff, then you may kill someone.」

Until now, in these 2 days, I have realised this point clearly.

To the extent that I hated myself.

Today I have to do it better than yesterday.

On the other side, the party that has Arisu and Shiki-san as the core, was very quiet.

There are 6 level 0 students, including the 2 spear-user girls that had been guards before, along with the 2 of them.

Although the total is about 10 people, but they set off from the lounge with alot of discipline.

「Ah, Arisu.」

I called out to her without thinking.

Currently Arisu is holding a javelin that I summoned in her left hand.

That is the counter measure against the giant wasps.

The rest of the girls, took the remaining 9 javelins.

This javelins could be used to kill the orcs, and just in case, they could also be handed over to Arisu and the others for dealing against the giant wasps. This is that kind of plan.

「What is it, Kazu-san?」

「That……」

I turned my sight to Shiki-san who was beside with a troubled look.

Shiki-san smiled and said something to Arisu beside her ears.

Arisu mumbled with an “ah”, and ran to my side.

She stopped before me with her hands behind her, and slightly leaning her body to the side, and looked at me with a face full of smiles.

「That, I am heading out, Kazu-san.」

「Take care Arisu…… Be careful.」

「Yes. Please relax. I wouldn't disappear like that again. So, that.」

「Hmm, I believe you.」

Shiki-san who was behind Arisu, is smiling now.

My thoughts of whether if she will disappear just like that, when I saw Arisu's figure that is about to leave, was completely seen through by Shiki-san.

Really, this irritating girl.

But forget it.

Arisu quickly kissed my cheek.

We look at each other for a short moment.

「Then.」

「Okay then. 」

I know that everyone in the surrounding who said this passionate scene will have a bitter smile that has "what should I do with you two" in it.

Tamaki and Mia too.

So troubling, although it is kind of bad to Tamaki…… Hmm, really uneasy about it.

Although it is troubling, all of you can just laugh.

I have already decided to accept myself who is like this.

No matter how embarrassing or how ugly I will seem, I have decide to continue on my chosen path.

That is the path where Arisu, Tamaki and everyone in the Cultivating Centre will move forward together.

Arisu and Tamaki will heal my broken inner heart.

Everyone from the Cultivating Centre warmly welcome us who had disappeared.

They will not betray me.

As for what happened yesterday night, they have already told me in their own way.

So I will move forward together with them.

Arisu and Shiki-san set off first.

Tamaki and Mia had moved out first before turning back to me again…… they ran back.

「What is it, Tamaki, Mia.」

「Indeed Kazu-san, I want it too.」

「Mmm.」

Tamaki and Mia kissed my 2 cheeks and ran off to the entrance.

Then waved at me before leaving.

The rest of the girls gave me an ah ah expression while looking at me.

I lowered my head in apology to them.

「Seems like the person also realised that this is a big problem in ethics.」

「Regarding this, I wish to hear about it. About what happened yesterday.」

Some girl came over for a conversation.

I had thought who it was, when I took a look, it was a girl called Suginomiya Sumire.

A common friend of Arisu and Tamaki.

She is a slightly plump girl, and her hair had reached her chest, with a frameless glasses.

From a look, it makes one think that she is a literature girl and in actuality she is a frequent guest of the library.

Then it is normal for her to be close with Arisu.

As for Tamaki…… Maa, as long as you can give Tamaki a good impression then it will be fine.

From her point of view, I am a person who became the lover of both her good friends at the same time.

It felt that I have became the bad guy.

From an objective point, it can’t be helped if I am targeted.

Sumire laughed bitterly.

At least it seems to me that she does not have any ill intentions.

「Kazu-san. You are acting just like the hero in the story. I feel that you will be better if you are slightly more positive and confident.」

「The hero in the story huh?」

This time, it was me who laughed bitterly.

If she said what I was like yesterday, she probably would not have said so.

Struggling desperately, then in the end, because of some misunderstanding, then abandoning everything and escaping.

No matter what, such a person can't be called a hero.

「Even so, you are still back. And with Arisu and Tamaki.」

「Tamaki grabbed me by the neck and told me to just save Arisu.」

「Then that proves that you 3 are inseparable. Maybe if you include Mia, then it will be 4.」

Sumire said while hiding her laughter.

「Since Arisu and Tamaki loves you, then I can only give my well wishes. I hope that they can become happy.」

「Is that so.」

「As for the others, I don't know about that. But that is what I feel.」

That was what Sumire said.

A confident reply that was unlike her jittery self yesterday.

Hmm, with their relations, she should have know something that the others don't.

No, if you considered what was said yesterday, then it would have been so.

Arisu is connected to Tamaki is some ways.

Both of them have some careless parts, but when it is at the crucial moments then they will both consider the other party.

I feel that when Arisu betrayed us, that was what Tamaki thought.

No matter what happens, Tamaki will always believe in Arisu.

In the end, Tamaki woke me up.

I am slightly envious.

I do not have friends that I can trust like that.

Until now, I have always been betrayed.

So I am especially envious of the bonds between them.

Sumire lowered her head.

「Perhaps I am over worrying, then Arisu and Tamaki will depend on you.」

Saying, she smiled.

BIFMSMTK Volume 3 Chapter 63

Chapter 63: The Leftover Members

As Shiki-san said, currently there are 31 students who are using the Cultivating Centre as a stronghold.

Among those, including Arisu and I, there are about 10 people who belong to the 1st day group, and the rest of the 21 people are those that we saved yesterday.

Majority of them suffered intense treatment under the orcs.

After saving them, Arisu had used《Cure Mind》to heal their hearts.

After a night, the majority of the fatigue in the students are all gone.

And among them 12 new recruits displayed strong intents to fight.

Including Nagatsuki Sakura from yesterday, among the 21 people, 16 of them had the will to fight.

The remaining 5 are still hesitating, even after using《Cure Mind》, they still succumbed to fear.

As for Arisu and Tamaki's friend, Sumire chose to be supporting member, because she knows that she is not suitable for fighting.

「I am not like Arisu who can keep guard at her surroundings, or be careless like Tamaki.」

What kind of combination is that.

Indeed if such a creature appeared in the frontline, it will be bad news. (TL note: referring to Tamaki)

Being a rearguard may be good too, but once I imagine the scene of her randoming shoot earth and fire magic without any distinction when she is in panic..

And she does have the intention to level up to level 1, after everyone finished it, she attempted to defeat an orc.

She learnt Healing Magic and Summon Magic.

A role to create food and water, and also to conduct healing when there are not enough people.

Having someone who can take on this role is also not bad.

If there are time, I hope I can level her up to level 3.

Then Nagatsuki Sakura came over to discuss about the matter with defense gears.

First I summoned a leather armour for her.

「So heavy, I can’t move.」

After wearing it once, she judged that the armour was not suitable.

Yesterday evening when we are fighting the general orc and the hellhound, she was of great help.

Although her actions are rash, but because of that courage she showed in that situation, we could obtain victory.

That was due to her physical ability that she had gotten from her daily life that managed to distract the hellhound.

Using her skill as combatant is very important.

「Hmm, so to say, what kind of defense equipment do you need?」

「Something light, sturdy and yet not obstructive.」

Yes, if there is something like that, then it will be good.

「That is something that seems too much.」

「If it is not possible, just gym clothes will do.」

For her who is raring to fight, no matter what I wanted her to wear some equipment, but……

If it affects her movement, then it will be worse.

Do we really have to sacrifice her defense?

「Yes, how about only equipping the upper armour?」

Her signature mobility, is due to her trained lower body.

So we could just have her endure with just bloomers for her lower body……

I took the armour that she had, and cut the connections with a small knife.

Leaving only the chest guard and the shoulder pads and returned it to Sakura.

If it is like this, then it can at least protect the important parts of the upper body.

After testing it, Sakura nodded with satisfaction, and her expression warmed.

「Thank you, Kazu... senpai.」

「You don’t have to call me with senpai, I did not do anything worthy of respect.」

Sakura shook her head silently.

Surveying the surrounding, after confirming that there is nobody around, she continued saying「there is no such thing」.

「You are a person who could endure adversity, now what we need, is such a leader.」

「You……」

「Because I often trained at the high school section…… So I know about you.」

I see, and nodded.

She has always been seeing how I looked like.

The me who had been mercilessly bullied for a long time.

「You did not give up on yourself. Instead you sharpened your fangs, waiting for the time to retaliate. You have that sort of eyes, so I remembered it clearly.」

「Was I like that during that time?」

Sakura nodded.

「As long as you are at the peak of the fight in the sports world, you will be able to understand it. People with that sort of eyes, are very strong.」

I see, so it is like that.

I myself, am not very clear about it, but perhaps because I had that sort of eyes, that caused even more rage within Shiba.

She looked at me meekly, not knowing what she is thinking. Sakura lowered her head in panic.

「Sorry.」

「Huh, what?」

「I do not have any intention of ridiculing you.」

「Oh oh, I see……」

Indeed, the memories at the high school section are all about being bullied.

Just seeing Arisu and Shiba meeting, make me panic without any reason.

But, Shiba died.

He was killed by me.

「That is all in the past.」

「Yes.」

「After that guy died, I am satisfied.」

The actual situation until we reach the high school.

And meet those people from the high school section.

But once they look at me with those mocking eyes.

I won't know what I will become.

But really, my heart tells me that I don't want to think too much about that.

And probably.

Arisu is always by my side.

And Tamaki, Mia.

So I believe it will be fine.

That is how I feel.

「Ah, then again, after Shiba died, did you hear about the situation at the high

school section?」

「After you fainted in the bath, Arisu-senpai explained about it slightly.」

Is it, I nodded.

Shiki-san, left everything about this to Arisu huh.

Yesterday during the late night, Shiki-san had indeed only explained it simply, and it seems that Arisu had searched in the surroundings again.

「I am not as decisive as you thought.」

Nagatsuki Sakura quietly lowered and slowly began to shake her head.

Her ponytail, swung like a tail.

「From the day before yesterday until yesterday, before Kazu-senpai saved us, we have always been relying on a thin strand of hope, all our friends are messed up by the orcs. Perhaps based on my negative desire, I survived, and those who gave up on surviving, are all dead.」

Then Sakura raised her head, and looked at me straight.

With her clenched fist on her chest, her edge of mouth revealed a sarcastic smile.

「I am different from Kazu-senpai, my feelings can't be stopped, until I wiped those orcs out, if not I don't think the negative rage in my chest will ever be extinguished.」

「You… if you continue to fight with those emotions, you will die.」

I have been thinking since yesterday.

Or rather, I have been hesitating.

But now I could only tell her.

In the end Sakura turned her face slightly away, showing a troubled smile.

「If I died, I will definitely feel more easy.」

「Mmm, I know, everyone of us more or less have something similar, but because that I don't wish for you to die. It is too sly if you run away alone.」

「Then I have to suffer more pain?」

There are no emotions in those words.

As though saying tomorrow's first lesson is Japanese? Or Math? A monotonous tone.

So I also copied her replying as neutral as possible.

「Mmm even if you struggle uglily on the ground, no matter how much blood is shed, we must all survive.」

「Why?」

「Because this concerns about the numbers, if you assume that we cannot save any more students from the orcs, and we break away from the high school section, from now on if anyone of us dies, the leftover people will have to struggle in a harder hell. So for the sake of our companions, not one of us can die.」

Sakura looked at me with a troubled look.

「Companions…huh?」

「Isn't it? At least I recognise you as my companion.」

「I had thought you needed pawns for battle, so that is why you saved us.」

「Regarding that , I can't refute it.」

I could only laugh bitterly.

Actually when Shiki-san and I are formulating strategies, we tried to keep our emotions out.

Using emotions to discuss, cannot convince the other party.

To convince Shiki-san, I had to organise my logic.

To refute me, Shiki-san had to organise her logic.

Hence we know that we are always calmly creating battle strategies.

We both know that, if we do not do so, then we will be unable to survive in this place.

But this and that are 2 different things.

Now I have close feelings towards all 31 people in this Cultivating Centre.

If not when Shimoyamada Akane died yesterday, I would not have suffered such a huge blow.

Ah ah, this is the reason.

In the end, I am too naive.

I don’t want anymore sacrifices like her.

「Or is it that Nagatsuki Sakura-san, you don’t recognise us as your companions?」

「I don’t have such thoughts…… but」

Sakura seems to be at a loss, but if you look carefully, her cheeks are slightly red.

It seems that my childish words are quite embarrassing.

Well this can’t be helped, I pouted slightly.

Actually I do not have to see anymore people dying because of my commands.

No matter how many enemies there are, I will kill them all.

If the people from the high school section wants to interfere, then they will all be killed.

But, companions are special.

If possible, those that came to seek protection, I do not want any of them to get hurt.

I had used an unfamiliar tone to say something like this.

What is regretful is that it is a very childish thought, even saying it out, makes one embarrassed.

That’s not right, aren’t I the kid who wanted to proclaim such childish thoughts, but……

This made me embarrassed due to the common sense that I had developed over the years.

I don’t know if Sakura-san is also the same, after I finished, she shrugged her shoulder cutely.

「Senpai gets shy easier than I had thought.」

「Mmm, I know, so give me a break.」

「But that sort of character, I think it is quite good.」

Sakura who rarely shows so many emotions, actually smiled.

Like flowers blooming, a beautiful smile

I was shocked, then I shook my head quickly.

After Sakura saw me who was like that, she began laughing again.

「Please don’t misunderstand, that is the meaning of respecting you. Then again I don’t have the courage to fight with Arisu and the others.」

「I know, don’t……」

I scratched the back of my head.

Ah ah, really, my image is gone.

「But」

Sakura used a stern expression and looked at me.

「I feel that senpai's thoughts are not bad, but even so, it is better not to invest in too much emotions in us.」

「Are you afraid if you die…… my heart will break?」

「Yes, senpai should get used to the deaths around us.」

That is something that is hard to do.

I must have revealed a bitter expression.

Sakura lowered her head apologetically.

「For the arrogant words.」

「No, thank you for being so worried about me, I am very happy about it.」

「Please remember this carefully, everyone thinks so too.」

「Everyone huh.」

「Yesterday those who were saved from those beasts, kept seeing the sights of their friends dying around them, we are already used to people dying in our surroundings, perhaps the next one could be us, so that is why we are more worried about senpai.」

I could only sluggishly look at the girl who said those words.

Ah ah…… I sighed.

As though absorbed by that sight, I could not say anything.

Volume 3 Chapter 64

Chapter 64:Giant Wasp

After many minutes.

The first to return, is the party of level 1s and 0s led by Arisu.

First of all, all 6 of them seemed to have leveled up to level 1.

「On the way we meet a giant wasp.」

Shiki-san who acted as support reported to us.

「Arisu-chan deliberately got stung once, the wound seems to have a numb feeling, as though paralytic toxin is in it, so it is better to avoid getting stung.」

「Sh..」

Oi, what did you make my Arisu do?

I say something like a rogue unconsciously..

I hurriedly shut my mouth.

「No, it is not like that, Kazu-san. It was me that wanted to try it, after all if it's me, I can recover quickly.」

Arisu hurriedly added on.

Indeed if its Arisu who is higher level, she will be able to take most of the attacks…… but.

If she who has Rank 4 healing magic is unable to move, then the ones who will be inconvenienced will be everyone.

But Shiki-san is also right.

Did she from the start judge that nothing will happen?

Maa, that is it.

It is hard for her to have not consider the possibility of Arisu being unable to move.

「Paralytic toxin can be cured with《Cure Poison》, then the stab wounds can be healed using normal methods, and just as I predicted, no shock symptoms appeared.」

《Cure Poison》is a Rank 2 healing magic.

Mmm, seems like we need to train a few Rank 2 Healers.

「But there is the possibility of having shock symptoms.」

「Although it has been commonly mistaken, shock symptoms does not occur immediately after being stung by bees, that is nothing but an allergic reaction.」

「Oh, is that so?」

「Unlike you, the few of us have been living the mountains, so regarding the information about insects, we do know a few.」

Shiki-san said so and looked at Arisu.

Arisu also gave a bitter smile「Yes Kazu-san…… I had quite a repulsive feel against bugs initially.」

Is that so, so that is the reason……

「If I had the giant wasp enter Arisu's javelin range, then we need only 1 strike to finish it.」

「That is an encouraging report.」

「If I using my Rank 2 Throwing Skill, then I need 2 small knives.」

Shiki-san and Arisu seemed to have formed a party.

Arisu defeated 2 giant wasps in the first battle and leveled up to 16.

While Shiki-san leveled to level 4 in the second battle.

「If the experience point that you heard from Arisu isn't wrong, then the experience for a giant wasp is about 3 orcs.」

「I understand it, very good.」

「And Arisu's skill point also reached 7, although I judged it…… but it is still great.」

「Raised what?」

「Healing magic, considering the future, it will be convenient to have《Rapid Heal》」

I see, so I nodded.

The instant that Rank 5 Healing Magic《Rapid Heal》activates, the healing effect is 3 times stronger than the normal healing magic.

But the normal heal only need 1MP while《Rapid Heal》needs 5MP, the MP efficiency is not good.

But we who have battled until now, clearly understood it.

In the battlefield, we need fast and highly effective healing magic.

That moment, the usage of MP is not a problem.

That's right, with《Rapid Heal》, then we can fight stably.

「Other than that in Rank 5 Healing Magic, there is《Sustain》. So if anything goes wrong, we can still be easy.」

「Even though we say that…… I hope we won't need to use it.」

《Sustain》, is a magic that can prolong life.

During Q&A, example: if someone's head is chopped off, if we need that magic immediately, then we can avoid direct death.

A magic that maintain the false death state, can we say that it isn't good?

But the effective time for this magic is only 30 seconds, even if our Rank increases, the time will not increase.

If we do not use《Rapid Heal》within these 30 seconds to heal the injured part, then the person will definitely die.

As a insurance for the head being chopped off, it is still unreliable.

But with this magic, we can be at ease for a bit more.

「I feel that this is a good decision, Shiki-san, thank you. Arisu will be in your

care from now on.」

「Yes, please leave it up to me!」

Arisu nodded happily.

The 2 persons brought the other 6 members and set out again.

Like replacing the Arisu and Shiki party, the Tamaki and Mia party returned.

Using Fire Magic to hunt giant wasps seems to be very effective.

Compared to Mia's Earth or Wind Magic, Fire Magic caused more damage.

「Fire is the weakness of the giant wasps.」

Mia said.

They defeated a total of 6 giant wasps.

「If《Sonic Edge》is used near the giant wasps, then they will be unable to control their wings and fall to the ground. So Wind Magic is enough.」

《Sonic Edge》is a Rank 2 Wind Magic.

Just like its name, a magic that uses wind to release a wind blade.

A magic that often appeared in fantasy games.

Other than that Mia also said that science has disapprove that Kamaitachi which can hurt people exist. (TL note: Kamaitachi = wind blade)

Seems like the magic in this world, is completely different from the laws of the physics in the other world.

Magic is indeed incredible.

When we asked in Q&A, the attacking magic are further separated in mana oriented types and mana directed types.

Although a lot of random information are restricted in the white room.

Currently explaining from what we understood,《Sonic Edge》is a move that adds mana to wind and attacks.

When mana is added into wind, it will cause a condition whereby violent wind will blow.

The giant wasps are interrupted by the violent wind, and hence unable to control their body.

I guess Mia’s experiment have already considered until that step.

In conclusion, Mia is really smart.

Tamaki also have the same feelings as me.

「Mia is really incredible, your thoughts are exactly the same as your brother.」

「Ah, Tamaki please bend over slightly.」

「Huh, what what?」

Tamaki squat obediently before Mia.

Mia flickered strongly at Tamaki's defenseless forehead.

Tamaki pressed on her forehead with her hands and kneeled.

「Ou..ouch, Mia, what are you doing.」

「Having a fight with you.」

「I don't wish to fi..fight, why are you angry? Wah wait wait, Mia is serious.」

I quickly got between them.

「Mia please don't blame Tamaki too much, she is a natural idiot.」

「I know, but I must still punish her abit.」

Mia clenched her fist tightly and looked at me expressionlessly.

Although it does not look too different from usual, but she still seemed to give off a very angry aura.

「But Yuki-senpai also said so, he often praised Mia for being smart.」

「No, that is different.」

Mia shook her head.

「Brother is smarter.」

The petite girl turned her face away.

「Although it makes one angry, but my brother is a real genius, I am at most a smart ass.」

Said it.

She said that she is a smart ass.

Haha, this girl.

「But brother used his talent in the wrong place.」

「I can understand that from last night.」

「As a family, I am very angry.」

From the side, I could only see Mia's hate towards her family.

Indeed such things can't expressed with words.

I also don't wish to step on someone's landmine early in the morning.

But Mia seemed to have see through me, and glared at me unhappily.

「Kazu-chi」

「May I know if you have any problem, Mia-san」

「Why did you use honorifics?」

「Because currently Mia-san is unhappy.」

Mia sighed and relaxed her shoulders.

「Brother is really a genius, I cannot be compared with him, so I feel even more inferior.」

「Is it until that stage……」

Indeed, I can’t understand why he needs to use a strangling method to kill an orc.

A mysterious passion that I felt.

I feel that digging another trap will be more relaxing.

「Kazu-san is also abit naive.」

「.....Is it?」

Facing Mia’s tsukkomi, I was shocked..

At this moment, Arisu and the others came back.

In total all 12 of them reached level 1.

With this we can began our original plan.

※

At the corridor.

「Please rest a bit to let your MP recover, then we can began to attack the northern forest properly.」

Shiki-san looked at all the members and announced.

「The attacking party will be 8 members which are divided into 2 parties.」

The names that Shiki-san mentioned are:

The 4 of us from the elite party, Shiki-san, Nagatsuki Sakura and the 2 Fire Magic users.

Shiki-san will be in charge of the supporting party, the aim is to support the elite party which lacks long distance attacks.

「Then first, Kazu-san please use the crow to investigate.」

Following Shiki-san's words, I summoned a crow and use《Remote Viewing》to connect to it, then surveyed using the crow's vision.

The crow went to the northern forest.

After a simple investigation, we confirmed one thing.

「In the northern forest, the orcs are hiding in the trees with bows.」

This is bad news.

Our elite party is formed with close combat as a premise.

We did not expect the enemies to shoot arrows from on top of the trees.

「Perhaps we have to let the support party become the attacking party.」

「Hmm, indeed, but……」

After Shiki-san considered slightly, she raised her head.

「Then we will change the parties slightly, I will be the vanguard to scout.」

Towards such a daring proposal, we could only feel shocked.